



5

6

618

BIBLIOTECA NAZIONALE
CENTRALE • FIRENZE •



THE
P L A Y S
OF
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE,
VOLUME THE NINTH.

9



THE
P L A Y S
OF
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.
VOLUME THE NINTH.

CONTAINING

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.
TAMING OF THE SHREW.

B A S I L:

Printed and fold by J. J. TOURNEISEN.

M. DCCC.



A L L ' S W E L L

T H A T

E N D S W E L L.*

VOL. IX.

B

* ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.] The story of *All's Well that ends Well*, or, as I suppose it to have been sometimes called, *Love's Labour Wonne*, is originally indeed the property of Boccace, but it came immediately to Shakspeare from Painter's *Giletta of Narbon*, in the First Vol. of the *Palace of Pleasure*, 4to. 1566, p. 88. FARMER.

Shakspeare is indebted to the novel only for a few leading circumstances in the graver parts of the piece. The comic business appears to be entirely of his own formation. STEEVENS.

This comedy, I imagine, was written in 1598. See *An Attempt to ascertain the Order of Shakspeare's Plays*, Vol. II. MALONE.

PERSONS represented.

King of France.

Duke of Florence.

Bertram, Count of Roussillon.

Lafeu, ³ an old Lord.

Parolles, ⁴ a follower of Bertram.

*Several young French Lords, that serve with Bertram
in the Florentine war.*

*Steward, }
Clown, } Servants to the Countess of Roussillon.*

A Page.

Countess of Roussillon, mother to Bertram.

Helena, a gentlewoman protected by the Countess.

An old widow of Florence.

Diana, daughter to the widow.

*Violenta, ⁵ }
Mariana, } Neighbours and friends to the widow.*

*Lords, attending on the King; Officers, Soldiers, &c.
French and Florentine.*

SCENE, partly in France, and partly in Tuscany.

² The persons were first enumerated by Mt. Rowe.

³ *Lafeu,*] We should read — *Lefeu*. STEEVENS.

⁴ *Parolles,*] I suppose we should write this name — *Paroles*, i. e. a creature made up of empty words. STEEVENS.

⁵ *Violenta* only enters once, and then she neither speaks, nor is spoken to. This name appears to be borrowed from an old metrical history, entitled *Didaca and Violenta*, 1576. STEEVENS.

A L L' S W E L L

T H A T

E N D S W E L L.

A C T I. S C E N E I.

Rouffillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

Enter BERTRAM, the Countess of Rouffillon, HELENA, and LAFEU, in mourning.

COUNT. In delivering my son from me, I bury a second husband.

BER. And I, in going, madam, weep o'er my father's death anew: but I must attend his majesty's command, to whom I am now in ward, * evermore in subjection.

* — in ward,] Under his particular care, as my guardian, till I come to age. It is now almost forgotten in England, that the heirs of great fortunes were the King's wards. Whether the same practice prevailed in France, it is of no great use to enquire, for Shakspeare gives to all nations the manners of England.

JOHNSON.

Howell's fifteenth letter acquaints us that the province of Normandy was subject to wardships, and no other part of France besides; but the supposition of the contrary furnished Shakspeare with a reason why the King compelled Rouffillon to marry Helen.

TOLLET.

LAF. You shall find of the king a husband, madam;—you, sir, a father: He that so generally is at all times good, must of necessity hold his virtue to you; whose worthiness would stir it up where it wanted, rather than lack it where there is such abundance.

COUNT. What hope is there of his majesty's amendment?

LAF. He hath abandon'd his physicians, madam; under whose practices he hath persecuted time with hope; and finds no other advantage in the process, but only the losing of hope by time.

COUNT. This young gentlewoman had a father, (O, that *had!* how sad a passage 'tis! *) whose skill

The prerogative of *wardship* is a branch of the feudal law, and may as well be supposed to be incorporated with the constitution of France, as it was with that of England, till the reign of Charles II. STR J. HAWKINS.

* — O, that had! how sad a passage 'tis!] Imitated from the *Heautontimorumenos* of Tereoece, (then translated,) where Menedemus says:

“ — Filium unicum adolescentulum

“ *Habeo.* Ah, quid dixi? *habere* me? imo

“ — *habui*, Chreme,

“ *Nunc habeam* necne incertum est.” BLACKSTONE.

So, in Spenser's *Shepherd's Calendar*:

“ Shee, while she was, (that was a woeful word to saiee,)

“ For beauties praise and pleasure had no peere.”

Again, in *Wily Beguild*, 1606,

“ She is not mine, I have no daughter now;

“ That I should say *I had*, thence comes my grief.”

MALONE.

Passage is any thing that passes. So we now say, a *passage* of an author, and we said about a century ago, the *passages* of a reign. When the countess mentions Heleas's loss of a father, she recalls her own loss of a husband, and stops to observe how heavily that word *had* passes through her mind. JOHNSON.

was almost as great as his honesty; had it stretch'd so far, would have made nature immortal, and death should have play for lack of work. 'Would, for the king's sake, he were living! I think, it would be the death of the king's disease.

LAF. How call'd you the man you speak of, madam?

COUNT. He was famous, sir, in his profession, and it was his great right to be so; Gerard de Narbon.

LAF. He was excellent, indeed, madam; the king very lately spoke of him, admiringly, and mourningly: he was skilful enough to have liv'd still, if knowledge could be set up against mortality.

BER. What is it, my good lord, the king languishes of?

LAF. A fistula, my lord.⁴

Thus Shakspeare himself. See *The Comedy of Errors*, Act III. sc. i;

"Now in the stirring *passage* of the day."

So, in *The Gamester*, by Shirley, 1637: "I'll not be witness of your *passages* myself;" i. e. of what passes between you.

Again, in *A Woman's a Weathercock*, 1612:

"— never lov'd these prying listening men

"That alk of others' states and *passages*."

Again:

"I knew the *passages* 'twixt her and Scudamore."

Again, in *The Dumb Knight*, 1633:

"— have beheld

"Your vile and most lascivious *passages*."

Again, in *The English Intelligencer*, a tragi-comedy, 1641: "— two philosophers that jeer and weep at the *passages* of the world."

STEVENS.

⁴ *A fistula, my lord.*] The king of France's disorder is specified as follows in Painter's Translation from Boccaccio's Navel, on which this play was founded: "She heard by report that the French king had a swelling upon his breast, which by reason

BER. I heard not of it before.

LAF. I would, it were not notorious.—Was this gentlewoman the daughter of Gerard de Narbon?

COUNT. His sole child, my lord; and bequeathed to my overlooking. I have those hopes of her good, that her education promises: her dispositions she inherits, which make fair gifts fairer; for where an unclean mind carries virtuous qualities,⁵ there commendations go with pity, they are virtues and traitors too, in her they are the better for their simpleness;⁶ she derives her honesty, and achieves her goodness.

of ill cure, was grown into a *ffistula*," &c. STEEVENS.

⁵ ——— *virtuous qualities*,] By *virtuous qualities* are meant qualities of good breeding and erudition; in the same sense that the Italians say, *qualità virtuosa*; and not moral ones. On this account it is, she says, that, in an ill mind, these *virtuous qualities* are *virtues and traitors too*: i. e. the advantages of education enable an ill mind to go further in wickedness than it could have done without them. WARBURTON.

Virtue, and *virtuous*, as I am told, still keep this signification in the north, and mean *ingenuity* and *ingenious*. Of this sense perhaps an instance occurs in the Eighth Book of Chapman's *Version of the Iliad*:

"Theo will I to Olympus' top our virtuous engine bid,"

"And by it every thing shall hang," &c.

Again, in Marlowe's *Tamburlaine*, p. 1, 1590:

"If these had made one poem's period,

"And all combin'd in beauties worthynesse,

"Yet should there hover in their restless heads

"One thought, one grace, one wonder at the least,

"Which into words no *vertue* can digest." STEEVENS.

⁶ ——— *they are virtues and traitors too*; in her they are the better, for their *simpleness*;] Her *virtues* are the better for their *simpleness*, that is, her excellencies are the better because they are artless and open, without fraud, without design. The learned commentator has well explained *virtues*, but has not, I think, reached the force of the word *traitors*, and therefore has not shown the full extent

LAF. Your commendations, madam, get from her tears.

COUNT. 'Tis the best brine a maiden can season her praise in.⁷ The remembrance of her father never approaches her heart, but the tyranny of her sorrows takes all livelihoood⁸ from her cheek. No more of this, Helena, go to, no more; lest it be rather thought you affect a sorrow, than to have.⁹

HEL. I do affect a sorrow, indeed, but I have it too.²

of Shakspeare's masterly observation. *Virtues in an unclean mind are virtues and traitors too.* Estimable and useful qualities, joined with an evil disposition, give that evil disposition power over others, who, by admiring the virtue, are betrayed to the malevolence. The *Teller*, mentioning the sharpers of his time, observes, that some of them are men of such elegance and knowledge, that a young man who falls into their way, is betrayed as much by his judgment as his passions. JOHNSON.

In *As you Like it*, virtues are called traitors on a very different ground:

- " ——— to some kind of men
- " Their graces serve them but as enemies:
- " No more do yours; your virtues, gentle master,
- " Are sanctified and holy traitors to you.
- " O what a world is this, when what is comely
- " Envenoms him that bears it!" MALONE.

⁷ — can season her praise in.] To season has here a culinary sense; to preserve by salting. A passage in *Twelfth Night* will best explain its meaning:

- " ——— all this to season
- " A brother's dead love, which she would keep fresh,
- " And lasting in her remembrance." MALONE.

⁸ — all livelihoood —] i. e. all appearance of life. STEEVENS.

⁹ — lest it be rather thought you affect a sorrow, than to have.] Our author sometimes is guilty of such slight inaccuracies; and concludes a sentence as if the former part of it had been construed differently. — Thus, in the present instance, he seems to have meant — lest you be rather thought to affect a sorrow, than to have. MALONE.

² I do affect a sorrow, indeed, but I have it too.] Helena has, I believe, a meaning here, that she does not wish should be under-

LAF. Moderate lamentation is the right of the dead, excessive grief the enemy to the living.

COUNT. If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.³

BER. Madam, I desire your holy wishes.

LAF. How understand we that?

COUNT. Be thou blest, Bertram! and succeed thy father

flood by the countess. Her *afflicted* sorrow was for the death of her father; her *real* grief for the lowness of her situation, which she feared would for ever be a bar to her union with her beloved Bertram. Her own words afterwards fully support this interpretation:

" ————— I think not on my father;—

" ————— What was he like?

" I have forgot him; my imagination

" Carries no favor in it but Bertram's;

" I am undone." MALONE.

The sorrow that Helen *afflicted*, was for her father; that which she really felt, was for Bertram's departure. This line should be particularly attended to, as it tends to explain some subsequent passages which have hitherto been misunderstood. M. MASON.

³ *If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.* Johnson says, *excessive grief is the enemy of the living*; the countess replies, *If the living be an enemy to grief, the excess soon makes it mortal*; that is, *If the living do not indulge grief, grief destroys itself by its own excess*. By the word *mortal* I understand *that which dies*; and Dr. Warburton [who reads—*be not enemy*—] *that which destroys*. I think that my interpretation gives a sentence more acute and more refined. Let the reader judge.

JOHNSON.

A passage in *The Winter's Tale*, in which our author again speaks of grief destroying itself by its own excess, adds support to Dr. Johnson's interpretation:

" ————— scarce any joy

" Did ever live so long; no sorrow,

" But kill'd itself much sooner."

In *Romeo and Juliet* we meet with a kindred thought:

" These violent delights have violent ends,

" And in their triumph die." MALONE.

In manners, as in shape! thy blood, and virtue,
 Contend for empire in thee; and thy goodness
 Share with thy birth-right! Love all, trust a few,
 Do wrong to none: be able for thine enemy
 Rather in power, than use; and keep thy friend
 Under thy own life's key: be check'd for silence,
 But never tax'd for speech. What heaven more
 will,

That thee may furnish, ⁴ and my prayers pluck
 down,

Fall on thy head! Farewell.—My lord,
 'Tis an unseason'd courtier; good my lord,
 Advise him.

LAF. He cannot want the best
 That shall attend his love.

COUNT. Heaven blefs him!—Farewell, Bertram,
 [Exit Countess.]

BER. The best wishes, that can be forged in your
 thoughts, [To HELENA.] be servants to you! ⁵ Be
 comfortable to my mother, your mistress, and make
 much of her.

LAF. Farewell, pretty lady: You must hold the
 credit of your father.

[Exit BERTRAM and LAFEU.]

HEL. O, were that all!—I think not on my fa-
 ther; ⁶

⁴ *That thee may furnish,*] That may help thee with more and
 better qualifications. JOHNSON.

⁵ *The best wishes, &c.*] That is, may you be mistress of your
 wishes, and have power to bring them to effect. JOHNSON.

⁶ *Laf. Farewell, pretty lady: You must hold the credit of your
 father.*

Hel. O, were that all!—I think not on my father:] This passage
 has been passed over in silence by all the commentators, yet it is
 evidently defective. The only meaning that the speech of Lafeu
 will bear, as it now stands, is this:—"That Helena, who was a

And these great tears ⁷ grace his remembrance more,
Than those I shed for him. What was he like?

I have forgot him: my imagination
Carries no favor in it, but Bertram's.

young girl, ought to keep up the credit which her father had established, who was the best physician of the age; and she by her answer, *O, were that all!* seems to admit that it would be no difficult matter for her to do so." The absurdity of this is evident; and the words will admit of no other interpretation. Some alteration therefore is necessary; and that which I propose is, to read *uphold*, instead of *must hold*, and then the meaning will be this: "Lafeu, observing that Helena had shed a torrent of tears, which he and the Countess both ascribe to her grief for her father, says, that she *upholds* the credit of her father, on this principle, that the surest proof that can be given of the merit of a person deceased, are the lamentations of those who survive him. But Helena, who knows her own heart, wishes that she had no other cause of grief, except the loss of her father, whom she thinks no more of."

M. MASON.

O, were that all! &c.] Would that the attention to maintain the credit of my father, (or, not to act unbecomingly the daughter of such a father,—for such perhaps is the meaning,) were my only solicitude! I think not of him. My cares are all for Bertram.

MALONE.

⁷ — *these great tears* —] The tears which the King and Countess shed for him. JOHNSON.

And these great tears grace his remembrance more,

Than those I shed for him.] Johnson supposes that, by *these great tears*, Helena means the tears which the King and the Countess shed for her father; but it does not appear that either of those great persons had shed tears for him, though they spoke of him with regret. By *these great tears*, Helena does not mean the tears of great people, but the big and copious tears she then shed herself, which were caused in reality by Bertram's departure, though attributed by Lafeu and the Countess, to the loss of her father; and from this misapprehension of theirs, graced his remembrance more than those she actually shed for him. What she calls *gracing his remembrance*, is what Lafeu had styled before, *upholding his credit*, the two passages tending to explain each other. — It is scarcely necessary to make this grammatical observation — That if Helena had alluded to any tears supposed to have been shed by the King, she would have said *those* tears, not *these*, as the latter pronoun must necessarily refer to something present at the time.

M. MASON.

I am undone; there is no living, none,
 If Bertram be away. It were all one,
 That I should love a bright particular star,
 And think to wed it, he is so above me:
 In his bright radiance and collateral light
 Must I be comforted, not in his sphere.*
 The ambition in my love thus plagues itself:
 The hind, that would be mated by the lion,
 Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a plague,
 To see him every hour; to sit and draw
 His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls,
 In our heart's table; † heart, too capable
 Of every line and trick of his sweet favor: ‡

* *In his bright radiance, &c.*] I cannot be united with him and move in the same sphere, but must be comforted at a distance by the radiance that shines on all sides from him. JOHNSON.

So, in Milton's *Paradise Lost*, B. X:

" — from his radiant seat he rose

" Of high collateral glory." STEEVENS.

† — 'Twas pretty, though a plague,

To see him every hour, to sit and draw

His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls,

In our heart's table;] So, in our author's 24th Sonnet:

" Mine eye hath play'd the painter, and hath steel'd

" Thy beauty's form in table of my heart."

A table was in our author's time a term for a picture, in which sense it is used here. *Tableau*, Fr. So, on a picture painted in the time of Queen Elizabeth, in the possession of the Hon. Horace Walpole:

" The Queen to Walsingham this table sent,

" Mark of her people's and her own content." MALONE.

Table here only signifies the board on which any picture was painted. So, in Mr. Walpole's *Anecdotes of Painting in England*, Vol. I. p. 58:

" Item, one table with the picture of the Duchess of Milan."

" Item, one table, with the pictures of the King's Majesty and

Queen Jane." &c. Helena would not have talked of drawing

Bertram's picture in her heart's picture; but considers her heart as the tablet or surface on which his resemblance was to be portrayed. STEEVENS.

‡ — trick of his sweet favour:] So, in *King John*: " he hath

But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy
Must sanctify his relics. Who comes here?

Enter PAROLLES.

One that goes with him: I love him for his sake;
And yet I know him a notorious liar,
Think him a great way fool, solely a coward;
Yet these fix'd evils sit so fit in him,
That they take place, when virtue's steele bones
Look bleak in the cold wind: withal, full oft we see
Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.³

PAR. Save you, fair queen.

HEL. And you, monarch.⁴

PAR. No.

HEL. And no.⁵

PAR. Are you meditating on virginity?

a *trick* of Cœur de Lion's face." *Trick* seems to be some peculiarity of look or feature. JOHNSON.

Trick is an expression taken from *drawing*, and is so explained in *King John*, A& I. sc. i. The present instance explains itself:

— *to fit and draw*

His arched brows, &c.

— *and trick of his sweet favour.*

Trick, however, on the present occasion, may mean neither *tracing* nor *outline*, but *peculiarity*. STEEVENS.

Tricking is used by heralds for the delineation and colouring of arms, &c. MALONE.

³ Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.] Cold for naked; as *superfluous* for over-clothed. This makes the propriety of the antithesis. WARBURTON.

⁴ And you, monarch.] Perhaps here is some allusion designed to *Monarcho*, a ridiculous fantastical character of the age of Shakspeare. Concerning this person, see the notes on *Love's Labour's Lost*, A& IV. sc. i. STEEVENS.

⁵ And no.] I am no more a queen than you are a monarch, or *Menurche*. MALONE.

HEL. Ay. You have some stain of soldier⁶ in you; let me ask you a question: Man is enemy to virginity; how may we barricado it against him?

PAR. Keep him out.

HEL. But he assails; and our virginity, though valiant in the defence, yet is weak: unfold to us some warlike resistance.

PAR. There is none; man, sitting down before you, will undermine you, and blow you up.

HEL. Bless our poor virginity from underminers, and blowers up!—Is there no military policy, how virgins might blow up men?

PAR. Virginity being blown down, man will quicklier be blown up: marry, in blowing him down again, with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city.⁷ It is not politick in the common-

⁶ — stain of soldier.—] Stain for colour. Parolles was in red, as appears from his being afterwards called *red-tail'd humble-bee*.

WARBURTON.

It does not appear from either of these expressions, that Parolles was entirely dressed in red. Shakspeare writes only *some stain of soldier*, meaning in one sense, that he had *red breeches on*, (which is sufficiently evident from calling him afterwards *red-tail'd humble-bee*,) and in another, that he was a *disgrace to soldiery*. *Stain* is used in an adverse sense by Shakspeare, in *Titulus and Cressida*: “—nor any man an attain, but he carries *some stain* of it.”

Mr. M. Mason observes on this occasion that “though a *red* coat is now the mark of a soldier in the British service, it was not so in the days of Shakspeare, when we had no standing army, and the use of armour still prevailed.” To this I reply, that the colour *red* has always been annexed to soldiery. Chaucer, in his *Knight's Tale*, v. 1749, has “*Mars the rede*,” and Boccaccio has given *Mars* the same epithet in the opening of his *Theseida*: “—O *rubicondo Marte*.” STEEVENS.

Stain rather for what we now say *tinture*, some qualities, at least superficial, of a soldier. JOHNSON.

⁷ — with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city.] So, in our author's *Lover's Complaints*

wealth of nature, to preserve virginity. Loss of virginity is rational increase; * and there was never virgin got, till virginity was first lost. That, you were made of, is metal to make virgins. Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found: by being ever kept, it is ever lost: 'tis too cold a companion; away with it.

HEL. I will stand for't a little, though therefore I die a virgin.

PAR. There's little can be said in't; 'tis against the rule of nature. To speak on the part of virginity, is to accuse your mothers; which is most infallible disobedience. He, that hangs himself, is a virgin: virginity murders itself; † and should be buried in highways, out of all sanctified limit, as a desperate offendress against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much like a cheese; consumes itself to the very paring, and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Besides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of self-love, which is the most inhibited sin ‡ in the canon. Keep it not; you cannot choose but lose by't: Out with't: within ten years it will

* And long upon these terms I held my city,

“Till thus he ’gan besiege me.”

Again, in *The Rape of Lucrece*:

“This makes in him more rage, and lesser pity,

“To make the breach, and enter this sweet city.” MALONE.

† *Loss of virginity is rational increase;*] I believe we should read, *rational*. TYRWHITT.

Rational increase may mean the regular increase by which rational beings are propagated. STEVENS.

‡ *He, that hangs himself, is a virgin: virginity murders itself:*] i. e. he that hangs himself, and a virgin, are in this circumstance alike; they are both *self-destroyers*. MALONE.

§ *inhibited sin* —] i. e. forbidden. So, in *Othello*:

“_____ a practitioner

§ *Of arts inhibited and out of warrant.*” STEVENS.

make itself ten,³ which is a goodly increase; and the principal itself not much the worse: Away with't.

³ — within ten years, it will make itself ten,] The old copy reads — "within ten years it will make itself two." The emendation was made by Sir T. Hanmer. It was also suggested by Mr. Steevens, who likewise proposed to read — "within two years it will make itself two." Mr. Toller would read, — "within ten years it will make itself twelve."

I formerly proposed to read — "Out with it: within ten months it will make itself two." Part with it, and within ten months' time it will double itself; i. e. it will produce a child.

I now mention this conjecture (in which I once had some confidence) only for the purpose of acknowledging my error. I had not sufficiently attended to a former passage in this scene, — "Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found," i. e. may produce ten virgins. Those words likewise are spoken by Parolles, and add such decisive support to Sir Thomas Hanmer's emendation, that I have not hesitated to adopt it. The text, as exhibited in the old copy, is undoubtedly corrupt. It has already been observed, that many passages in these plays, in which numbers are introduced, are printed incorrectly. Our author's sixth Sonnet fully supports the emendation here made:

"That use is not forbidden usury,
Which happies those that pay the willing loan;
That's for thyself, to breed another thee,
Or ten times happier, be it ten for one.
Ten times thyself were happier than thou art,
If ten of thine ten times repay'd thee."

"Out with it," is used equivocally. — Applied to virginity, it means, give it away; part with it: considered in another light, it signifies, put it out to interest. In *The Tempest* we have — "Each putter out on hve for one," &c. MALONE.

There is no reason for altering the text. A well-known observation of the noble earl, to whom the horses of the present generation owe the length of their tails, contains the true explanation of this passage. HENLEY.

I cannot help repeating on this occasion, Justice Shallow's remark: "Give me pardon, sir: — if you come with news, I take it there is but two ways; — either to utter them, or to conceal them." With this noble earl's notorious remark, I am quite unacquainted. But perhaps the errand (with a slipper in which he has sometimes indulged himself at my expence) will reply, like Pistol, "Why then lament therefore;" or observe, like Hamlet, that "a knavish speech sleeps in a foolish ear." STEEVENS,

HEL. How might one do, fir to lose it to her own liking?

PAR. Let me see: Marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes.⁴ 'Tis a commodity will lose the gloss with lying; the longer kept, the less worth: off with't while 'tis vendible; answer the time of request. Virginity, like an old courtier, wears her cap out of fashion; richly suited, but unsuitable: just like the brooch and tooth-pick, which wear not now:⁵ Your date is better⁶ in your pye and your porridge, than in your cheek: And your virginity, your old virginity, is like one of our French wither'd pears; it looks ill, it eats dryly; marry, 'tis a wither'd pear; it was formerly better; marry, yet, 'tis a wither'd pear: Will you any thing with it?

HEL. Not my virginity yet.⁷

⁴ — *Marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes.*] Parolles, in answer to the question, "How one shall lose virginity to her own liking?" plays upon the word *liking*, and says, *she must do ill, for virginity, to be so lost, must like him that likes not virginity.*

JOHNSON.

⁵ — *which wear not now:*] Thus the old copy, and rightly. Shakspeare often uses the active for the passive. The modern editors read, "which *we* wear not now." TYRWHITT.

The old copy has *were*. Mr. Rowe corrected it.

MALONE.

⁶ — *Your date is better —*] Here is a quibble on the word *date*, which means both age, and a candied fruit much used in our author's time. So, in *Romeo and Juliet*:

"They call for *dates* and quinces in the pastry."

The same quibble occurs in *Troilus and Cressida*: "—— and then to be bak'd with no *date* in the pye, for then the mao's *date* is out." STEEVENS.

⁷ *Not my virginity yet.*] This whole speech is abrupt, unconnected, and obscure. Dr. Warburton thinks much of it supposititious. I would be glad to think so of the whole, for a commentator naturally wishes to reject what he cannot understand. Something, which should connect Helcon's words with those of

There shall your master have a thousand loves,
A mother, and a mistress, and a friend,

Parolles, seems to be wanting. Hammer has made a fair attempt by reading:

*Not my virginity yet, — You're for the court,
There shall your master, &c.*

Some such clause has, I think, dropped out, but still the first words want connexion. Perhaps Parolles, going away after his harangue, said, *will you any thing with me?* to which Helen may reply. — I know not what to do with the passage.

JOHNSON.

I do not perceive so great a want of connexion as my predecessors have apprehended; nor is that connexion always to be sought for, in so careless a writer as ours, from the thought immediately preceding the reply of the speaker. Parolles has been laughing at the unprofitableness of virginity, especially when it grows ancient, and compares it to withered fruit. Helena properly enough replies, that hers is not yet in that state; but that in the enjoyment of her, his master should find the gratification of all his most romantic wishes. What Dr. Warburton says afterwards is said at random, as all positive declarations of the same kind must of necessity be. Were I to propose any change, I would read *should* instead of *shall*. It does not however appear that this rapturous effusion of Helena was designed to be intelligible to Parolles. Its obscurity, therefore, may be its merit. It sufficiently explains what is passing in the mind of the speaker, to every one but him to whom she does not mean to explain it. STEEVENS.

Perhaps we should read: "Will you any thing with us?" i. e. will you send any thing with us to court? to which Helena's answer would be proper enough —

"Not my virginity yet."

A similar phrase occurs in *Twelfth Night*, Act III. sc. 1:

"You'll nothing, madam, to my lord by me?"

TYRWHITT.

Perhaps something has been omitted in Parolles's speech. "*I am now bound for the court; will you any thing with it* [i. e. with the court]?" So, in *The Winter's Tale*:

"Tell me what you have to the king."

I do not agree with Mr. Steevens in the latter part of his notes: "— that in the enjoyment of her," &c. MALONE.

I am satisfied the passage is as Shakspeare left it. Parolles, after having cried down with all his eloquence, *old virginity*, in reference to what he had before said, — "That virginity is a commodity the

A phoenix,⁹ captain,^{*} and an enemy,
 A guide, a goddeſs, and a ſovereign,
 A counſellor, a traitreſs,³ and a dear;

longer kept, the leſs worth: off with't, while 'tis vendible.
 ANSWER THE TIME of Requeſt." asks Helena, — "Will you
 any thing with it?" — to which ſhe replies — "NOT MY virginity
 YET." HENLEY.

⁹ *A phoenix*, &c.] The eight lines following *friend*, I am per-
 founded, is the nonſenſe of ſome fooliſh concerted player. What
 put it into his head was Helen's ſaying, as it ſhould be read for the
 future:

There ſhall your maſter have a thouſand loves;

"A mother, and a miſtreſs, and a friend,

I know not what he ſhall — God ſend him well.

Where the fellow, finding a *thouſand loves* ſpoken of, and only
three reckoned up, namely, a *mother's*, a *miſtreſs's*, and a *friend's*,
 (which, by the way, were all a judicious writer could mention;
 for there are but theſe three ſpecies of love in nature) he would
 help out the number, by the intermediate nonſenſe: and, becauſe
 they were yet too few, he pieces out his *loves* with *amities*, and
 makes of the whole ſuch finiſhed nonſenſe, as is never heard out of
 Bedlam. WARBURTON.

^{*} — *captain*,] Our author often uſes this word for a head or
 chief. So, in one of his Sonnets:

"Or *captain* jewels in the ear-knave."

Again, in *Timon of Athens*: — "the aſs more *captain* than the lion."
 Again more appoſitely, in *Othello*, where it is applied to Deſe-
 demona:

"— our great captain's *captain*."

We find ſome of theſe terms of endearment again uſed in *The
 Winter's Tale*. Leontes ſays to the young Mamillius,

"Come, *captain*, we muſt be neat," &c.

Again, in the ſame ſcene, Polixenes, ſpeaking of his ſon, ſays,

"He's all my exerciſe, my mirth, my matter;

"Now my ſworn *friend*, and then mine *enemy*;

"My parasite, my ſoldier, ſtateſman, all." MALONE.

³ — *a traitreſs*,] It ſeems that *traitreſs* was in that age a term
 of endearment, for when Lafew introduces Helena to the king, he
 ſays, — "You are like a *traytor*, but ſuch *traytors* his majeſty does
 not much fear." JOHNSON.

I cannot conceive that *traitreſs* (ſpoken ſeriously) was in any
 age a term of endearment. From the preſent paſſage, we might as
 well ſuppoſe *enemy* (in the laſt line but one) to be a term of

His humble ambition, proud humility,
His jarring concord, and his discord dulcet,
His faith, his sweet disaster; with a world
Of pretty, fond, adoptious christendoms, *

endeament. In the other passage quoted, Lascu is plainly speaking ironically. TVERWHITE.

Traditara, a traitress, in the Italian language, is generally used as a term of endearment. The meaning of Helen is, that she shall prove *every thing* to Bertram. Our ancient writers delighted in catalogues, and always characterize love by contraries.

STEEVENS.

Falstaff, in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, says to Mrs. Ford: "Thou art a *traitor* to say so." In his interview with her, he certainly meant to use the language of love.

Helena however, I think, does not mean to say that she shall prove every thing to Bertram, but to express her apprehension that he will find at the court some lady or ladies who shall prove every thing to him; ("a phoenix, captain, counsellor, traitress; &c.") to whom he will give all the fond names that "blinking Cupid gossips." MALONE.

I believe it would not be difficult to find in the love poetry of those times an authority for most, if not for every one, of these whimsical titles. At least I can affirm it from knowledge, that for the greater part of them are to be found in the Italian lyric poetry, which was the model from which our poets chiefly copied.

HEATH.

* — *christendoms,*] This word, which signifies the collective body of christianity, every place where the christian religion is embraced, is surely used with much licence on the present occasion.

STEEVENS.

It is used by another ancient writer in the same sense; so that the word probably bore, in our author's time, the signification which he has affixed to it. So, in *A Royal Arbor of Loyal Poetry*, by Thomas Jordan, no date, but printed about 1661:

"She is baptiz'd in *Christendom*,

[i. e. by a christian name,]

"The Jew cries out he's undone —."

These lines are found in a ballad formed on part of the story of *The Merchant of Venice*, in which it is remarkable that it is the Jew's daughter, and not Portia, that saves the Merchant's life by pleading his cause. There should seem therefore to have been some novel on this subject that has hitherto escaped the researches of the commentators. In the same book are ballads founded on the fables of *Much ado about Nothing*, and *The Winter's Tale*. MALONE.

That blinking Cupid gossips. Now shall he——
I know not what he shall:—God fend him well!—
The court's a learning-place;—and he is one——

PAR. What one, i' faith?

HEL. That I wish well. — 'Tis pity——

PAR. What's pity?

HEL. That wishing well had not a body in't,
Which might be felt: that we, the poorer born,
Whose baser stars do shut us up in wishes,
Might with effects of them follow our friends,
And show what we alone must think;¹ which never
Returns us thanks.

Enter a Page.

PAGE. Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for you.
[Exit Page.]

PAR. Little Helen, farewell: if I can remember
thee, I will think of thee at court.

HEL. Monsieur Parolles, you were born under a
charitable star.

PAR. Under Mars, I.

HEL. I especially think, under Mars.

PAR. Why under Mars?

HEL. The wars have so kept you under, that you
must needs be born under Mars.

PAR. When he was predominant.

HEL. When he was retrograde, I think, rather.

PAR. Why think you so?

HEL. You go so much backward, when you fight.

¹ *And show what we alone must think;]* And show by realities
what we now must only think. JOHNSON.

PAR. That's for advantage.

HEL. So is running away, when fear proposes the safety: But the composition, that your valour and fear makes in you, is a virtue of a good wing,* and I like the wear well.

PAR. I am so full of businesses, I cannot answer thee acutely: I will return perfect courtier; in the which, my instruction shall serve to naturalize thee,

* — is a virtue of a good wing,] — Mr. Edwards is of opinion, that a virtue of a good wing refers to his nimbleness or fleetness in running away. The phrase, however, is taken from falconry, as may appear from the following passage in Marston's *Fawn*, 1606: " — I love my horse after a journeying easiness, as he is easy in journeying; my hawk, for the goodness of his wing, &c." Or it may be taken from dress: So, in *Every Man out of his Humour*: "I would have mine such a suit without a difference; such stuff, such a wing, such a sleeve," &c. Mr. Tollet observes, that a good wing signifies a strong wing in Lord Bacon's *Natural History*, experiment 866: "Certainly many birds of a good wing (as kites and the like) would bear up a good weight as they fly."

STEEVENS.

The reading of the old copy (which Dr. Warburton changed to *wing*,) is supported by a passage in *King Henry V.* in which we meet with a similar expression: "Though his affections are higher mounted than ours, yet when they stoop, they stoop with the like wing."

Again, in *K. Henry IV. P. I.*:

"Yet let me wonder Harry,

"At thy affections, which do hold a wing,

"Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors." MALONE.

The meaning of this passage appears to be this: "If your valour will suffer you to go backward for advantage, and your fear for the same reason will make you run away, the composition that your valour and fear make in you, must be a virtue that will fly far and swiftly." — A bird of a good wing, is a bird of swift and strong flight.

Though the latter part of this sentence is sense as it stands, I cannot help thinking that there is an error in it, and that we ought to read — "And is like to wear well." — Instead of "I like the wear well." M. MASON.

so thou wilt be capable of a courtier's counsel,⁷ and understand what advice shall thrust upon thee; else thou die'st in thine unthankfulness, and thine ignorance makes thee away: farewell. When thou hast leisure, say thy prayers; when thou hast none, remember thy friends: get thee a good husband, and use him as he uses thee: so farewell. [*Exit.*]

HEL. Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie,
Which we ascribe to heaven: the fated sky
Gives us free scope; only, doth backward pull
Our slow designs, when we ourselves are dull.
What power is it, which mounts my love so high;
That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye?⁸
The mightiest space in fortune nature brings
To join like likes, and kifs like native things.⁹
Impossible be strange attempts, to those
That weigh their pains in sense; and do suppose,
What hath been¹⁰ cannot be: Who ever strove
To show her merit, that did miss her love?

⁷ — *so thou wilt be capable of a courtier's counsel,*] i. e. thou wilt comprehend it. See a note in *Hamlet* on the words —

“ Whose form and cause conjoin'd, preaching to stones,

“ Would make them capable.” MALONE.

⁸ *What power is it, which mounts my love so high;*

That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye?] She means, by what influence is my love directed to a person so much above me? why am I made to discern excellence, and left to long after it, without the food of hope? JOHNSON.

⁹ — *native things.*] Things formed by nature for each other.

M. MASON.

¹⁰ *The mightiest space in fortune nature brings*

To join like likes, and kifs like native things.

Impossible be strange attempts, to those

That weigh their pains in sense; and do suppose,

What hath been, &c.] All these four lines are obscure, and, I believe, corrupt; I shall propose an emendation, which those who can explain the present reading, are at liberty to reject:

Through mightiest space in fortune nature brings

Likes to join likes, and kifs like native things.

The king's disease—my project may deceive me,
But my intents are fix'd, and will not leave me.

[Exit.

That is, nature brings like qualities and dispositions to meet through any distance that fortune may set between them; she joins them and makes them kiss like things born together.

The next lines I read with Sir T. Hanmer:

*Impossible be strange attempts to those
That weigh their pains in sense, and do suppose
What ha'n't been, cannot be.*

New attempts seem impossible to those who estimate their labour or enterprises by sense, and believe that nothing can be but what they see before them. JOHNSON.

I understood the meaning to be this — *The affections given us by nature often unite persons between whom fortune or accident has placed the greatest distance or disparity; and cause them to join, like likes, (instar parium) like persons in the same situation or rank of life.* Thus (as Mr. Steevens has observed) in *Timon of Athens*:

"Thou soldierest close impossibilities,

"And mak'st them kiss."

This interpretation is strongly confirmed by a subsequent speech of the countess's steward, who is supposed to have overheard this soliloquy of Helena: "Fortune, she said, was no goddess, that had put such difference betwixt their two estates."

The mightiest space in fortune, for persons the most widely separated by fortune, is certainly a licentious expression; but it is such a licence as Shakspeare often takes. Thus in *Cymbeline*, the diminution of space is used for the diminution, of which space, or distance, is the cause.

If he had written *spaces* (as in *Troilus and Cressida*,

"— her whom we know well

"The world's large spaces cannot parallel,)"

the passage would have been more clear; but he was confined by the metre. We might, however, read —

The mightiest space in nature fortune brings

To join, &c.

i. e. accident sometimes unites those whom inequality of rank has separated. But I believe the text is right. MALONE.

S C E N E II.

Paris. *A Room in the King's Palace.*

Flourish of cornets. Enter the King of France with letters; Lords and others attending.

KING. The Florentines and Senoys³ are by the ears;
Have fought with equal fortune, and continue
A braving war.

1 LORD. So 'tis reported, sir.

KING. Nay, 'tis most credible; we here receive it
A certainty, vouch'd from our cousin Austria,
With caution, that the Florentine will move us
For speedy aid; wherein our dearest friend
Prejudicates the business, and would seem
To have us make denial.

1 LORD. His love and wisdom,
Approv'd so to your majesty, may plead
For amplest credence.

KING. He hath arm'd our answer,
And Florence is denied before he comes:
Yet, for our gentlemen, that mean to see
The Tuscan service, freely have they leave
To stand on either part.

2 LORD. It may well serve
A nursery to our gentry, who are sick
For breathing and exploit.

KING. What's he comes here?

³ — Senoys — } The *Sanesi*, as they are termed by Boccace.
Painter, who translates him, calls them *Senois*. They were the
people of a small republick, of which the capital was *Sienna*.
The Florentines were at perpetual variance with them.

Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.

1 LORD. It is the count Roussillon,⁴ my good lord, Young Bertram.

KING. Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face; Frank nature, rather curious than in haste, Hath well compos'd thee. Thy father's moral parts May'st thou inherit too! Welcome to Paris.

BER. My thanks and duty are your majesty's,

KING. I would I had that corporal soundness now, As when thy father, and myself, in friendship, First try'd our soldiership! He did look far Into the service of the time, and was Discipled of the bravest: he lasted long; But on us both did haggish age steal on, And wore us out of act. It much repairs me To talk of your good father:⁵ In his youth He had the wit, which I can well observe To-day in our young lords; but they may jest, Till their own scorn return to them unnoted, Ere they can hide their levity in honour.⁶

⁴ — *Roussillon*,] The old copy reads *Resignoll*. STEEVENS.

⁵ — *It much repairs me*

To talk of your good father:] *To repair*, in these plays, generally signifies, to renovate. So, in *Cymbeline*

" — O disloyal thing,

" That should'st repair my youth:" MALONE.

⁶ *He had the wit, which I can well observe*

To-day in our young lords; but they may jest,

Till their own scorn return to them unnoted,

Ere they can hide their levity in honour.] I believe honour is not dignity of birth or rank, but acquired reputation: — Your father, says the king, had the same airy flights of satirical wit with the young lords of the present time, but they do not what he did, hide their unnoted levity, in honour, cover petty faults with great merit.

This is an excellent observation. Jocular follies, and slight offences, are only allowed by mankind in him that over-powers them by great qualities. JOHNSON.

So like a courtier, contempt nor bitterness
 Were in his pride or sharpness; if they were,
 His equal had awak'd them;⁷ and his honour,
 Clock to itself, knew the true minute when
 Exception bid him speak, and, at this time,
 His tongue obey'd his hand:⁸ who were below him
 He us'd as creatures of another place;⁹

Point thus:

*He had the wit, which I can well observe
 To-day in our young lords: but they may jest,
 Till their own scorn return to them, un-noted,
 Ere they can hide their levity in honour,
 So like a courtier. Contempt, &c. BLACKSTONE.*

The punctuation recommended by Sir William Blackstone is, I believe, the true one, at least it is such as deserves the reader's consideration. STEEVENS.

⁷ *So like a courtier, contempt nor bitterness
 Were in his pride or sharpness: if they were,
 His equal had awak'd them;*] Nor was used without reduplication. So, in *Measure for Measure*:

"More nor less to others paying,
 "Than by self offences weighing."

The old text needs to be explained. He was so like a courtier, that there was in his dignity of manner nothing contemptuous, and in his keenness of wit nothing bitter. If bitterness or contemptuousness ever appeared, they had been awakened by some injury, not of a man below him, but of his equal. This is the complete image of a well-bred man, and somewhat like this Voltaire has exhibited his hero Lewis XIV. JOHNSON.

⁸ *His tongue obey'd his hand:*] We should read — *His tongue obey'd the hand.* That is, the hand of his honour's clock, showing the true minute when exceptions bid him speak. JOHNSON.

His is put for its. So, in *Othello*:

"—— her motion

"Blush'd at herself," — instead of *itself*. STEEVENS.

⁹ *He us'd as creatures of another place;*] i. e. he made allowances for their conduct, and bore from them what he would not from one of his own rank. The Oxford editor, not understanding the sense, has altered *another place*, to a *brother-race*. WARBURTON.

I doubt whether this was our author's meaning. I rather incline to think that he meant only, that the father of Bertram treated those below him with becoming condescension, as creatures not indeed

And bow'd his eminent top to their low ranks,
Making them proud of his humility,
In their poor praise he humbled:² Such a man
Might be a copy to these younger times;
Which, follow'd well, would demonstrate them now
But goers backward.

BER. His good remembrance, fir,
Lies richer in your thoughts, than on his tomb;
So in approof lives not his epitaph,
As in your royal speech.³

in so high a place as himself, but yet holding a certain place; as
one of the links, though not the largest, of the great chain of society.

In *The Winter's Tale*, place is again used for rank or situation in
life:

" ——— O thou thing,

" Which I'll not call a creature of thy place." MALONE.

² Making them proud of his humility,

In their poor praise he humbled:] But why were they proud
of his humility? It should be read and pointed thus:

Making them proud; and his humility,

In their poor praise, he humbled —

i. e. by condescending to stoop to his inferiors, he exalted them
and made them proud; and, in the gracious receiving their poor
praise, he humbled even his humility. The sentiment is fine.

WARBURTON.

Every man has seen the mean too often proud of the humility of
the great, and perhaps the great may sometimes be humbled in the
praises of the mean, of those who commend them without con-
viction or discernment: this, however, is not so common; the mean
are found more frequently than the great. JOHNSON.

I think the meaning is, — Making them proud of receiving such
marks of condescension and affability from a person in so elevated
a situation, and at the same time lowering or humbling himself,
by stooping to accept of the encomiums of mean persons for that
humility. — The contradiction seems to be, "he being humbled in
their poor praise." MALONE.

Giving them a better opinion of their own importance, by his
condescending manner of behaving to them. M. MASON.

³ So in approof lives not his epitaph,

As in your royal speech.] Epitaph for character.

WARBURTON.

KING. 'Would, I were with him! He would always say,
(Methinks, I hear him now; his plausible words
He scatter'd not in ears, but grafted them,
To grow there, and to bear.)—*Let me not live*, ——
Thus ' his good melancholy oft began,
On the catastrophe and heel of pastime,
When it was out,—*let me not live*, quoth he,

I should wish to read —

Approof to lives not in his epitaph,
As in your royal speech.

Approof is approbation. If I should allow Dr. Warburton's interpretation of *epitaph*, which is more than can be reasonably expected, I can yet find no sense in the present reading.

JOHNSON.

We might, by a slight transposition, read —

So his *approof* lives not in epitaph.

Approof certainly means approbation. So, in *Cynthia's Revenge*:

"A man so absolute in my *approof*,
That nature hath reserv'd small dignity
That he enjoys not."

Again, in *Measure for Measure*:

"Either of condemnation or *approof*." STEVENS.

Perhaps the meaning is this: — His epitaph or inscription on his tomb is not so much in approbation or commendation of him, as is your royal speech. TOLLET.

There can be no doubt but the word *approof* is frequently used in the sense of approbation, but that is not always the case; and in this place it signifies proof or confirmation. The meaning of the passage appears to be this; "The truth of his epitaph is in no way so fully proved, as by your royal speech." It is needless to remark, that epitaphs generally contain the character and praises of the deceased. *Approofs* is used in the same sense by Bertram, in the second Act:

"Laf. But I hope your lordship thinks him not a soldier.
"Ber. Yes, my lord, and of very valiant *approof*."

M. MASON.

Mr. Heath supposes the meaning to be this: "His epitaph, or the character he left behind him, is not so well established by the specimens he exhibited of his worth, as by your royal report in his favour." The passage above quoted from Act II. supports this interpretation. MALONE.

² Thus —] Old copy — *This*. Corrected by Mr. Pope. MALONE.

*After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff
Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive senses
All but new things disdain; whose judgements are
Mere fathers of their garments; whose constancies
Expire before their fashions:—* This he wish'd:

I, after him, do after him wish too,
Since I nor wax, nor honey, can bring home,
I quickly were dissolved from my hive,
To give some labourers room.

2 LORD.

You are lov'd, fir;

They, that least lend it you, shall lack you first.

KING. I fill a place, I know't.—How long is't,
count,

Since the physician at your father's died;
He was much fam'd.

BER. Some six months since, my lord.

^A — whose judgements are

Mere fathers of their garments:] Who have no other use of their faculties, than to invent new modes of dress. JOHNSON.

I have a suspicion that Shakspeare wrote — *meer feathers of their garments*; i. e. whose judgements are merely parts (and insignificant parts) of their dress, worn and laid aside, as *feathers* are, from the meer love of novelty and change. He goes on to say, that they are even less constant in their judgements than in their dress:

—— their constancies

Expire before their fashions. TYRWHITT.

The reading of the old copy — *fathers*, is supported by a similar passage in *Cymbeline*:

“ ——— some jay of Italy

“ *Whose mother was her painting —.*”

Again, by another in the same play:

“ ——— No, nor thy tailor, rascal,

“ *Who is thy grandfather; he made those cloaths,*

“ *Which, as it seems, made thee.*”

There the garment is said to be the father of the man:—in the text, the judgement, being employed solely in forming or giving birth to new dresses, is called *the father of the garment*. So, in *King Henry IV.* P. II:

“ ——— every minute now

“ *Should be the father of some stratagem.*” MALONE.

KING. If he were living, I would try him yet;—
Lend me an arm;—the rest have worn me out
With several applications:—nature and sickness
Debate it⁵ at their leisure. Welcome, count;
My son's no dearer.

BER.

Thank your majesty.

[*Exeunt. Flourish.*]

S C E N E . III.

Rouffillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

*Enter Countess, Steward, and Clown.*⁶

COUNT. I will now hear: what say you of this
gentlewoman?

⁵ ——— *nature and sickness*

Debate it —] So, in *Macbeth*:

"Death and nature do contend about them."

STEEVENS.

⁶ ——— *Steward, and Clown.*] A *Clown* in Shakspeare is commonly taken for a *licensed jester*, or domestic fool. We are not to wonder that we find this character often in his plays, since fools were at that time maintained in all great families, to keep up merriment in the house. In the picture of Sir Thomas More's family, by Hans Holbein, the only servant represented is Patison the fool. This is a proof of the familiarity to which they were admitted, not by the great only, but the wife.

In some plays, a servant, or a rustic, of a remarkable petulance and freedom of speech, is likewise called a *clown*. JOHNSON.

Cardinal Wolfey, after his disgrace, wishing to show King Henry VIII. a mark of his respect, sent him his fool *Patch*, as a present; whom, says Stowe, "the King received very gladly."

MALONE.

This dialogue, or that in *Twelfth Night*, between Olivia and the *Clown*, seems to have been particularly censured by Cartwright, in one of the copies of verses prefixed to the works of Beaumont and Fletcher:

SFEW. Madam, the care I have had to even your content, 'I wish might be found in the calendar of my past endeavours; for then we wound our modesty, and make foul the clearness of our deservings, when of ourselves we publish them.*

COUNT. What does this knave here? Get you gone, firrah: The complaints, I have heard of you, I do not all believe; 'tis my flowness, that I do not: for, I know, you lack not folly to commit

"*Shakspeare* to thee was dull, whose best jest lies

"*I' th' lady's* questions, and the *fool's* replies;

"Old fashion'd wit, which walk'd from town to town

"In trunk-hose, which our fathers call'd the *Clown*."

In the MS. register of Lord Stanhope of Harringtoo, treasurer of the chamber to King James I. from 1613 to 1616, are the following entries: "Tom Derry, his majesty's *fool*, at 2s. per diem, — 1615: Paid John Mawe for the diet and lodging of Thomas Derric, her majesty's *jest*er, for 13 weeks, 10*l.* 18*s.* 6*d.* — 1616."

STEEVENS.

The following lines in *The Careless Shepherdess*, a comedy, 1656, exhibit probably a faithful portrait of this once admired character:

"Why, I would have *the fool* in every act,

"Be it comedy or tragedy. I have laugh'd

"Untill I cry'd again, to see what faces

"The rogue will make. — O, it does me good

"To see him hold out his chin, hang down his hands,

"And twirl his *bable*. There is o'er a part

"About him but breaks jests. —

"I'd rather hear him leap, or laugh, or cry,

"Than hear the gravest speech in all the play.

"I oever saw REASON peeping through the curtain,

"But ravishing joy enter'd into my heart." MALONE.

* — to even your content,] To act up to your desires.

JOHNSON.

* — when of ourselves we publish them.] So, in *Troilus and Cressida*:

"The worthiness of praise distains his worth,

"If he that's prais'd, himself brings the praise forth."

MALONE.

them, and have ability enough to make such knaveries yours.*

CLO. 'Tis not unknown to you, madam, I am a poor fellow.

COUNT. Well, sir.

CLO. No, madam, 'tis not so well, that I am poor; though many of the rich are damn'd:† But, if I may have your ladyship's good will to go to the world,‡ Isbel the woman and I § will do as we may.

COUNT. Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

CLO. I do beg your good-will in this case.

COUNT. In what case?

CLO. In Isbel's case, and mine own. Service is no heritage:¶ and, I think, I shall never have the

* —you lack not folly to commit them, and have ability enough to make such knaveries yours.] After premising that the accusative, *them*, refers to the precedent word, *complaints*, and that this by a metonymy of the effect for the cause, stands for the freaks which occasioned those complaints, the sense will be extremely clear. "You are fool enough to commit those irregularities you are charged with, and yet not so much fool neither, as to discredit the accusation by any defect in your ability." HEATH.

It appears to me that the accusative *them* refers to *knaveries*, and the natural sense of the passage seems to be this: "You have folly enough to desire to commit these knaveries, and ability enough to accomplish them." M. MASON.

† —are damn'd:] See *S. Mark*, x. 25; *S. Luke*, xviii. 25.

GREY.

‡ —to go to the world.] This phrase has already occurred in *Much ado about nothing*, and signifies to be married: and thus, in *As you Like it*, Audrey says: "—it is no dishonest desire, to desire to be a woman of the world." STEVENS.

§ —and I—] *I*, which was inadvertently omitted in the first copy, was supplied by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

¶ *Service is no heritage:*] This is a proverbial expression. • *Needs must when the devil drives*, is another. RITSON.

bleſſing of God, till I have iſſue of my body; for, they ſay, bearns are bleſſings.

COUNT. Tell me thy reaſon why thou wilt marry.

CLO. My poor body, madam, requires it: I am driven on by the fleſh; and he muſt needs go, that the devil drives.

COUNT. Is this all your worſhip's reaſon?

CLO. Faith madam, I have other holy reaſons, ſuch as they are.

COUNT. May the world know them?

CLO. I have been, madam, a wicked creature, as you and all fleſh and blood are; and, indeed, I do marry, that I may repent.

COUNT. Thy marriage, ſooner than thy wickedneſs.

CLO. I am out of friends, madam; and I hope to have friends for my wife's ſake.

COUNT. Such friends are thine enemies, knave.

CLO. You are ſhallow, madam; c'en great friends;*

* Clo. *You are ſhallow, madam; c'en great friends;*] The meaning [i. e. of the ancient reading mentioned in the ſubſequent note] ſeems to be, you are not deeply ſkilled in the character or offices of great friends. JOHNSON.

The old copy reads—*in great friends*; evidently a miſtake for *c'en*, which was formerly written *c'n*. The two words are ſo near in ſound, that they might eaſily have been confounded by an inattentive hearer.

The ſame miſtake has happened in many other places in our author's plays. So, in the preſent comedy, Ad III. ſc. ii. folio, 1623:

"Lady. What have we here?"

"Clown. *In that you have there.*"

Again, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

"No more but *in a woman.*"

Again, in *Twelfth Night*:

"'Tis with him in ſtanding water, between boy and man."

The corruption of this paſſage was pointed out by Mr. Tyrwhitt. For the emendation now made, I am anſwerable. MALONE.

for the knaves come to do that for me, which I am a-weary of. * He, that ears my land, † spares my team, and gives me leave to inn the crop: if I be his cuckold, he's my drudge; He, that comforts my wife, is the cherisher of my flesh and blood; he, that cherishes my flesh and blood, loves my flesh and blood; he, that loves my flesh and blood, is my friend: *ergo*, he that kisses my wife, is my friend. If men could be contented to be what they are, there were no fear in marriage; for young Charbon the puritan, and old Poyfam the papist,

* — *the knaves come to do that for me, which I am a-weary of.*] The same thought is more dilated in an old MS. play, entitled, *The Second Maid's Tragedy*:

" *Soph.* I have a wife, would she were so prefer'd!
 " I could but be her subjeſt; ſo I am now.
 " I allow her her owne friend to ſtop her mouth,
 " And keep her quiet: give him his table free,
 " And the huge feeding of his great ſtone-horſe,
 " On which he rides in pompe about the citie
 " Only to ſpeake to gallants in bay-windowes.
 " Marry, his lodging he paies dearly for;
 " He gets me all my children, there I ſave by't;
 " Beſide, I drawe my life owte by the bargain
 " Some twelve yeres longer than the tymes appoynted;
 " When my young prodigal gallant kicks up's heels
 " At one and thirtie, and lies dead and rotten
 " Some five and fortie yeares before I'm coffin'd.
 " 'Tis the right waie to keep a woman honeſt:
 " One friend is barcadoe to a hundred,
 " And keepes 'em owte; nay more, a husband's ſure
 " To have his children all of one man's gettinge;
 " And he that performs beſt, can have no better:
 " I'm e'en as happie then that ſave a labour."

STEEVENS.

† — *that ears my land,*] To ear is to plough. So, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

" Make the ſea ſerve them, which they ear and wound
 " With keels of every kind." STEEVENS.

See 1 Sam. viii. 12. *Iſaiah*, xxx. 24. *Deut* xxi. 4. *Gen.* xlv. 6. *Exod.* xxxiv. 21. for the uſe of this verb. HENLEY.

howsoever their hearts are sever'd in religion, their heads are both one, they may joll horns together, like any deer i' the herd.

COUNT. Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouth'd and calumnious knave?

CLO. A prophet I, madam; and I speak the truth the next way: *

*For I the ballad will repeat,
Which men full true shall find;
Your marriage comes by destiny,
Your cuckoo sings by kind.* †

COUNT. Get you gone, sir; I'll talk with you more anon.

* *A prophet I, madam; and I speak the truth the next way:*] It is a superstition, which has run through all ages and people, that natural fools have something in them of divinity. On which account they were esteemed sacred: Travellers tell us in what esteem the Turks now hold them; nor had they less honour paid them heretofore in France, as appears from the old word *binet*, for a natural fool. Hence it was that Pantagruel, in *Rabelais*, advised Panurge to go and consult the fool Triboulet as an oracle; which gives occasion to a satirical stroke upon the privy council of Francis the First—*Par l'avis, conseil, prediſtion des fols vos seavez grands printes, &c. ont esté conſervez*, &c.—The phrase—*speak the truth the next way*, means *directly*; as they do who are only the instruments or canals of others; such as inspired persons were supposed to be. WARBURTON.

See the popular story of *Nixon the Idiot's Ceshire Prophecy*.

DOUCE.

Next way, is *nearest way*. So, in *K. Henry IV. Part I*:

" 'Tis the *next way* to turn tailor," &c. STEEVENS.

Next way is a phrase still used in Warwickshire, and signifies *without circumlocution*, or *going about*. HENLEY.

† — *sings by kind*.] I find something like two of the lines of this ballad in *John Grange's Garden*, 1577:

" Content yourself as well as I, let reason rule your minde,
" As cuckoldes come by destinie, so cuckowes sing by kinde."

STEEVENS.

STEW. May it please you, madam, that he bid Helen come to you; of her I am to speak.

COUNT. Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman, I would speak with her; Helen I mean.

CLO. *Was this fair face the cause,*² *quoth she,*
[Singing,

Why the Grecians sacked Troy?
*Fond done,*³ *done fond,*
Was this king Priam's joy.

² *Was this fair face the cause, &c.]* The name of *Helen*, whom the Countess has just called for, brings an old ballad on the sacking of Troy to the Clown's mind. MALONE.

This is a stanza of an old ballad, out of which a word or two are dropt, equally necessary to make the sense and alternate rhyme. For it was not Helen, who was King Priam's joy, but Paris. The third line therefore should be read thus:

Fond done, fond done, for Paris, he——. WARBURTON.

If this be a stanza taken from any ancient ballad, it will probably in time be found entire, and then the restoration may be made with authority. STEEVENS.

In confirmation of Dr. Warburton's conjecture, Mr. Theobald has quoted from Fletcher's *Maid in the Mill*, the following stanza of another old ballad:

"And here fair Paris comes,
"The hopeful youth of Troy,
"Queen Hecuba's darling son,
"King Priam's only joy."

This renders it extremely probable, that Paris was the person described as "king Priam's joy" in the ballad quoted by our author; but Mr. Heath has justly observed, that Dr. Warburton, though he has supplied the words supposed to be lost, has not explained them; nor indeed do they seem, as they are connected, to afford any meaning. In 1585 was entered on the Stationers' books by Edward White, "*The lamentation of Hecuba, and the ladies of Troy.*" which probably contained the stanza here quoted.

MALONE.

³ *Fond done,]* Is foolishly done. So, in *King Richard III.* Act III. sc. iii:

"—— Sorrow and grief of heart,
"Makes him speak fondly." STEEVENS.

*With that she sighed as she stood,
With that she sighed as she stood,⁴
And gave this sentence then;
Among nine bad if one be good's
Among nine bad if one be good,
There's yet one good in ten.⁵*

COUNT. What, one good in ten? you corrupt the song, firrah.

CLO. One good woman in ten, madam; which is a purifying o'the song: 'Would God would serve the world so all the year! we'd find no fault with the tythe-woman, if I were the parson: One in ten, quoth a'! an we might have a good woman born but every blazing star,⁶ or at an earthquake, 'twould mend the lottery well; ⁷ a man may draw his heart out, ere he pluck one.

⁴ *With that she sighed as she stood,*] At the end of the line of which this is a repetition, we find added in Italic characters the word *his*, denoting, I suppose, the necessity of its being repeated. The corresponding line was twice printed, as it is here inserted, from the oldest copy. STEEVENS.

⁵ *Among nine bad if one be good,
There's yet one good in ten.*] This second stanza of the ballad is turned to a joke upon the woman: a confession, that there was one good in ten. Whereon the Countess observed, that he corrupted the song; which shows the song said—*nine good in ten.*

*If one be bad amongst nine good,
There's but one bad in ten.*

Tis relates to the ten sons of Priam, who all behaved themselves well but Paris. For though he once had fifty, yet at this unfortunate period of his reign he had but ten; *Agathon, Antiphon, Deiphobus, Dins, Hector, Helenus, Hippothous, Pammon, Paris, and Polites.* WARBURTON.

⁶ — *but every blazing star,*] The old copy reads—*but one every blazing star.* STEEVENS.

I suppose o'er was a misprint for or, which was used by our old writers for before. MALONE.

⁷ — *'twould mend the lottery well;*] This surely is a strange

COUNT. You'll be gone, fir knave, and do as I command you?

CLO. That man should be at woman's command, and yet no hurt done!—Though honestly be no puritan, yet it will do no hurt; it will wear the surplice of humility over the black gown of a big heart.*—I am going, forsooth: the business is for Helen to come hither. [Exit Clown.

kind of phraseology. I have never met with any example of it in any of the contemporary writers; and if there were any proof that in the lotteries of Queen Elizabeth's time *wheels* were employed, I should be inclined to read—*lottery wheel*. MALONE.

* Clo. *That man, &c.*] The Clown's answer is obscure. His lady bids him do as he is *commanded*. He answers with the licentious petulance of his character, that *if a man does as a woman commands, it is likely he will do amiss*; that he does not amiss, being at the command of a woman, he makes the effect, not of his lady's goodness, but of his own *honesty*, which, though not very nice or *puritanical*, will do no hurt; and will not only do no hurt, but, unlike the *puritans*, will comply with the injunctions of superiors, and wear the *surplice of humility over the black gown of a big heart*; will obey commands, though not much pleased with a state of subjection.

Here is an allusion, violently enough forced in, to satirize the obstinacy with which the *puritans* refused the use of the ecclesiastical habits, which was, at that time, one principal cause of the breach of the union, and, perhaps, to insinuate, that the modest purity of the surplice was sometimes a cover for pride.

JOHNSON.

The aversion of the *puritans* to a *surplice* is alluded to in many of the old comedies. So, in *Cupid's Whirligig*, 1607:

— "She loves to act in as clean linen as any gentlewoman of her function about the town; and truly that's the reason that your sincere *puritans* cannot abide a *surplice*, because they say 'tis made of the same thing that your villainous sin is committed in, of your prophane holland."

Again, in *The Match at Midnight*, 1633:

"He has turn'd my stomach for all the world like a *puritan's* at the sight of a *surplice*."

Again, in *The Hollander*, 1640:

— "A *puritan*, who, because he saw a *surplice* in the church, would needs hang himself in the bell-ropes." STEVENS.

COUNT. Well, now.

STEW. I know, madam, you love your gendewoman entirely.

COUNT. Faith, I do: her father bequeath'd her to me; and she herself, without other advantage, may lawfully make title to as much love as she finds: there is more owing her, than is paid; and more shall be paid her, than she'll demand.

STEW. Madam, I was very late more near her than, I think, she wish'd me: alone she was, and did communicate to herself, her own words to her own ears; she thought, I dare vow for her, they touch'd not any stranger sense. Her matter was, she loved your son: Fortune, she said, was no god-defs, that had put such difference betwixt their two estates; Love, no god, that would not extend his might, only where qualities were level; ⁹ Diana,

I cannot help thinking we should read — *Though honesty be a puritan* —. TYRWHITT.

Surely Mr. Tyrwhitt's correction is right. If our author had meant to say — though *honesty be no puritan*, — why should he add — *that it would wear the surplice*, &c. or, in other words, that it would be content to assume a covering that puritans in general reprobated? What would there be extraordinary in this? Is it matter of wonder, that he who is no puritan, should be free from the scruples and prejudices of one?

The Clown, I think, means to say, "Though honesty be rigid and conscientious as a puritan, yet it will not be obdurate, but humbly comply with the lawful commands of its superiors, while at the same time its proud spirit inwardly revolts against them." I suspect however a still farther corruption; and that the compositor caught the words "*no hurt*" from the preceding line. Our author perhaps wrote — "*Though honesty be a puritan, yet it will do what is enjoined*; it will wear the surplice of humility, over the black gown of a big heart." I will therefore obey my mistress, however reluctantly, and go for Helena. MALONE.

⁹ — *only where qualities were level*;] The meaning may be, where qualities only, and not fortunes or conditions, were level. Or perhaps *only* is used for *except*. " — that would not extend his might, *except* where two persons were of equal rank." MALONE.

no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight to be surpris'd, without rescue, in the first assault, or ransom afterward: * This she deliver'd in the most bitter touch of sorrow, that e'er I heard virgin exclaim in: which I held my duty, speedily to acquaint you withal; thence, * in the loss that may happen, it concerns you something to know it.

COUNT. You have discharged this honestly; keep it to yourself: many likelihoods inform'd me of this before, which hung so tottering in the balance, that I could neither believe, nor misdoubt: Pray you, leave me: stall this in your bosom, and I thank you for your honest care: I will speak with you further anon. [Exit Steward.]

Enter HELENA.

COUNT. Even so it was with me, when I was young:

If we are nature's, † these are ours; this thorn
Doth to our rose of youth rightly belong;
Our blood to us, this to our blood is born;

* — Love, no god, &c. Diana, no queen of virgins, &c.] This passage stands thus in the old copies:

Love, no god, that would not extend his might only where qualities were level; queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight, &c.

'Tis evident to every sensible reader that something must have slipped out here, by which the meaning of the context is rendered defective. The steward is speaking in the very words he overheard of the young lady; fortune was no goddess, she said, for one reason; love, no god, for another; — what could she then more naturally subjoin, than as I have amended in the text.

Diana, no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight to be surpris'd without rescue, &c.

For in poetical history Diana was as well known to preside over chastity, as Cupid over love, or Fortune over the change or regulation of our circumstances. THEOBALD.

† — thence,] i. e. since. So, in Spenser's *State of Ireland*:
" — the beginning of all other evils which thence have af-

It is the show and seal of nature's truth,
Where love's strong passion is impress'd in youth :
By our remembrances ⁴ of days foregone,
Such were our faults ; — or then we thought them
none. ⁵

Her eye is sick on't ; I observe her now.

HEL. What is your pleasure, madam ?

COUNT. You know, Helen,

I am a mother to you.

HEL. Mine honourable mistress.

COUNT. Nay, a mother ;

Why not a mother ? When I said, a mother,
Me thought you saw a serpent : What's in mother,
That you start at it ? I say, I am your mother ;
And put you in the catalogue of those
That were enwombed mine : 'Tis often seen,
Adoption strives with nature ; and choice breeds
A native slip to us from foreign seeds : ⁶

filled that land." Chaucer frequently uses *sith*, and *sithen*, in the same sense. STEEVENS.

³ *If we are nature's,*] The old copy reads — *If ever we are nature's*. STEEVENS.

The emendation was made by Mr. Pope. MALONE.

⁴ *By our remembrances* —] That is, according to our recollection. So we say, he is old by my reckoning. JOHNSON.

⁵ *Such were our faults ; — or then we thought them none.*] We should read : — *O ! then we thought them none*.

A motive for pity and pardon, agreeable to fact, and the indulgent character of the speaker. This was sent to the Oxford editor, and he altered *O*, to *though*. WARBURTON.

Such were the faulty weaknesses of which I was guilty in my youth, or such at least were then my feelings, though perhaps at that period of my life I did not think they deserved the name of faults. Dr. Warburton, without necessity, as it seems to me, reads : — " *O ! then we thought them none ;*" — and the subsequent editors adopted the alteration. MALONE.

⁶ — *and choice breeds*

A native slip to us from foreign seeds :] And our choice furnishes

You ne'er oppress'd me with a mother's groan,
 Yet I express to you a mother's care:—
 God's mercy, maiden! does it curd thy blood,
 To say, I am thy mother? What's the matter,
 That this distemper'd messenger of wet,
 The many-colour'd Iris, rounds thine eye? ⁷
 Why?—that you are my daughter?

HEL. That I am not.

COUNT. I say, I am your mother.

HEL. Pardon, madam;

The count Rouffillon cannot be my brother;
 I am from humble, he from honour'd name;
 No note upon my parents, his all noble:
 My master, my dear lord he is; and I
 His servant live, and will his vassal die:
 He must not be my brother.

COUNT. Nor I your mother?

HEL. You are my mother, madam; Would you
 were

(So that my lord, your son, were not my brother,)
 Indeed, my mother!—or were you both our mo-
 thers,

I care no more for, than I do for heaven,

us with a slip propagated to us from foreign seeds, which we educate
 and treat, as if it were native to us, and sprung from ourselves.

HEATH.

⁷ ————— *What's the matter,*

That this distemper'd messenger of wet,

The many-colour'd Iris, rounds thine eye?] There is something
 exquisitely beautiful in this representation of that suffusion of co-
 lours which glimmers around the sight when the eye-lashes are wet
 with tears. The poet hath described the same appearance in his
Rape of Lucrece:

“ And round about her tear-distained eye

“ Blue circles stream'd like rainbows in the sky.”

HENLEY.

So I were not his sister: ' Can't no other,
But, I your daughter, he must be my brother? '9

COUNT. Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-
in-law;

God shield, you mean it not! daughter, and mother,
So strive ' upon your pulse: What, pale again?
My fear hath catch'd your fondness: Now I see
The mystery of your loneliness, and find
Your salt tears' head. ' Now to all sense 'tis gross,

* ————— or were you both our mothers,

I care no more for, than I do for heaven,

So I were not his sister:] There is a designed ambiguity: I
care no more for, is, I care as much for. — I wish it equally.

FARMER,

In *Troilus and Cressida* we find — " I care not to be the louse of
a lazar, so I were not Menelaus." There the words certainly
mean, I should not be sorry or unwilling to be, &c. According
to this, then, the meaning of the passage before us should be, " If
you were mother to us both, it would not give me more solicitude
than heaven gives me, — so I were not his sister." But Helena
certainly would not confess an indifference about her future state.
However, she may mean, as Dr. Farmer has suggested, " I should
not care more than, but equally as, I care for future happiness; I
should be as content, and solicit it as much, as I pray for the
bliss of heaven." MALONE.

' ——— Can't no other,

But, I your daughter, he must be my brother?] The meaning is
obscured by the elliptical diction. Can it be no other way, but if
I be your daughter, he must be my brother? JOHNSON.

* ——— strive —] To strive is to contend. So, in *Cymbeline*:

" That it did strive in workmanship and value."

STEEVENS.

* ——— Now I see

The mystery of your loneliness, and find

Your salt tears' head.] The old copy reads — *loveliness*.

STEEVENS.

The mystery of her *loveliness* is beyond my comprehension: the
old Countess is saying nothing ironical, nothing taunting, or in
reproach, that this word should find a place here; which it could
not, unless sarcastically employed, and with some spleen. I dare

You love my son ; invention is aſham'd ,
 Againſt the proclamation of thy paſſion ,
 To ſay , thou doſt not : therefore tell me true ;
 But tell me then , 'tis ſo : — for , look , thy cheeks
 Confels it , one to the other ; and thine eyes
 See it ſo groſſly ſhown in thy behaviours ,
 That in their kind ⁴ they ſpeak it ; only ſin
 And helliſh obſtinacy tie thy tongue ,
 That truth ſhould be ſuſpected : Speak ; it's ſo ?
 If it be ſo , you have wound a goodly clue ;
 If it be not , forſwear't : howe'er , I charge thee ,
 As heaven ſhall work in me for thine avail ,
 To tell me truly .

HEL. Good madam , pardon me !

COUNT. Do you love my ſon ?

HEL. Your pardon , noble miſtreſs !

COUNT. Love you my ſon ?

HEL. Do not you love him , madam ?

COUNT. Go not about ; my love hath in't a bond ,
 Whereof the world takes note : come , come , diſ-
 cloſe

warrant the poet meant his old lady ſhould ſay no more than this :
 " I now find the myſtery of your creeping into corners , and weep-
 ing , and pining in ſecret . " For this reaſon I have amended the
 text , *lowlineſs* . The Steward , in the foregoing ſcene , where he gives
 the Counteſs intelligence of Helena's behaviour , ſays —

" *Alone ſhe was* , and did communicate to herſelf , her own words
 to her own ears . " THEOBALD .

The late M. Hall had corrected this , I believe , rightly , — your
lowlineſs . TYRWHITT .

I think Theobald's correction as plauſible . To chooſe ſolitude
 is a mark of love . STEEVENS .

Your ſalt tears' head .] The ſource , the fountain of your tears ,
 the cauſe of your grief . JOHNSON .

⁴ — *in their kind* —] i. e. in their language , according to their
 nature . STEEVENS .

The state of your affection; for your passions
Have to the full appeach'd.

HEL. Then, I confess,
Here on my knee, before high heaven and you,
That before you, and next unto high heaven,
I love your son: —
My friends were poor, but honest; so's my love;
Be not offended; for it hurts not him,
That he is lov'd of me: I follow him not
By any token of presumptuous suit;
Nor would I have him, till I do deserve him;
Yet never know how that desert should be.
I know I love in vain, strive against hope;
Yet, in this captious and intenible sieve,⁷
I still pour in the waters of my love,
And lack not to lose still: ⁶ thus, Indian like,

⁷ ——— *captious and intenible sieve.*] The word *captious* I never found in this sense; yet I cannot tell what to substitute, unless *cavious* for *rotten*, which yet is a word more likely to have been mistaken by the copiers than used by the author. JOHNSON.

Dr. Farmer supposes *captious* to be a contraction of *capacious*. As violent ones are to be found among our ancient writers, and especially in Churchyard's Poems, with which Shakspeare was not unacquainted. STEEVENS.

By *captious*, I believe Shakspeare only meant *recipient*, capable of receiving what is put into it; and by *intenible*, incapable of holding or retaining it. How frequently he and the other writers of his age confounded the active and passive adjectives, has been already more than once observed.

The original copy reads — *intenible*. The correction was made in the second folio. MALONE.

⁶ *And lack not to lose still:*] Perhaps we should read —
And lack not to love still. TYRWHITT.

I believe *lose* is right. So afterwards, in this speech:—

“ ——— whose state is such, that cannot choose

“ But lend and give, where she is sure to *lose*.”

Helena means, I think, to say that, like a person who pours water into a vessel full of holes, and still continues his employment though he finds the water all lost, and the vessel empty, so, though

Religious in mine error, I adore
 The sun, that looks upon his worshipper,
 But knows of him no more. My dearest madam,
 Let not your hate encounter with my love,
 For loving where you do: but, if yourself,
 Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth,⁷
 Did ever, in so true a flame of liking,
 With chastity, and love dearly, that your Dian
 Was both herself and Love;⁸ O then, give pity
 To her, whose state is such, that cannot choose
 But lend and give, where she is sure to lose;
 That seeks not to find that her search implies,
 But, riddle-like, lives sweetly where she dies.

COUNT. Had you not lately an intent, speak truly,
 To go to Paris?

HEL. Madam, I had.

COUNT. Wherefore? tell true.⁹

she finds that *the waters of her love* are still left, that her affection is thrown away on an object whom she thinks she never can deserve, she yet is not discouraged, but perseveres in her hopeless endeavour to accomplish her wishes. The poet evidently alludes to the trite story of the daughters of Danaus. MALONE.

⁷ *Whose aged honor cites a virtuous youth,*] i. e. whose respectable conduct in age shows, or proves, that you were no less virtuous when young. As a fact is proved by citing witnesses, or examples from books, our author with his usual license uses to cite, in the sense of to prove. MALONE.

⁸ *With chastity, and love dearly, that your Dian*

Was both herself and Love;] i. e. Venus. Helena means to say—"If ever you wished that the deity who presides over chastity, and the queen of amorous rites, were one and the same person; or, in other words, if ever you wished for the honest and lawful completion of your chaste desires." I believe, however, the words were accidentally transposed at the press, and would read—

Love dearly, and with chastity, that your Dian, &c.

MALONE.

⁹ — *tell true.*] This is an evident interpolation. It is needless, because it repeats what the Countess had already said: it is injurious, because it spoils the measure. STEVENS.

Of his profession, that his good receipt⁴
 Shall, for my legacy, be sanctified
 By the luckiest stars in heaven: and would your
 honour

But give me leave to try success, I'd venture
 The well-lost life of mine on his grace's cure,
 Ay such a day, and hour.

COUNT. Dost thou believe't?

HEL. Ay, madam, knowingly.

COUNT. Why, Helen thou shalt have my leave,
 and love,

Means, and attendants, and my loving greetings
 To those of mine in court; I'll stay at home,
 And pray God's blessing into thy attempt:⁵
 Be gone to-morrow; and be sure of this,
 What I can help thee to, thou shalt not miss.

[*Exeunt.*]

⁴ *There's something hints
 More than my father's skill,—*
 — that his good receipt, &c.] The old copy reads—*something*
in't. STEEVENS.

Here is an inference, [*that*] without any thing preceding, to
 which it refers, which makes the sentence vicious, and shows that
 we should read—

*There's something hints
 More than my father's skill,—*
 — that his good receipt —

i. e. I have a secret premonition, or presage. WARBURTON.

This necessary correction was made by Sir Thomas Hamner.

MALONE.

⁵ — into thy attempt:] So in the old copy. We might more
 intelligibly read, according to the third folio,—unto thy attempt.

STEEVENS.

THAT ENDS WELL, 51

ACT II. SCENE I.

Paris. *A Room in the King's Palace.*

Flourish. Enter King, with young Lords taking leave for the Florentine war; BERTRAM, PAROLLES, and Attendants.

KING. Farewell,⁶ young lord, these warlike principles
Do not throw from you:—and you, my lord, farewell:⁷
Share the advice betwixt you; if both gain all,
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis receiv'd,
And is enough for both.

⁶ *Farewell, &c.]* In all the latter copies these lines stood thus:

*Farewell, young lords; these warlike principles
Do not throw from you. You my lords, farewell;
Share the advice betwixt you; if both again,
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis receiv'd.*

The third line in that state was unintelligible. Sir Thomas Hanmer reads thus:

*Farewell, young lord: these warlike principles
Do not throw from you; you, my lord farewell;
Share the advice betwixt you: If both gain well!
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis receiv'd,
And is enough for both.*

The first edition, from which the passage is restored, was sufficiently clear; yet it is plain, that the latter editors preferred a reading which they did not understand. JOHNSON.

⁷ — and you, my lord, farewell;] The old copy, both in this and the following instance, reads—*lords*. STEEVENS.

It does not any where appear that more than two French lords (beside Bertram) went to serve in Italy; and therefore I think the King's speech should be corrected thus:

*Farewell, young lord; these warlike principles
Do not throw from you; and you, my lord, farewell;*

1 LORD. It is our hope fir,
After well-enter'd soldiers, to return
And find your grace in health.

KING. No, no, it cannot be; and yet my heart
Will not confess he owes the malady
That doth my life besiege.* Farewell, young lords;
Whether I live or die, be you the sons
Of worthy Frenchmen: let higher Italy
Those 'bated, that inherit but the fall
Of the last monarchy,) see, that you come
Not to woo honour, but to wed it; when

what follows, shows this correction to be necessary:

" Share the advice betwixt you; if both gain all, &c.

TYRWHITT.

Tyrwhitt's amendment is clearly right. Advice is the only
thing that may be shared between two, and yet both gain all.

M. MASON.

* ——— and yet my heart

Will not confess he owes the malady

That 'doth my life besiege.] i. e. as the common phrase runs,
I am still heart-whole; my spirits, by not sinking under my dis-
temper do not acknowledge its influence. SIZEVENS.

" ——— let higher Italy

[Those 'bated, that inherit but the fall

Of the last monarchy, see, &c.] The ancient geographers have
divided Italy into the higher and the lower, the Apennine hills
being a kind of natural line of partition; the side next the
Adriatick was denominated the higher Italy, and the other side
the lower: and the two seas followed the same terms of distinction,
the Adriatick being called the upper Sea and the Tyrrhene or
Tuscan the lower. Now the Sennones, or Senois, with whom the
Florentines are here supposed to be at war, inhabited the higher
Italy, their chief town being Arminium, now called Rimini, upon
the Adriatick. HAMMER.

Italy, at the time of this scene, was under three very different
tenures. The emperor, as successor of the Roman emperors, had
one part; the pope, by a pretended donation from Constantine,
another; and the third was composed of free states. Now by the
last monarchy is meant the Roman, the last of the four general mo-
narchies. Upon the fall of this monarchy, in the scramble, several
cities set up for themselves, and became free states: now these

The bravest questant shrinks, find what you seek,

might be said properly to *inherit* the *fall* of the monarchy. This being premised, let us now consider sense. The King says higher Italy;—giving it the rank of preference to France; but he corrects himself and says, I except those from that precedence, who only inherit the fall of the last monarchy; as all the little petty states; for instance, Florence, to whom these volunteers were going. As if he had said, I give the place of honour to the emperor and the pope, but not to the free states. WARBURTON.

Sir T. Hanmer reads:

Those hallards that inherit, &c.

with this note:

"Reflecting upon the abject and degenerate condition of the cities and states which arose out of the ruins of the Roman empire, the last of the four great monarchies of the world."

Dr. Warburton's observation is learned, but rather too subtle; Sir Thomas Hanmer's alteration is merely arbitrary. The passage is confessedly obscure, and therefore I may offer another explanation. I am of opinion that the epithet *higher* is to be understood of situation rather than of dignity. The sense may then be this, *Let upper Italy, where you are to exercise your valour, see that you come to gain honour, to the abatement, that is, to the disgrace and depression of those, that have now lost their ancient military fame, and inherit but the fall of the last monarchy. To, abate is used by Shakspeare in the original sense of abate, to depress, to sink, to deject, to subdue. So, in Coriolanus:*

"— till ignorance deliver you,

"As most *abated* captives to some nation

"That won you without blows."

And *bated* is used in a kindred sense in *The Merchant of Venice*:

"— in a bondman's key,

"With *bated* breath, and whisp'ring humbleness."

The word has still the same meaning in the language of the law.

JOHNSON.

* In confirmation of Johnson's opinion, that *higher* relates to situation, not to dignity, we find in the third scene of the fourth A⁵, that one of the Lords says, — "What will Count Roussillon do then? will he travel *higher*, or return again to France?"

M. MASON.

Those 'bated may here signify "those being *taken away* or *excepted*." *Bate*, thus contradicted, is in colloquial language still used with this meaning. This parenthetical sentence implies no more than *they excepted who possess modern Italy, the remains of the Roman empire.* HOLT WHITE.

That same may cry you loud : *1 say, farewell.

2 LORD. Health, at your bidding, serve your majesty !

KING. Those girls of Italy, take heed of them ;
They say, our French lack language to deny,
If they demand : beware of being captives,
Before you serve.

BOTH Our hearts receive your warnings.

KING. Farewell — Come hither to me.

[*The King retires to a couch.*]

1 LORD. O my sweet lord, that you will stay behind us !

PAR. 'Tis not his fault ; the spark —

2 LORD. O, 'tis brave wars !

PAR. Most admirable : I have seen those wars.

BER. I am commanded here, and kept 'a coil with ;

Too young, and the next year, and 'tis too early.

PAR. An thy mind stand to it, boy, steal away bravely.

BER. I shall stay here the forehorse to a smock,
Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry,
Till honor be bought up, and no sword worn,
But one to dance with !⁴ By heaven, I'll steal away.

* *That same may cry you loud :* So, in *Tristram and Cressida* :

" — same with her lord ! O yes,

" Cries, This is he." STEEVENS.

³ — *beware of being captives,*

Before you serve.] The word *serve* is equivocal ; the sense is, *Be not captives before you serve in the war. Be not captives before you are soldiers.* JOHNSON.

⁴ — *and no sword worn,*

But one to dance with !] It should be remembered that in Shakespeare's time it was usual for gentlemen to dance with swords

1 LORD. There's honour in the theft.⁵

PAR. Commit, it count.

2 LORD. I am your accessary; and so farewell.

BER. I grow to you, and our parting is a tortured body.⁶

1 LORD. Farewell captain.

2 LORD. Sweet monsieur Parolles!

PAR. Noble heroes, my sword and yours are kin. Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good metals:— You shall find in the regiment of the Spinii, one captain Spurio, with his cicatrice,⁷ an emblem of

on.—Our author, who gave to all countries the manners of his own, has again alluded to this ancient custom, in *Antony and Cleopatra*: Act III. sc. ix:

“ ——— He, at Philippi kept

“ His sword, even like a dancer.”

See Mr. Stevens's note there. MALONE.

⁵ ——— I'll steal away. ———

There's honour in the theft.] So, in *Macbeth*:

“ There's warrant in that theft,

“ Which steals itself ———.” STEEVENS.

⁶ *I grow to you, and our parting is a tortured body.*] I read thus— *Our parting is the parting of a tortured body.* Our parting is as the disruption of limbs torn from each other. Repetition of a word is often the cause of mistakes: the eye glances on the wrong word, and the intermediate part of the sentence is omitted.

JOHNSON,

So, in *King Henry VIII.* Act II. sc. iii:

“ ——— it is a fullerance, pausing

“ As soul and body's severing.” STEEVENS.

As they grow together, the tearing them asunder was torturing a body. Johnson's amendment is unnecessary. M. MASON.

We two growing together, and having, as it were, but one body, (“like to a double cherry, seeming parted,”) our parting is a tortured body; i. e. cannot be effected but by a disruption of limbs which are now common to both. MALONE.

⁷ ——— with his cicatrice.] The old copy reads, — his cicatrice with. STEEVENS.

war here on his sinister cheek? it was this very sword entrench'd it; say to him, I live; and observe his reports for me

2 LORD. We shall, noble captain.

PAR. Mars dote on you for his novices! [*Exeunt, Lords*] What will you do?

BER. Stay; the king—— [*Seeing him rise.*]

PAR. Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords; you have restrain'd yourself within the list of too cold an adieu: be more expressive to them; for they wear themselves in the cap of the time, there do muster true gait, eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star;* and

It is surprising, none of the editors could see that a slight transposition was absolutely necessary here, when there is not common sense in the passage, as it stands without such transposition. Parolles only means, "You shall find one captain Spurio in the camp, with a scar on his left cheek, a mark of war that my sword gave him." THEOBALD.

* ——— *they wear themselves in the cap of the time, there do muster true gait, &c.*) The main obscurity of this passage arises from the mistake of a single letter. We should read, instead of, *do muster*, to *muster*.—*To wear themselves in the cap of the time*, signifies to be the foremost in the fashion: the figurative allusion is to the gallantry then in vogue, of wearing jewels, flowers, and their mistress's favours in their caps.—*There to muster true gait*, signifies to assemble together in the high road of the fashion. All the rest is intelligible and easy. WARBURTON.

I think this emendation cannot be said to give much light to the obscurity of the passage. Perhaps it might be read thus:—They *do muster* with the *true gait*, that is, they have the true military step. Every man has observed something peculiar in the strut of a soldier. JOHNSON.

Perhaps we should read—*master* true gait. To *master* any thing, is to learn it perfectly. So, in *King Henry IV.* P. 1:

"As if he *master'd* there a double spirit

"Of teaching and of learning——"

Again, in *King Henry V.*

"Between the promise of his greener days,

"And those he *masters* now."

though the devil lead the measure,⁹ such are to be follow'd: after them, and take a more dilated farewell.

BER. And I will do so.

PAR. Worthy fellows; and like to prove most finewy sword-men.

[*Exeunt BERTRAM and PAROLLES.*]

Enter LAFEU.

LAF. Pardon, my lord, [*Kneeling.*] for me and for my tidings.

KING. I'll see thee to stand up.

LAF. Then here's a man stands, that has brought⁸ his pardon. I would, you had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy; and That, at my bidding, you could so stand up.

KING. I would I had; so I had broke thy pate, And ask'd thee mercy for't.

In this last instance, however, both the quartos, viz. 1600, and 1608, read *myself*. STEEVENS.

The obscurity of the passage arises only from the fantastical language of a character like Parolles, whose affectation of wit urges his imagination from one allusion to another, without allowing time for his judgement to determine their congruity. The *cap of time* being the first image that occurs, *true gait*, manner of *rating*, *speaking*, &c. are the several ornaments which they muster, place, or arrange in *time's cap*. This is done *under the influence of the most received star*; that is, the person in the highest repute for setting the fashions:—and though the devil were to lead the measure or *dance of fashion*, such is their implicit submission, that even he must be followed. HENLEY.

⁹ ——— *lead the measure,*] i. e. the dance. So, in *Much ado about Nothing*, Beatrice says: "Tell him there is *measure* in every thing, and so dance out the answer." STEEVENS.

⁸ ——— *brought* —] Some modern editions read — *bought*.

MALONE.

LAF. Goodfaith, acrofs:³
But, my good lord, 'tis thus; Will you be cur'd
Of your infirmity?

KING. No.

LAF. O, will you eat
No grapes, my royal fox? yes, but you will,
My noble grapes, an if my royal fox
Could reach them:⁴ I have seen a medicine;⁵
That's able to breathe life into a stone;
Quicken a rock, and make you dance canary.⁶
With spritely fire and motion; whose simple touch⁷
Is powerful to arise king Pepin, nay,

³ — *acrofs*:] This word, as has been already observed, is used when any pass of wit miscarries. JOHNSON.

While chivalry was in vogue, breaking spears against a quintain was a favourite exercise. He who shivered the greatest number was esteemed the most adroit; but then it was to be performed exactly with the point, for if achieved by a side-stroke or *acrofs*, it showed unskillfulness, and disgraced the practitioner. Here, therefore, Lafau reflects on the King's wit as awkward and ineffectual, and, in the terms of play, good for nothing.

HOLT WHITE.

See *As you Like it*, A^d III. sc. iv. Vol. VIII. p. 281. STEEVENS.

⁴ — *yes, but you will*,

My noble grapes, &c.] The words—*My noble grapes*, seem to Dr. Waibarton and Sir T. Hanmer to stand so much in the way, that they have silently omitted them. They may be indeed rejected without great loss, but I believe they are Shakspeare's words. *You will eat*, says Lafau, *no grapes. Yes, but you will eat such noble grapes*, as I bring you, *if you could reach them*. JOHNSON.

⁵ — *medicine*,] is here put for a *she-physician*. HANMER.

⁶ — *and make you dance canary*,] Mr. Rich. Brnoine, in his comedy entitled, *The City Wit, or the Woman wears the Breeches*, A^d IV. sc. i. mentions this among other dances: "As for corantos, lavoltos, jigs, measures, pavins, brawls, galliards or *canaries*; I speak it not swellingly, but I subscribe to no man."

Dr. GREY,

⁷ — *whose simple touch, &c.*] Thus, *Ovid*, Amor. III. vii. 41:
Illius ad tactum Pylus juvenescere possit,

Tithonosque annis fortior esse suis. STEEVENS.

To give great Charlemain a pen in his hand,
And write ^a to her a love-line.

KING. What her is this?

LAF. Why, doctor she: My lord, there's one arriv'd,

If you will see her,—now, by my faith and honour,
If seriously I may convey my thoughts
In this my light deliverance, I have spoke
With one, that, in her sex, her years, profession,⁹
Wisdom, and constancy, hath amaz'd me more
'Than I dare blame my weakness:^a Will you see her,
(For that is her demand,) and know her business?
That done, laugh well at me.

KING. Now, good Lafeu,
Bring in the admiration; that we with thee
May spend our wonder too, or take off thine,
By wond'ring how thou took'st it.

LAF. Nay, I'll fit you,
And not be all day neither. [Exit LAFEU.]

KING. Thus he his special nothing ever prologues.

^a And write——] I believe a line preceding this has been lost.
MALONE.

⁹ — her years, profession,] By *profession* is meant her declaration of the end and purpose of her coming.

WARRBURTON.

^a Than I dare blame my weakness:] This is one of Shakspeare's perplexed expressions. "To acknowledge how much she has astonished me, would be to acknowledge a weakness; and this I am unwilling to do." STEEVENS.

Lafeu's meaning appears to me to be this:—"That the amazement she excited in him was so great, that he could not impute it merely to his own weakness, but to the wonderful qualities of the object that occasioned it." M. MASON.

Re-enter LAFEU, with HELENA.

LAF. Nay, come your ways.

KING. This haste hath wings indeed.

LAF. Nay, come your ways;³

This is his majesty, say your mind to him:

A traitor you do look like; but such traitors

His majesty seldom fears: I am Cressid's uncle,⁴

That dare leave two together; fare you well.

[*Exit.*

KING. Now, fair one, does your business follow us?

HEL. Ay, my good lord. Gerard de Narbon was My father; in what he did profess, well found.⁵

KING. I knew him.

HEL. The rather will I spare my praises towards him;

Knowing him, is enough. On his bed of death

Many receipts he gave me; chiefly one,

Which, as the dearest issue of his practice,

And of his old experience the only darling,

He bad me store up, as a triple eye,⁶

Safer than mine own two, more dear; I have so;

And, hearing your high majesty is touch'd

³ — *come your ways*;] This vulgarism is also put into the mouth of *Polonius*. See *Hamlet*, Act I. sc. iii.

STEEVENS.

⁴ — *Cressid's uncle*,] I am like *Pandarus*. See *Troilus and Cressida*. JOHNSON.

⁵ — *well found*.] i. e. of known, acknowledged, excellence.

STEEVENS.

⁶ — *a triple eye*,] i. e. a *third eye*. STEEVENS.

With that malignant cause wherein the honour
Of my dear father's gift stands chief in power,⁷
I come to tender it, and my appliance,
With all bound humbleness.

KING. We thank you, maiden;
But may not be so credulous of cure,—
When our most learned doctors leave us; and
The congregated college have concluded
That labouring art can never ransom nature
From her inaidable estate,—I say we must not
So stain our judgement, or corrupt our hope,
To prostitute our past-cure malady
To empiricks; or to dissever so
Our great self and our credit, to esteem
A senseless help, when help past sense we deem.

HEL. My duty then shall pay me for my pains:
I will no more enforce mine office on you;
Humbly entreating from your royal thoughts
A modest one, to bear me back again.

KING. I cannot give thee less, to be call'd grateful:
Thou thought'st to help me; and such thanks I
give.

As one near death to those that wish him live;
But, what at full I know, thou know'st no part;
I knowing all my peril, thou no art.

HEL. What I can do, can do no hurt to try,
Since you set up your rest 'gainst remedy;
He that of greatest works is finisher,
Oft does them by the weakest minister:

⁷ ————— wherein the honour
Of my dear father's gift stands chief in power,] Perhaps we may
better read;

————— wherein the power
Of my dear father's gift stands chief in honour.

So holy writ in babes hath judgement shown,
When judges have been babes. * Great floods have
flown

From simple sources; and great seas have dried,
When miracles have by the greatest been denied. †
Oft expectation fails, and most oft there
Where most it promises; and oft it hits,
Where hope is coldest, and despair most fits.

* *So holy writ in babes hath judgement shown,*

When judges have been babes.] The allusion is to St. Matthew's Gospel, xi. 25. "O father, lord of heaven and earth, I thank thee, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and revealed them unto babes." See also 1 Cor. i. 27. "but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty." MALONE.

† *When miracles have by the greatest been denied.*] I do not see the import or connection of this line. As the next line stands without a correspondent rhyme, I suspect that something has been lost. JOHNSON.

I point the passage thus; and then I see no reason to complain of want of connection:

When judges have been babes. Great floods, &c.

When miracles have by the greatest been denied.

Shakspeare, after alluding to the production of water from a rock, and the drying up of the Red Sea, says, that miracles had been denied by the GREATEST; or in other words, that the ELDERS of ISRAEL (who just before, in reference to another text, were styled judges) had notwithstanding these miracles, wrought for their own preservation, refused that compliance they ought to have yielded. See the Book of Exodus, and particularly Ch. xvii. 5, 6, &c.

HENLEY.

So holy writ, &c. alludes to Daniel's judging, when "a young youth," the two Elders in the story of *Sufannah*. *Great floods,* i. e. when Moses smote the rock in Horeb, Exod. xvii.

— *great seas have dry'd*

When miracles have by the greatest been deny'd.

Dr. Johnson did not see the import or connection of this line. It certainly refers to the children of Israel passing the Red Sea, when miracles had been denied, or not hearkened to, by Pharaoh.

HOLT WHITE.

* — *and despair most fits.*] The old copy reads — *shifts*. The correction was made by Mr. Pope. MALONE.

KING. I must not hear thee; fare thee well, kind maid;

Thy pains, not us'd, must by thyself be paid:
Proffers, not took, reap thanks for their reward.

HEL. Inspired merit so by breath is barr'd:
It is not so with him that all things knows,
As 'tis with us that square our guesses by shows:
But most it is presumption in us, when
The help of heaven we count the act of men.
Dear sir, to my endeavours give consent;
Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.

I am not an impostor, that proclaim
Myself against the level of mine aim;²
But know I think, and think I know most sure,
My art is not past power, nor you past cure.

KING. Art thou so confident? Within what space
Hop'st thou my cure?

HEL. The greatest grace lending grace,³
Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring
Their fiery torcher his diurnal ring;
Ere twice in murk and occidental damp
Moist Hesperus hath quench'd his sleepy lamp;³

² *Myself against the level of mine aim;*] i. e. pretend to greater things than befits the mediocrity of my condition.

WARBURTON.

I rather think that she means to say, — *I am not an impostor that proclaim one thing and design another, that proclaim a cure and aim at a fraud;* I think what I speak. JOHNSON.

³ *The greatest grace lending grace,*] I should have thought the repetition of *grace* to have been superfluous, if the *grace of grace* had not occurred in the speech with which the tragedy of *Macbeth* concludes. STEEVENS.

The former *grace* in this passage, and the latter in *Macbeth*, evidently signify *divine grace*. HENLEY.

³ — his *sleepy lamp*;] Old copy — her *sleepy lamp*. Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

Or four and twenty times the pilot's glaſs
Hath told the thieviſh minutes how they paſs;
What is infirm your ſound parts ſhall fly,
Health ſhall live free, and ſickneſs freely die.

KING. Upon thy certainty and confidence,
What dar'ſt thou venture?

HEL. Tax of impudence, —
A ſtrumpet's boldneſs, a divulged ſhame, —
Traduc'd by odious ballads; my maiden's name
Sear'd otherwiſe; no worſe of worſt extended,
With vileſt torture let my life be ended.⁴

⁴ ——— a divulged ſhame, —

Traduc'd by odious ballads; my maiden's name

Sear'd otherwiſe; no worſe of worſt extended,

With vileſt torture let my life be ended.] I would bear (ſays ſhe) the tax of impudence, which is the deſecration of a ſtrumpet; would endure a ſhame reſulting from my failure in what I have undertaken, and thence become the ſubject of odious ballads; let my maiden reputation be otherwiſe branded; and, no worſe of worſt extended, i. e. provided nothing worſe is offered to me, (meaning violation,) let my life be ended with the worſt of tortures. The poet for the ſake of rhyme has obſcured the ſenſe of the paſſage. The worſt that can befall a woman, being extended to me, ſeems to be the meaning of the laſt line. STEVENS.

Tax of impudence, that is, to be charged with having the boldneſs of a ſtrumpet; — *a divulged ſhame*; i. e. to be traduced by odious ballads: — *my maiden's name ſear'd otherwiſe*; i. e. to be ſigmatized as a prostitute: — *no worſe of worſt extended*; i. e. to be ſo deſamed that nothing ſeverer can be ſaid againſt thoſe who are moſt publickly reported to be infamous. Shakspeare has uſed the word *fear* and *extended* in *The Winter's Tale*, both in the ſame ſenſe as above:

“ ——— for calumny will fear

“ Virtue itſelf! ” —

And “ The report of her is *extended* more than can be thought.”

HENLEY.

The old copy reads, not *no*, but *we*, probably an error for *say*, or *tho*. I would wiſh to read and point the latter part of the paſſage thus:

——— my maiden's name

Sear'd otherwiſe; nay, worſt of worſt, extended

With vileſt torture, let my life be ended.

KING. Methinks, in thee some blessed spirit doth speak;

His powerful sound, within an organ weak: ⁶

And what impossibility would slay

In common sense, sense saves another way. ⁶

Thy life is dear; for all, that life can rate

Worth name of life, in thee hath estimate; ⁷

Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all ⁸

That happiness and prime ⁹ can happy call:

i. e. Let me be otherwise branded; — and (what is the worst of worst, the consummation of misery,) my body being extended on the rack by the most cruel torture, let my life pay the forfeit of my presumption.

So, in *Daniel's Cleopatra*, 1594:

“ — the worst of worst of ills.”

No was introduced by the editor of the second folio.

Again, in *The Remedy of Love*, 4to. 1600:

“ If she be fat, then she is swollen, say,

“ If browne, then tawny as the Africk Moore;

“ If slender, leane, meagre and worne away,

“ If courtly, wanton, worst of worst before.” MALONE.

⁶ Methinks, in thee some blessed spirit doth speak;

His powerful sound, within an organ weak:] The verb, doth speak, in the first line, should be understood to be repeated in the construction of the second, thus:

His powerful sound speaks within a weak organ. HEATH.

This, in my opinion, is a very just and happy explanation.

STEEVENS.

⁶ And what impossibility would slay

In common sense, sense saves another way.] i. e. and that which, if I trusted to my reason, I should think impossible, I yet, perceiving thee to be actuated by some blessed spirit, think thee capable of effecting. MALONE.

⁷ — in thee hath estimate;] May be counted among the gifts enjoyed by thee. JOHNSON.

⁸ Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all —] The old copy omits virtue. It was supplied by Dr. Warburton, to remedy a defect in the measure. STEEVENS.

⁹ — prime —] Youth; the spring or morning of life. JOHNSON. Should we not read — pride? Dr. Johnson explains prime to mean youth; and indeed I do not see any other plausible interpre-

Thou this to hazard, needs must intimate
Skill infinite, or monstrous desperate.
Sweet practiser, thy physick I will try;
That ministers thine own death, if I die.

HEL. If I break time, or flinch in property *
Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die;
And well deserv'd: Not helping, death's my fee;
But, if I help, what do you promise me?

KING. Make thy demand.

HEL. But will you make it even?

KING. Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes of
heaven. †

tization that can be given of it. But how does that suit with the context? "You have all that is worth the name of life; youth, beauty, &c. all. That happiness and youth can happy call." — *Happiness and pride* may signify, I think, *the pride of happiness*; the proudest state of happiness. So, in *The Second Part of Henry IV.* Act iii. sc. i. *the voice and echo*, is put for *the voice of echo*, or, *the echoing voice*. TIERNEY.

I think, with Dr. Johnson, that *prime* is here used as a substantive, but that it means, that *sprightly vigour* which usually accompanies us in the prime of life. So, in Montaigne's *Essays*, translated by Florio, 1603, B. II. c. 6: "Many things seeme greater by imagination, than by effect. I have passed over a good part of my age in sound and perfect health. I say, not only sound, but blithe and wantonly-lustful. That state, full of lust, of *prime* and mirth, made me deeme the consideration of sicknesses so yrksome, that when I came to the experience of them, I have found their fits but weak." MALONE.

* — in property —] In *property* seems to be here used, with much laxity, for — in the due performance. In a subsequent passage it seems to mean either a thing possessed, or a subject discriminated by peculiar qualities:

"The *property* by what it is should go,

"Not by the title." MALONE.

† *Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes of heaven.*] The old copy reads:

———— my hopes of help. STEVENS.

The King could have but a very slight hope of help from her, scarce enough to swear by: and therefore Helen might suspect he

HEL. Then shalt thou give me, with thy kingly hand,

What husband in thy power I will command:
Exempted be from me the arrogance
To choose from forth the royal blood of France;
My low and humble name to propagate
With any branch or image of thy state: ⁴
But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know
Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

KING. Here is my hand; the premises observ'd,
Thy will by my performance shall be serv'd:
So make the choice of thy own time; for I,
Thy resolv'd patient, on thee still rely.
More should I question thee, and more I must;
Though, more to know, could not be more to trust;
From whence thou cam'st, how tended on,—But
rest
Unquestion'd welcome, and undoubted blest. —

meant to equivocate with her. Besides, observe, the greatest part of the scene is strictly in rhyme: and there is no shadow of reason why it should be interrupted here. I rather imagine the poet wrote:

By, by my sceptre, and my hopes of heaven. THIRLBY.

⁴ *With any branch or image of thy state:*] Shakspeare unquestionably wrote *image*, grafting. *Impe*, a graft, or slip, or sucker: by which she means one of the sons of France, Caxton calls our Prince Arthur, *that noble impe of fame.* WARBURTON.

Image is surely the true reading, and may mean any representative of thine; i. e. any one who resembles you as being related to your family, or as a prince reflects any part of your state and majesty. There is no such word as *image*; and, as Mr. M. Mason observes, were such a one coined, it would mean nothing but the art of grafting. Mr. Henley adds, that *branch* refers to the collateral descendants of the royal blood, and *image* to the direct and immediate line. STEEVENS.

Our author again uses the word *image* in the same sense as here, in his *Rape of Lucrece*:

“O, from thy cheeks my *image* thou hast torn.”

MALONE,

Give me some help here, ho! — If thou proceed
As high as word, my deed shall match thy deed.

[*Flourish. Exit.*]

S C E N E II.

Rouffillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

Enter Countess and Clown.

COUNT. Come on, fir; I shall now put you to the height of your breeding.

CLO. I will show myself highly fed, and lowly taught: I know my business is but to the court.

COUNT. To the court! why, what place make you special, when you put off that with such contempt? But to the court!

CLO. Truly, madam, if God have lent a man any manners, he may easily put it off at court: he that cannot make a leg, put off's cap, kiss his hand, and say nothing, has neither leg, hands, lip, nor cap; and, indeed, such a fellow, to say precisely, were not for the court: but, for me, I have an answer will serve all men.

COUNT. Marry, that's a bountiful answer, that fits all questions.

CLO. It is like a barber's chair, that fits all buttocks; ¹ the pin-buttock, the quatch-buttock, the brawn-buttock, or any buttock.

¹ *It is like a barber's chair, &c.*] This expression is proverbial. See Ray's *Proverbs*.

So, in *Mere Fools Yet*, by R. S. a collection of Epigrams. 4to. 1610.

COUNT. Will your answer serve fit to all questions?

CLO. As fit as ten groats is for the hand of an attorney, as your French crown for your taffata punk, as Tib's ruff for Tom's fore-finger, ⁶ as

- "Moreover fassin futes he doth compare
 "Unto the service of a *barber's chayre*;
 "As fit for every Jacke and journeyman,
 "As for a knight or worthy gentleman." STEEVENS.

⁶ — Tib's ruff for Tom's fore-finger,] *Tom* is the man, and by *Tib* we are to understand the woman, and therefore, more properly we might read — *Tom's ruff for*, &c. The allusion is to an ancient practice of marrying with a ruff ring, as well in other countries as in England. Brialmont, in his *Antiquities of Paris*, mentions it as a kind of espousal used in France, by such persons as meant to live together in a state of concubinage: but in England it was scarce ever practised except by designing men, for the purpose of corrupting those young women to whom they pretended love.

Richard Poore, bishop of Salisbury, in his *Constitutions*, anni, 1217, forbids the putting of *ruff rings*, or any the like matter, on women's fingers, in order to the debauching them more readily; and he insinuates as the reason of the prohibition, that there were some people weak enough to believe, that what was thus done in jest, was a real marriage.

But notwithstanding this censure on it, the practice was not abolished; for it is alluded to in a song in a play written by Sir William D'Avenant, called *The Rivals*:

- "I'll crown thee with a garland of straw then,
 "And I'll marry thee with a *ruff ring*."

which song, by the way, was first sung by Miss Davis; she acted the part of Celania in the play; and King Charles II. upon hearing it, was so pleased with her voice and action, that he took her from the stage, and made her his mistress.

Again, in the song called *The Winchester Wedding*, in D'Urfey's *Pills to purge Melancholy*, Vol. I. p. 276:

- "Pert Strephon was kind to Betty,
 "And blithe as a bird in the spring;
 "And Tommy was so to Katy,
 "And wedded her with a *ruff ring*." SIR J. HAWKINS.

Tib and *Tom*, in plain English, I believe, stand for *wanton* and *regret*. So, in *Churchyard's Choice*:

- "Tishe, that's a toye; let *Tomkin* talke of *Tibb*."

a pancake for Shrove-tuesday, a morris for May-day, as the nail to his hole, the cuckold to his horn, as a scolding quean to a wrangling knave, as the nun's lip to the friar's mouth; pay, as the pudding to his skin.

Again, in the *Queenes Majesties Entertainment in Suffolk and Norfolk*, &c. by Tho. Churchyard, 4to. no date:

Cupid.

"And doth not *Jove* and *Mars* bear sway? Tush, that is true."

Philosopher.

"Then put in *Tom* and *Tibbe*, and all beares sway as much as you." STEVENS.

An anonymous writer, [Mr. Ritson,] with some probability, supposes that this is one of those covert allusions in which Shakspere frequently indulges himself. The following lines of *Cleiveland* on an *Hermaphrodite* seem to countenance the supposition:

"Nay, those which modesty can mean,

"But dare not speak, are Epicene.

"That gamester needs must overcome,

"That can play both with *Tib* and *Tom*."

Sir John Hawkins would read—"as *Tom's* ruth for *Tib's* forefinger." But if this were the author's meaning, it would be necessary to alter still farther, and to read—As *Tom's* ruth for *Tib's* fourth finger. MALONE.

At the game of *Gleek*, the ace was called *Tib*, and the knave *Tom*; and this is the proper explanation of the lines cited from *Cleiveland*. The practice of marrying with a *ruth* ring mentioned by Sir John Hawkins is very questionable, and it might be difficult to find any authority in support of this opinion. DOUCE.

Sir John Hawkins's alteration is unnecessary. It was the practice in former times for the woman to give the man a ring as well as for the man to give her one. So, in the last scene of *Twelfth Night*, the priest giving an account of *Olivia's* marriage, says, it was

"Attested by the holy clove of lips,

"Strengthen'd by *enterchaugement* of your rings."

M. MASON.

I believe what many of us have asserted respecting the exchange of rings in the marriage ceremony, is only true of the marriage contract, in which such a practice undoubtedly prevailed.

STEVENS.

COUNT. Have you, I say, an answer of such fitness for all questions?

CLO. From below your duke, to beneath your constable, it will fit any question.

COUNT. It must be an answer of most monstrous size, that must fit all demands.

CLO. But a trifle neither, in good faith, if the learned should speak truth of it: here it is, and all that belongs to't: Ask me, if I am a courtier; it shall do you no harm to learn.

COUNT. To be young again,⁷ if we could: — I will be fool in question, hoping to be the wiser by your answer. I pray you, sir, are you a courtier?

CLO. O Lord, sir,⁸ — There's a simple putting off; — more, more, a hundred of them.

COUNT. Sir, I am a poor friend of yours, that loves you.

CLO. O Lord, sir,—Thick, thick, spare not me.

COUNT. I think, sir, you can eat none of this homely meat.

CLO. O Lord, sir, — Nay, put me to't, I warrant you.

COUNT. You were lately whipp'd, sir, I think.

CLO. O Lord, sir, — Spare not me.

⁷ *To be young again,*] The lady censures her own levity in trifling with her jester, as a ridiculous attempt to return back to youth. JOHNSON.

⁸ *O Lord, sir,*] A ridicule on that foolish expletive of speech then in vogue at court. WARBURTON.

Thus Clove and Orange, in *Every Man out of his Humour*:

"You conceive me, sir? — O Lord, sir!"

Cleiveland, in one of his songs, makes his Gentleman —

"Answer, O Lord, sir! and talk *play-book* oaths."

FARMER.

COUNT. Do you cry, *O Lord, sir*, at your whipping, and *spare not me*? indeed, your *O Lord, sir*, is very frequent to your whipping; you would answer very well to a whipping, if you were but bound to't.

CLO. I ne'er had worse luck in my life, in my—
O Lord, Sir: I see, things may serve long, but not serve ever.

COUNT. I play the noble housewife with the time, to entertain it so merrily with a fool.

CLO. *O Lord, sir*,—Why, there't serves well again.

COUNT. An end, *sir*, to your business: Give Helen this,

And urge her to a present answer back:
Commend me to my kinsmen, and my son;
This is not much.

CLO. Not much commendation to them.

COUNT. Not much employment for you: You understand me?

CLO. Most fruitfully; I am there before my legs.

COUNT. Haste you again. [Exit severally,

SCENE III.

Paris. *A Room in the King's Palace.*

Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.

LAF. They say, miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern⁹ and

⁹ — modern —] i. e. common, ordinary. So, in *As you Like it*:

"Full of wise saws, and modern instances."

Again, in another play: [*All's well*, &c. Act V. sc. iii.]¹⁰ — with her modern grace—." MALONE.

familiar things, supernatural and causeless. Hence is it, that we make trifles of terrors; ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge,* when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear.

PAR. Why, 'tis the rarest argument of wonder, that hath shot out in our latter times.

BER. And so 'tis.

LAF. To be relinquish'd of the artists,——

PAR. So I say; both of Galen and Paracelsus.

LAF. Of all the learned and authentick fellows,——

* —— ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge,] To ensconce literally signifies to secure as in a fort. So, in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*: “I will ensconce me behind the arras.” Into (a frequent practice with old writers) is used for in. STEEVENS.

—— unknown fear.] Fear is here an object of fear. JOHNSON.

¶ Par. So I say; both of Galen and Paracelsus.

Laf. Of all the learned and authentick fellows,] Shakspeare as I have often observed, never throws out his words at random. Paracelsus, though no better than an ignorant and knavish enthusiast, was at this time in such vogue, even amongst the learned, that he had almost jostled Galen and the ancients out of credit. On this account learned is applied to Galen, and authentick or fashionable to Paracelsus. Saucy, in his *Confession Catholique*, p. 301. Ed. Col. 1720, is made to say: “Je trouve la Riviere premier medecin, de meilleure humeur que ces gens-là. Il est bon Galeuiste, et tres-bon Paracelsiste. Il dit que la doctrine de Galien est honorable, et non méprisable pour la pathologie, et profitable pour les boutiques. L'autre, pourvu que ce soit de vrais préceptes de Paracelse, est bonne à suivre pour la vérité, pour la subtilité, pour l'épargne; en somme pour la Thérapeutique. WARBURTON.

As the whole merriment of this scene consists in the pretensions of Parolles to knowledge and sentiment which he has not, I believe here are two passages in which the words and sense are bestowed upon him by the copies, which the author gave to Lafcu. I read this passage thus:

Laf. To be relinquish'd of the artists——

Par. So I say.

Laf. Both of Galen and Paracelsus, of all the learned and authentick fellows——

Par. Right, so I say. JOHNSON.

PAR. Right, so I day.

LAF. That gave him out incurable,—

PAR. Why, there 'tis; so say I too.

LAF. Not to be help'd,—

PAR. Right; as 'twere, a man assur'd of an—

LAF. Uncertain life, and sure death.

PAR. Just, you say well; so would I have said.

LAF. I may truly say, it is a novelty to the world.

PAR. It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in,—What do you call there?⁴—

LAF. A showing of a heavenly effect in an earthly actor.⁵

PAR. That's it I would have said; the very same.

LAF. Why, your dolphin is not lustier:⁶ 'fore me I speak in respect—

— authentic fellows,] The phrase of the diploma is, *authentice licentiatius*. MUSGRAVE.

The epithet *authentick* was in our author's time particularly applied to the learned. So, in Drayton's *Owle*, 4to. 1604 :

"For which those grave and still *authentick* sages,

"Which fought for knowledge in those golden ages,

"From whom we hold the science that we have," &c.

MALONE.

⁴ Par. *It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, &c.*] We should read, I think: *It is indeed, if you will have it a showing—you shall read it in what do you call there.*— TYRWHITT.

Does not, *if you will have it in showing*, signify in a demonstration or statement of the case? HENLEY.

⁵ *A showing of a heavenly effect, &c.*] The title of some pamphlet here ridiculed. WARBURTON.

⁶ *Why, your dolphin is not lustier:]* By *dolphin* is meant the *dauphin*, the heir apparent, and the hope of the crown of France. His title is so translated in all the old books. STEEVENS.

PAR. Nay, 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it; and he is of a most facinorous spirit,⁷ that will not acknowledge it to be the——

LAF. Very hand of heaven.

PAR. Ay, so I say.

LAF. In a most weak ——

PAR. And debile minister, great power, great transcendence: which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made, than alone the recovery of the king,⁸ as to be——

LAF. Generally thankful.

What Mr. Steevens observes is certainly true; and yet the additional word *your* induces me to think that by *dolphin* in the passage before us the fish so called was meant. Thus in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

“ —— His delights

“ Were *dolphin*-like; they show'd his back above

“ The element he liv'd in.”

Lafeu, who is an old courtier, if he had meant the king's son, would surely have said——“ *the dolphin*.” I use the old spelling.

MALONE.

In the colloquial language of Shakspeare's time *your* was frequently employed as it is in this passage: So, in *Hamlet*, the Grave-digger observes, that “ *your* water is a fore decayer of *your* whorison dead body.” Again, in *As you Like it*: “ *Your* if is the only peace-maker.” STEEVENS.

⁷ —— facinorous spirit, [This word is used in Heywood's *English Traveller*, 1633:

“ And magnified for high facinorous deeds.”

Facinorous is wicked. The old copy spells the word *facinerious*; but as Parolles is not designed for a verbal blunderer, I have adhered to the common spelling. STEEVENS.

⁸ —— which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made, &c.] I believe Parolles has again usurped words and sense to which he has no right; and I read this passage thus:

Laf. In a most weak and debile minister, great power, great transcendence; which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made than the mere recovery of the king.

PAR. As to be——

Laf. Generally thankful. JOHNSON.

Enter King, HELENA, and Attendants.

PAR. I would have said; you say well: Here comes the king.

LAF. Lustick, as the Dutchman says:⁹ I'll like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head: Why, he's able to lead her a coranto.

PAR. *Mort du Vinaigre!* Is not this Helen?

LAF. 'Fore God, I think so.

KING. Go, call before me all the lords in court.—

[Exit an Attendant.]

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side;
And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd sense
Thou hast repeal'd, a second time receive
The confirmation of my promis'd gift,
Which but attends thy naming.

When the parts are written out for players, the names of the characters which they are to represent are never set down; but only the last words of the preceding speech which belongs to their partner in the scene. If the plays of Shakspeare were printed (as there is good reason to suspect) from these piece-meal transcripts, how easily may the mistake be accounted for, which Dr. Johnson has judiciously strove to remedy? STEEVENS.

⁹ Lustick, as the Dutchman says:] *Lustigh* is the Dutch word for lusty, cheerful, pleasant. It is used in *Han's Beer-pot's Invisible Comedy*, 1618:

" ——— can walk a mile or two

" As *lustique* as a boor —."

Again in *The Witches of Lancashire*, by Heywood and Broome, 1634:

" What all *lustick*, all frolicksome!"

The burden also of one of our ancient *Medleys* is

" Hey *lusticks*. STEEVENS.

In the narrative of the cruelties committed by the Dutch at Amboyna, in 1622, it is said, that after a night spent in prayer, &c. by some of the prisoners, "the Dutch that guarded them offered them wine, bidding them drink *lustick*, and drive away the sorrow, according to the custom of their own nation." REED.

Enter several Lords.

Fair maid, send forth thine eye : this youthful parcel
Of noble bachelors stand at my bestowing,
O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice²
I have to use : thy frank election make ;
Thou hast power to choose, and they none to for-
sake.

HEL. To each of you one fair and virtuous mis-
tress

Fall, when love please!—marry, to each but one!³

LAF. I'd give bay Curtal,⁴ and his furniture,
My mouth no more were broken⁵ than these boys',
And writ as little beard.

KING. Peruse them well :
Not one of those, but had a noble father.

² *O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice.*—] They were his *wards* as well as his subjects. HENLEY.

³ — marry, to each, but one!] I cannot understand this passage in any other sense, than as a ludicrous exclamation, in consequence of Helena's wish of one fair and virtuous mistress to each of the lords. If that be so, it cannot belong to Helena ; and might properly enough be given to Parolles. TYRWHITT.

Tyrwhitt's observations on this passage are not conceived with his usual sagacity. He mistakes the import of the words *but one*, which does not mean *one only*, but *except one*.

Helena wishes a fair and virtuous mistress to each of the young lords who were present, one only excepted ; and the person excepted is Bertram, whose mistress she hoped she herself should be ; and she makes the exception out of modesty : for otherwise the description of a fair and virtuous mistress would have extended to herself. M. MASON.

⁴ — bay Curtal,] i. e. a bay, dock'd horse. STEEVENS.

⁵ *My mouth no more were broken*—] A *broken mouth* is a mouth which has lost part of its teeth. JOHNSON.

HEL. Gentlemen.

Heaven hath, through me, restor'd the king to health.

ALL. We understand it, and thank heaven for you.

HEL. I am a simple maid; and therein wealthiest,
That, I protest, I simply, am a maid:—
Please it your majesty, I have done already:
The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me,
We blush, that thou should'st choose; but be refus'd,
Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever;
*We'll ne'er come there again.*⁶

KING. Make choice; and, see,
Who shuns thy love, shuns all his love in me.

HEL. Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly;
And to imperial Love, that god most high,
Do my sighs stream.—Sir, will you hear my suit?

1 LORD. And grant it.

HEL. Thanks, sir; all the rest is mute.*

⁶ *We blush, that thou should'st choose; but, be refus'd.*

Let the white death, &c.] In the original copy, these lines are pointed thus:

*We blush that thou should'st choose; but be refus'd;
Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever, &c.*

This punctuation has been adopted in all subsequent editions. The present regulation of the text appears to me to afford a much clearer sense. "My blushes, (says Helen,) thus whisper me. We blush that thou should'st have the nomination of thy husband. However, choose him at thy peril. But, if thou be refused, let thy cheeks be for ever pale; we will never revisit them again."

The blushes which are here personified, could not be supposed to know that Helena would be refused, as, according to the former punctuation, they appear to do; and, even if the poet had meant this, he would surely have written "—and be refused," not "—but be refused."

Be refus'd means the same as—"thou being refus'd,"—or, "be thou refused." MALONE.

The white death is the chlorosis. JOHNSON.

LAF. I had rather be in this choice, than throw
ames-ace⁷ for my life.

HEL. The honour, sir, that flames in your fair
eyes,

Before I speak, too threateningly replies:
Love make your fortunes twenty times above,
Her that so wishes, and her humble love!

2 LORD. No better, if you please.

HEL. My wish receive,
Which great love grant! and so I take my leave.

LAF. Do all they deny her⁸? An they were sons
of mine, I'd have them whipp'd; or I would send
them to the Turk, to make eunuchs of.

HEL. Be not afraid [*To a Lord.*] that I your hand
should take;

I'll never do you wrong for your own sake:
Blessing upon your vows! and in your bed
Find fairer fortune, if you ever wed!

LAF. These boys are boys of ice, they'll none
have her: sure, they are bastards to the English;
the French ne'er got them.

HEL. You are too young, too happy, and too good,
To make yourself a son out of my blood.

4 LORD. Fair one, I think not so.

⁷ ——— *all the rest is mute.*] i. e. I have no more to say to you.
So, Hamlet: "—— *the rest is silence.*" STEEVENS.

⁸ ——— *ames-ace*—] i. e. the lowest chance of the dice. So, in
The Ordinary, by Cartwright: "—— may at my last stake, &c.,
throw *ames-aces* thrice together." STEEVENS.

⁹ Laf. *Do all they deny her?*] None of them have yet denied
her, or deny her afterwards but Bertram. The scene must be so
regulated that Lafau and Parolles talk at a distance, where they
may see what passes between Helena, and the lords, but not hear
it, so that they know not by whom the refusal is made.

JOHNSON.

LAF. There's one grape yet.*—I am sure, thy father drank wine — But if thou be'st not an afs, I am a youth of fourteen; I have known thee already.

HEL. I dare not say, I take you ; [*To BERTRAM.*]
but I give

Me, and my service, ever whilst I live,
Into your guiding power.—This is the man.

KING. Why then, young Bertram, take her, she's thy wife.

BER. My wife, my liege ? I shall beseech your highness,

In such a business give me leave to use
The help of mine own eyes.

KING. Know'st thou not, Bertram,
What she has done for me ?

BER. Yes, my good lord;
But never hope to know why I should marry her.

KING. Thou know'st, she has rais'd me from my sickly bed.

BER. But follows it, my lord, to bring me down
Must answer for your raising ? I know her well ;
She had her breeding at my father's charge :
A poor physician's daughter my wife !—Disdain
Rather corrupt me ever !

* *There's one grape yet.* This speech the three last editors [Theobald, Hanmer, and Warburton,] have perplexed themselves by dividing between Lafcu and Parolles, without any authority of copies, or any improvement of sense. I have restored the old reading, and should have thought no explanation necessary, but that Mr. Theobald apparently misunderstood it.

Old Lafcu having, upon the supposition that the lady was refused, reproached the young lords as *boys of ice*, throwing his eyes on Bertram who remained, cries out, *There is one yet into whom his father put good blood—but I have known thee long enough to know thee, for an afs.* JOHNSON.

KING. 'Tis only title³ thou disdain'st in her, the
which

I can build up, Strange is it, that our bloods,
Of colour, weight, and heat,⁴ pour'd all together,
Would quite confound distinction, yet stand off
In differences so mighty : If she be
All that is virtuous, (save what thou dislike'st,
A poor physician's daughter,) thou dislike'st
Of virtue for the name ; but do not so :
From lowest place when virtuous things proceed,⁵
'The place is dignified by the doer's deed :
Where great additions swell,⁶ and virtue none,
It is a dropp'd honour : good alone
Is good, without a name ; villainy is so :⁷
The property by what it is should go,

³ 'Tis only title—] i. e. the want of title. MALONE.

⁴ Of colour, weight, and heat,] That is, which are of the same colour, weight, &c. MALONE.

⁵ From lowest place when virtuous things proceed.] The old copy has—whence. This easy correction [when] was preferred by Dr. Thirlby. THEOBALD.

⁶ Where great additions swell,] Additions are the titles and descriptions by which men are distinguished from each other.

MALONE.

⁷ ——— good alone

Is good, without a name; villainy is so:] Shakspeare may mean, that external circumstances have no power over the real nature of things. Good alone (i. e. by itself) without a name (i. e. without the addition of titles) is good. Villainy is so (i. e. is itself.) Either of them is what its name implies :

"The property by what it is should go,

"Not by the title——."

"Let's write good angel on the devil's horn,

"'Tis not the devil's crest." Measure for Measure.

STEEVENS.

Steevens's last interpretation of this passage is very near being right; but I think it should be pointed thus:

—— good alone

Is good;—without a name, villainy is so.

Meaning that good is good without any addition, and villainy

Not by the title.¹ She is young, wise, fair;
 In these to nature she's immediate heir;²
 And these breed honour: that is honour's scorn,
 Which challenges itself as honour's born,
 And is not like the fire:³ Honours best thrive,⁴
 When rather from our acts we them derive
 Than our fore-goers: the mere word's a slave,
 Debauch'd on every tomb; on every grave,
 A lying trophy; and as oft is dumb,
 Where dust, and damn'd oblivion, is the tomb

would still be vileness, though we had no such name to distinguish it by. A similar expression occurs in *Macbeth* :

" Though all things foul would wear the brows of grace,
 " Yet grace must still look so."

That is, grace would still be grace, as vileness would still be vileness. M. MALONE.

The meaning is,—Good is good, independent on any worldly distinction or title: so vileness is vile, in whatever state it may appear. MALONE.

¹ *In these to nature she's immediate heir;*] To be *immediate heir* is to inherit without any intervening transmitter: thus she inherits beauty *immediately* from nature, but honour is transmitted by ancestors. JOHNSON.

² ——— that is honour's scorn,

Which challenges itself as honour's born,

And is not like the fire :] Perhaps we might read more elegantly—
 as *honour-born*,—honourably descended: the child of honour.

MALONE.

Honour's born, is the child of honour. *Born* is here used, as *hair* still is in the North. HENLEY.

³ *And is not like the fire* : *Honours best thrive*, &c.] The first folio omits—*best*; but the second folio supplies it, at it is necessary to enforce the sense of the passage, and complete its measure.

STEVENS.

The modern editors read—*Honours best thrive*; in which they have followed the editor of the second folio, who introduced the word *best* unnecessarily; not observing that *fire* was used by our author, like *fire*, *hour*, &c. as a dissyllable. MALONE.

Where is an example of *fire*, used as a dissyllable, to be found? *Fire* and *hour* were anciently written *fir* and *houer*; and consequently the concurring vowels could be separated in pronunciation.

STEVENS.

Of honour'd bones indeed. What should be said?
If thou canst like this creature as a maid,
I can create the rest: virtue, and she,
Is her own dower; honour, and wealth, from me.

BER. I cannot love her, nor will strive to do't.

KING. Thou wrong'st thyself, if thou should'st
strive to choose.

HEL. That you are well restor'd, my lord, I am glad;
Let the rest go.

KING. My honour's at the stake; which to defeat,
I must produce my power:³ Here, take her hand,
Proud scornful boy, unworthy, this good gift;
That dost in vile misprision shackle up
My love, and her desert; that canst not dream,
We, poizing us in her defective scale,
Shall weigh thee, to the beam;⁴ that wilt not know,

³ *My honour's at the stake; which to defeat,*

I must produce my power:] The poor King of France is again made a mau of Gotham, by our unmerciful editors. For he is not to make use of his authority to *defeat*, but to *defend*, his honour. THEOBALD.

Had Mr. Theobald been aware that the implication or clause of the sentence (as the grammarians say) served for the antecedent "*Which danger to defeat,*" there had been no need of his wit or his alteration. FARMER.

Notwithstanding Mr. Theobald's pert censure of former editors for retaining the word *defeat*, I should be glad to see it restored again, as I am persuaded it is the true reading. The French verb *désaire* (from whence our *defeat*) signifies to free, to disembarass, as well as to destroy. *Désaire un naut*, is to untie a knot; and in this sense, I apprehend, *defeat* is here used. It may be observed, that our verb *undo* has the same varieties of signification; and I suppose even Mr. Theobald would not have been much puzzled to find the sense of this passage, if it had been written;—*My honour's at the stake, which to undo I must produce my power.*

TYRWHITT.

⁴ ——— that canst not dream,

We, poizing us in her defective scale;

Shall weigh thee to the beam:] That canst not understand, that

It is in us to plant thine honour, where
 We please to have it grow: Check thy contempt:
 Obey our will, which travails in thy good:
 Believe not thy disdain, but presently
 Do thine own fortunes that obedient right,
 Which both thy duty owes, and our power claims;
 Or I will throw thee from my care for ever,
 Into the staggers,⁵ and the careless lapse
 Of youth and ignorance; both my revenge and hate,
 Looking upon thee in the name of justice,
 Without all terms of pity: Speak; thine answer.

BER. Pardon, my gracious lord; for I submit
 My fancy to your eyes: When I consider,
 What great creation, and what dole of honour,
 Flies were you bid it, I find that she, which late
 Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now
 The praised of the king; who, so ennobled,
 Is, as 'twere, born so.

KING. Take her by the hand,
 And tell her, she is thine: to whom I promise
 A counterpoize; if not to thy estate,
 A balance more replete.

BER. I take her hand.

KING. Good fortune, and the favour of the king,

if you and this maiden should be weighed together, and our royal favours should be thrown into her scale, (which you esteem so light,) we would make that in which you should be placed, to strike the beam. MALONE.

⁵ *Into the staggers.*] One species of the *staggers*, or the *horse's apoplexy*, is a raging impatience which makes the animal dash himself with destructive violence against posts or walls. To this the allusion, I suppose, is made. JOHNSON.

Shakspeare has the same expression in *Cymbeline*, where Posthumus says:

"Whence come these *staggers*, on me?" STEEVENS.

Smile upon this contract; whose ceremony
Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,
'And be perform'd to-night: ⁶ the solemn feast

⁶ ——— *whose ceremony*

*Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,
And be perform'd to night:]* Several of the modern editors
read—new-born brief. STEEVENS.

This, if it be at all intelligible, is at least obscure and inaccurate.
Perhaps it was written thus:

————— *what ceremony*

*Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,
Shall be perform'd to night; the solemn feast
Shall more attend———.*

The brief is the contract of *esponsal*, or the licence of the church.
The King means, What ceremony is necessary to make this contract
a marriage, shall be immediately performed; the rest may be de-
layed. JOHNSON.

The only authentick ancient copy reads—now-born. I do not
perceive that any change is necessary. MALONE.

The whole speech is unnaturally expressed; yet I think it in-
telligible as it stands, and should therefore reject Johnson's amend-
ment: and explanation.

The word *brief* does not here denote either a contract or a
licence, but is an adjective, and means *short* or *contracted*: and the
words on the *now-born*, signify *for the present*, in opposition to *upon*
the coming space, which means *hereafter*. The sense of the whole
passage seems to be this:—"The king and fortune smile on this
contract; the ceremony of which it seems expedient to abridge for
the present; the solemn feast shall be performed at a future time,
when we shall be able to assemble friends." M. MASON.

Though I have inserted the foregoing note, I do not profess to
comprehend its meaning fully. Shakspeare uses the words *ex-
pedience*, *expedient*, and *expediently*, in the sense of *haste*, *quick*, *ex-
pedition*. A *brief*, in ancient language, means any short and
summary writing, or proceeding. The *now-born brief* is only
another phrase for the contract recently and suddenly made. The
ceremony of it (says the king) shall seem to hasten after its short pre-
liminary, and be performed to night, &c. STEEVENS.

Now-born, the epithet in the old copy, prefixed to *brief*, un-
questionably ought to be restored. The *now-born brief*, is the
breve originale of the feudal times, which, in this instance, formally
notified the king's consent to the marriage of Bertram, his ward.

HENLEY.

Shall more attend upon the coming space,
Expecting absent friends. As thou lov'st her,
Thy love's to me religious; else does err.

[*Exit King, BERTRAM, HELENA, Lords, and Attendants.*']

LAF. Do you hear, monsieur, a word with you.

PAR. Your pleasure, sir?

LAF. Your lord and master 'did well to make his recantation.

PAR. Recantation?—My lord? my master?

LAF. Ay; is it not a language, I speak?

PAR. A most harsh one; and not to be understood without bloody succeeding. My master?

LAF. Are you companion to the count Rouffillon?

PAR. To any count; to all counts; to what is man.

LAF. To what is count's man; count's master is of another style.

PAR. You are too old, sir; let it satisfy you, you are too old,

Our author often uses *brief* in the sense of a short note, or intimation concerning any business; and sometimes without the idea of writing. So, in the last Act of this play:

" — she told me

" In a sweet verbal *brief*," &c.

Again, in the prologue to *Sir John Oldcastle*, 1600:

" To stop which scruple, let this *brief* suffice:—

" It is no pamper'd glutton we present," &c.

The meaning therefore of the present passage, I believe, is;— Good fortune, and the king's favour smile on this short contract; the ceremonial part of which shall immediately pass,—shall follow close on the troth now plighted between the parties, and be performed this night; the solemn feast shall be delayed to a future time. MALONE.

⁷ The old copy has the following singular continuation: *Parolles and Lafew stay behind, commenting of this wedding.* This could have been only the marginal note of a prompter, and was never designed to appear in print. STEVENS.

To *comment* means, I believe to assume the appearance of persons deeply engaged in thought. MALONE.

LAF. I must tell thee, firrah. I write man; to which title age cannot bring thee.

PAR. What I dare too well do, I dare not do.

LAF. I did think thee, for two ordinaries,⁸ to be a pretty wise fellow; thou didst make tolerable vent of thy travel; it might pass: yet the scarfs, and the bannerets, about thee, did manifoldly dissuade me from believing thee a vessel of too great a burden. I have now found thee; when I lose thee again, I care not: yet art thou good for nothing but taking up;⁹ and that thou art scarce worth.

PAR. Hadst thou not the privilege of antiquity upon thee,—

LAF. Do not plunge thyself too far in anger, lest thou hasten thy trial; which if—Lord have mercy on thee for a hen! So, my good window of lattice, fare thee well; thy casement I need not open, for I look through thee. Give me thy hand.

PAR. My lord, you give me most egregious indignity.

LAF. Ay, with all my heart; and thou art worthy of it.

PAR. I have not, my lord, deserv'd it.

LAF. Yes, good faith, every dram of it; and I will not bate thee a scruple.

PAR. Well, I shall be wiser.

LAF. E'en as soon as thou canst, for thou hast to pull at a smack o'the contrary. If ever thou be'st bound in thy scarf, and beaten, thou shalt find what it is to be proud of thy bondage. I have a desire to hold my acquaintance with thee, or rather my

⁸ — for two ordinaries—] While I sat twice with thee at table. JOHNSON.

⁹ — taking up;] To take up is to contradict, to call to account; as well as to pick off the ground. JOHNSON.

knowledge; that I may say, in the default,* he is a man I know.

PAR. My lord, you do me most insupportable vexation.

LAF. I would it were hell-pains for thy sake, and my poor doing eternal: for doing I am past; as I will by thee, in what motion age will give me leave.³ [Exit.

PAR. Well, thou hast a son shall take this disgrace off me;⁴ scurvy, old, filthy, scurvy lord!—Well, I must be patient; there is no fettering of authority. I'll beat him, by my life, if I can meet him with any convenience, an he were double and double a lord. I'll have no more pity of his age, than I would have of—I'll beat him, an if I could but meet him again.

* — in the default.] That is, at a need. JOHNSON.

³ — for doing I am past; as I will by thee, in what motion age will give me leave.] The conceit, which is so thin that it might well escape a hasty reader, is in the word *past*—I am past, as I will be past by thee. JOHNSON.

Lafcu means to say, "for doing I am past, as I will *pass* by thee in what motion age will permit." Lafcu, says, that he will *pass* by Parolles, not that he will be *passed* by him; and Lafcu is actually the person who goes out. M. MASON.

Dr. Johnson is, I believe, mistaken. Mr. Edwards has, I think, given the true meaning of Lafcu's words. "*I cannot do much*, says Lafcu; *doing I am past*, as I will by thee in *what motion age will give me leave*; i. e. *as I will pass by thee as fast as I am able*;—and he immediately goes out. It is a play on the word *past*: the conceit indeed is poor, but Shakspeare plainly meant it." MALONE.

Doing is here used obscenely. So, in Ben Jonson's translation of a passage in an Epigram of Petronius:

Bravis est, &c. & feda voluptas.

"*Doing*, a filthy pleasure is, and short." COLLINS.

⁴ Well, thou hast a son shall take this disgrace off me;] This the poet makes Parolles speak alone; and this is nature. A coward should try to hide his poltroonery even from himself. An ordinary writer would have been glad of such an opportunity to bring him to confession. WARBURTON.

Re-enter LAFEU.

LAF. Sirrah, your lord and master's married, there's news for you; you have a new mistress.

PAR. I most unfeignedly beseech your lordship to make some reservation of your wrongs: He is my good lord: whom I serve above, is my master.

LAF. Who? God?

PAR. Ay, sir.

LAF. The devil it is, that's thy master. Why dost thou garter up thy arms o' this fashion? dost make hose of thy sleeves? do other servants so? Thou wert best set thy lower part where thy nose stands. By mine honour, if I were but two hours younger, I'd beat thee: methinks, thou art a general offence, and every man should beat thee. I think, thou wast created for men to breathe themselves upon thee.

PAR. This is hard and undeserved measure, my lord.

LAF. Go to, sir; you were beaten in Italy for picking a kernel out of a pomegranate; you are a vagabond, and no true traveller: you are more saucy with lords, and honourable personages, than the heraldry of your birth and virtue gives you commission.⁵ You are not worth another word, else I'd call you knave. I leave you. *[Exit.]*

Enter BERTRAM.

PAR. Good, very good; it is so then.—Good, very good; let it be conceal'd a while.

⁵ ——— *than the heraldry of your birth, &c.*] In former copies:—*than the commission of your birth and virtue gives you heraldry.* Sir Thomas Hanmer restored it. JOHNSON.

BER. Undone, and forfeited to cares for ever!

PAR. What is the matter, sweet heart?

BER. Although before the solemn priest I have
sworn,

I will not bed her.

PAR. What? what, sweet heart?

BER. O my Parolles, they have married me: —
I'll to the Tuscan wars, and never bed her.

PAR. France is a dog-hole, and it no more merits
The tread of a man's foot: to the wars!

BER. There's letters from my mother; what the
import is,

I know not yet.

PAR. Ay, that would be known: To the wars,
my boy, to the wars!

He wears his honour in a box unseen,
That hugs his kickfy-wickfy here at home;⁶
Spending his manly marrow in her arms,
Which should sustain the bound and high curvet
Of Mars's fiery steed: To other regions:
France is a stable; we that dwell in't, jades;
Therefore, to the war!

BER. It shall be so; I'll send her to my house,
Acquaint my mother with my hate to her,
And wherefore I am fled; write to the king
That which I durst not speak: His present gift
Shall furnish me to those Italian fields,
Where noble fellows strike: War is no strife
To the dark house, and the detested wife.⁷

⁶ *That hugs his kickfy-wickfy, &c.*] Sir T. Hanmer, in his Glossary, observes that *kickfy-wickfy* is a made word in ridicule and disdain of a wife. Taylor, the water-poet, has a poem in disdain of his debtors, entitled, *A kickfy-winky, or a Lerry come-twang.*

GREY.

⁷ *To the dark house, &c.*] The *dark house* is a house made gloomy

PAR. Will this capricio hold in thee, art sure?

BER. Go with me to my chamber, and advise me.

I'll send her straight away: To-morrow⁸

I'll to the wars, she to her single sorrow.

PAR. Why, these balls bound; there's noise in it.—'Tis hard;

A young man, married, is a man that's marr'd:

Therefore away, and leave her bravely; go:

The king has done you wrong; but, hush! 'tis so.

[*Exeunt.*]

by discontent. Milton says of *death* and the king of hell preparing to combat:

"So frown'd the mighty combatans, that hell

"Grew darker at their frown." JOHNSON.

Perhaps this is the same thought we meet with in *K. Henry IV.* only more solemnly expressed:

"——he's as tedious

"As is a tired horse, a railing wife,

"Worse than a smoky house."

The proverb originated before chimneys were in general use, which was not till the middle of Elizabeth's reign. See *Piers Plowman*, passus 17:

"Thre thinges there be that doe a man by strength

"For to hve his owne house, as holy wryte sheweth:

"That one is a wycked wife, that wyll not be chastysed;

"Her fere flyeth from her, for feare of her tonge:—

"And when *smolke* and *smoulder* smight in his fyghte,

"It doth him worse than his wyfe, or wete to slepe;

"For *smolke* or *smoulder*, smiteth in his eyen

"'Til he be *blear'd* or *blind*," &c.

The old copy reads—*detested* wife. Mr. Rowe made the correction. STEEVENS.

The emendation is fully supported by a subsequent passage:

"'Tis a hard bondage to become the wife

"Of a *detesting* lord." MALONE.

⁸ *I'll send her straight away: To-morrow—*] As this line wants a foot, I suppose our author wrote—"Betimes to-morrow." So, in *Macbeth*:

"——— I will to-morrow,

"Betimes I will," &c. STEEVENS.

S C E N E I V .

The same. Another Room in the same.

Enter HEIENA and Clown.

HEL. My mother greets me kindly: Is she well?

CLO. She is not well; but yet she has her health: she's very merry; but yet she is not well: but thanks be given, she's very well, and wants nothing i' the world; but yet she is not well.

HEL. If she be very well, what does she ail, that she's not very well?

CLO. Truly, she's very well, indeed, but for two things.

HEL. What two things?

CLO. One, that she's not in heaven, whither God send her quickly! the other, that she's in earth, from whence God send her quickly!

Enter PAROLLES.

PAR. Bless you, my fortunate lady!

HEL. I hope, sir, I have your good will to have mine own good fortunes.*

PAR. You had my prayers to lead them on; and to keep them on, have them still.—O, my knave! How does my old lady?

CLO. So that you had her wrinkles, and I her money, I would she did as you say.

* — *fortunes*] Old copy—*fortune*. Corrected by Mr. Steevens.
MALONE.

PAR. Why, I say nothing.

CLO. Marry, you are the wiser man; for many a man's tongue shakes out his master's undoing: To say nothing, to do nothing, to know nothing, and to have nothing, is to be a great part of your title; which is within a very little of nothing.

PAR. Away, thou'rt a knave.

CLO. You should have said, fir, before a knave thou art a knave: that is, before me thou art a knave: this had been truth, fir.

PAR. Go to, thou art a witty fool, I have found thee.

CLO. Did you find me in yourself, fir? or were you taught to find me? The search, fir, was profitable; and much fool may you find in you, even to the world's pleasure, and the increase of laughter.

PAR. A good knave, i'faith, and well fed.²—
Madam, my lord will go away to-night;
A very serious business calls on him.
The great prerogative and rite of love,
Which, as your due, time claims, he does acknowledge;
But puts it off by a compell'd restraint;³

² — and well fed.] An allusion, perhaps, to the old saying—
“Better fed than taught;” to which the Clown has himself alluded
in a preceding scene:—“I will show myself *highly fed* and lowly
taught.” STEEVENS.

³ But puts it off by a compell'd restraint;] The old copy reads—
to a compell'd restraint. STEEVENS.

The editor of the third folio reads—*by a compell'd restraint*; and
the alteration has been adopted by the modern editors; perhaps with-
out necessity. Our poet might have meant, in his usual licentious
manner, that Bertram puts off the completion of his wishes to a future
day, till which he is compelled to restrain his desires. This, it must be
confessed, is very harsh; but our author is often so licentious in his

Whose want, and whose delay, is strew'd with sweets,
Which they distil now in the curbed time,²
To make the coming hour o'erflow with joy,
And pleasure drown the brim.

HEL. What's his will else?

PAR. That you will take your instant leave o'the
king.

And make this haste as your own good proceeding,
Strengthen'd with what apology you think
May make it probable need.³

HEL. What more commands he?

phrasesology, that change on that ground alone is very dangerous.
In *K. Henry VIII.* we have a phrasesology not very different:

" — All-souls day

" Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs."

i. e. the day to which my wrongs are respited. MALONE.

² *Whose want, and whose delay, &c.*] The *sweets* with which
that *want* are *strewed*, I suppose, are compliments and professions
of kindness. JOHNSON.

Johnson seems not to have understood this passage; the meaning
of which is merely this: — "That the delay of the joys, and the ex-
pectation of them, would make them more delightful when they come."
The *curbed time*, means the time of restraint. *Whose want*, means the
want of which. So, in *The Two Noble Kinsmen*, Theseus says:

" ————— A day or two

" Let us look sadly, — in *whose end*,

" The visages of bridegrooms we'll put on." M. MASON.

The *sweets* which are distilled, by the restraint said to be imposed
on Bertram, from "the want and delay of the great prerogative of
love," are the sweets of *expectation*. Parolles is here speaking of
Bertram's feelings during this "curbed time," not, as Dr. Johnson
seems to have thought, of those of Helena. The following lines in
Troilus and Cressida may prove the best comment on the present passage:

" I am giddy; *expectation* whirls me round.

" The imaginary relish is so *sweet*

" That it enchants my sense. What will it be,

" When that the watery palate *tastes indeed*

" Love's thrice-reputed nectar? Death, I fear me,

" Swallowing delusion;" &c. MALONE.

³ — *probable need.*] A specious appearance of necessity.

JOHNSON.

PAR. That, having this obtain'd, you presently Attend his further pleasure.

HEL. In every thing I wait upon his will.

PAR. I shall report it so.

HEL. I pray you.—Come, firrah. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.

Another Room in the same.

Enter LAFEU and BERTRAM.

LAF. But, I hope, your lordship thinks not him a soldier.

BER. Yes, my lord, and of very valiant approof.

LAF. You have it from his own deliverance.

BER. And by other warranted testimony.

LAF. Then my dial goes not true; I took this lark for a bunting.⁴

BER. I do assure you, my lord, he is very great in knowledge, and accordingly valiant.

LAF. I have then sinned against his experience, and transgress'd against his valour; and my state that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in my heart to repent. Here he comes; I pray you, make us friends, I will pursue the amity.

Enter PAROLLES.

PAR. These things shall be done, sir. [*To BERTRAM.*]

⁴ —a bunting.] This bird is mentioned in Lyly's *Love's Metamorphosis*, 1601: "—but foresters think all birds to be bunting." Barrett's *Alocaris, or Quadruple Dictionary*, 1580, gives this account of it: "Tetraneola et rubetra, avis alaudæ similis, &c. Dicitur tetraneola quod non in arboribus, sed in terra versetur & nidificet." The following proverb is in Ray's Collection: "A golfhawk beats not a bunting." STEEVENS.

I took this lark for a bunting.] This is a fine discrimination between the possessor of courage, and him that only has the appearance of it.

The bunting is in feather, size, and form, so like the sky-lark, as

LAF. Pray you, fir, who's his tailor?

PAR. Sir?

LAF. O, I know him well: Ay, fir; he, fir, is a good workman, a very good tailor.

BER. Is she gone to the king?

[*Aside to PAROLLES.*

PAR. She is.

BER. Will she away to-night?

PAR. As you'll have her.

BER. I have writ my letters, casketed my treasure, Given order for our horses: and to-night, When I should take possession of the bride,— And, ere I do begin,—

LAF. A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three thirds,⁵ and uses a known truth to pass a thousand nothings with, should be once heard, and thrice beaten.—God save you, captain.

BER. Is there any unkindness between my lord and you, monsieur?

PAR. I know not how I have deserv'd to run into my lord's displeasure.

LAF. You have made shift to run into't, boots and spurs and all, like him that leap'd into the custard;⁶ and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

to require nice attention to discover the one from the other; it also ascends and sinks in the air nearly in the same manner: but it has little or no song, which gives estimation to the sky-lark. J. JOHNSON.

⁵ *A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three thirds, &c.*] So, in Marlowe's *King Edward 1st*. 1598:

" Gav. What art thou?

" 2 *Poor Man.* A traveller.

" Gav. Let me see; thou would'st well

" To wait on my treacher, and tell me lies at dinner-time."

MALONE.

⁶ *You have made shift to run into't, boots and spurs and all, like him that leap'd into the custard;]* This odd allusion is not introduced

BER. It may be, you have mistaken him, my lord.

LAF. And shall do so ever, though I took him at his prayers. Fare you well, my lord; and believe this of me, There can be no kernel in this light nut; the soul of this man is his clothes: trust him not in matter of heavy consequence; I have kept of them tame, and know their natures.—Farewell, monsieur: I have spoken better of you, than you have or will deserve ' at my hand; but we must do good against evil. [Exit.

PAR. An idle lord, I swear.

BER. I think so.

PAR. Why, do you not know him?

BER. Yes, I do know him well; and common speech Gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my clog.

Enter HELENA.

HEL. I have, sir, as I was command'd from you, Spoke with the king, and have procur'd his leave

without a view to satire. It was a foolery practis'd at city entertainments, whilst the jester or zany was in vogue, for him to jump into a large deep cushion, set for the purpose, to set on a quantity of barren spectators to laugh, as our poet says in his *Hamlet*. I do not advance this without some authority; and a quotation from Ben Jonson will very well explain it:

- "He may perchance, in tail of a sheriff's dinoer,
- "Skip with a rhyme o' th' table, from New-nothing,
- "And take his *Almain-trap* into a cushion,
- "Shall make my lady mayore's, and her sisters,
- "Laugh all their hoods over their shoulders."

Devil's an ass, Act I. sc. i. THEOBALD.

? — than you have or will deserve —] The oldest copy erroneously reads — have or will to deserve. STEEVENS.

Something seems to have been omitted: but I know not how to rectify the passage. Perhaps we should read—thao you have *qualities* or will to deserve. The editor of the second folio reads—than you have or will deserve —. MALONE.

For present parting; only, he desires
Some private speech with you.

BER. I shall obey his will.
You must not marvel, Helen, at my course,
Which holds not colour with the time, nor does
The ministration and required office
On my particular: prepar'd I was not
For such a business; therefore am I found
So much unsettled: This drives me to entreat you,
That presently you take your way for home;
And rather muse, than ask, why I entreat you:^a
For my respects are better than they seem;
And my appointments have in them a need,
Greater than shows itself, at the first view,
To you that know them not. This to my mother:
[Giving a letter.
'Twill be two days ere I shall see you; so
I leave you to your wisdom.

HEL. Sir, I can nothing say,
But that I am your most obedient servant.

BER. Come, come, no more of that.

HEL. And ever shall
With true observance seek to eke out that,
Wherein toward me my homely stars have fail'd
To equal my great fortune.

BER. Let that go:
My haste is very great: Farewell; hie home.

HEL. Pray, sir, your pardon.

BER. Well, what would you say?

HEL. I am not worthy of the wealth I owe;^b
Nor dare I say, 'tis mine; and yet it is;

^a And rather muse, &c.] To muse is to wonder. So, in *Macbeth* :

" Do not muse at me my most noble friends," STEEVENS.

^b — the wealth I owe ;] i. e. I own, possess. STEEVENS.

But, like a timorous thief, most fain would steal
What law does vouch mine own.

BER. What would you have ?

HEL. Something ; and scarce so much :—nothing,
indeed.—

I would not tell you what I would ; my lord—'faith,
yes ;—

Strangers, and foes, do sunder, and not kifs.

BER. I pray you, stay not, but in haste to horse.

HEL. I shall not break your bidding, good my
lord.

BER. Where are my other men, monsieur ?—

Farewell. * [Exit HELENA.

Go thou toward home ; where I will never come,
Whilst I can shake my sword, or hear the drum :—
Away, and for our flight.

PAR. Bravely, coragio !

[Excunt.

* *Where are my other men, monsieur ?—Farewell.*] In former
copies :

Hel. Where are my other men ? *Monsieur, farewell.*

What other men is Helen here enquiring after ? Or who is she
supposed to ask for them ? The old Countess, 'tis certain, did not
send her to the court without some attendants : but neither the
Clown, nor any of her retinue, are now upon the stage : Bertram,
observing Helen to linger fondly, and wanting to shift her off, puts
on a show of haste, asks Parolles for his servants, and then gives
his wife an abrupt dismissal. THORALD.

ACT III. SCENE I.

Florence. *A Room in the Duke's Palace.*

*Flourish. Enter the Duke of Florence, attended;
two French Lords, and Others.*

DUKE. So that, from point to point, now have
you heard

The fundamental reason of this war;
Whose great decision hath much blood let forth,
And more thirsts after.

1 LORD. Holy seems the quarrel
Upon your grace's part; black and fearful
On the oppoler

DUKE. Therefore we marvel much, our cousin
France

Would, in so just a business, shut his bosom
Against our borrowing prayers.

2 LORD. Good my lord,
The reasons of our state I cannot yield,³
But like a common and an outward man,⁴
That the great figure of a council frames
By self-unable motion:⁵ therefore dare not

³ — I cannot yield,] I cannot inform you of the reasons.

JOHNSON.

Thus, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

"If thou say so, villain, thou kill'st thy mistress:

"But well and free,

"If thou so yield him, there is gold —" STEVENS.

⁴ — an outward man,] i. e. one not in the secret of affairs.

WARRURTON,

So, inward is familiar, admitted to secrets. "I was an inward
of his." *Measure for Measure*. JOHNSON.

⁵ By self-unable motion:] We should read *notion*. WARRURTON.

This emendation has also been recommended by M. Upton.

STEVENS.

Say what I think of it; since I have found
Myself in my uncertain grounds to fail
As often as I guess'd.

DUKE. Be it his pleasure.

2 LORD. But I am sure, the younger of our nature,⁶

That surfeit on their ease, will, day by day,
Come here for physick.

DUKE. Welcome shall they be;
And all the honours, that can fly from us,
Shall on them settle. You know your places well;
When better fall, for your avails they fell:
To-morrow to the field. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.

Rouffillon, *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

Enter Countess and Clown.

COUNT. It hath happened all as I would have had
it, save, that he comes not along with her.

CLO. By my troth, I take my young lord to be a
very melancholy man.

COUNT. By what observance, I pray you?

CLO. Why, he will look upon his boot, and sing;
mend the ruff, and sing;⁷ ask questions, and sing;

⁶ — the younger of our nature,] i. e. as we say at present, our young fellows. The modern editors read — nation. I have restored the old reading. STEEVENS.

⁷ Clo. Why, he will look upon his boot, and sing; mend the ruff, and sing;] The tops of the boots in our author's time turned down, and hung loosely over the leg. The folding is what the Clown means by the ruff. Ben Jonson calls it *ruffie*; and perhaps it should be so here. "Not having leisure to put off my silver spur, one of the rowels catch'd hold of the ruffie of my boot." *Every Man out of his Humour*, Act IV. sc. vi. WHALLEY.

pick his teeth, and sing: I know a man that had this trick of melancholy, fold a goodly manor for a song.⁷

COUNT. I let me see what he writes, and when he means to come. [Opening a Letter.

CLO. I have no mind to Isbel, since I was at court: our old ling and our Isbels o'the country are nothing like your old ling and your Isbels o'the court: the brains of my Cupid's knock'd out; and I begin to love, as an old man loves money, with no stomach.

COUNT. What have we here?

CLO. E'en that ' you have there. [Exit.

COUNT. [Reads.] *I have sent you a daughter-in-law: she hath recovered the king, and undone me. I have wedded her, not bedded her; and sworn to make the not eternal. You shall hear. I am run away; know it, before the report come. If there be breadth enough in the world, I will hold a long distance. My duty to you.*

Your unfortunate son,

BERTRAM.

This is not well, rash and unbridled boy,
To fly the favours of so good a king;
To pluck his indignation on thy head,
By the misprizing of a maid too virtuous
For the contempt of empire.

To this fashion Bishop Earle alludes in his *Characters*, 1638, Signat. E. 10. "He has learnt to ruffle his face from his boots; and takes great delight in his walk to heare his spurs gingle."

MALONE.

⁷ — fold a goodly manor for a song.] Thus the modern editors. The old copy reads—hold a goodly, &c. The emendation, however, which was made in the third folio; seems necessary. STEEVENS.

⁸ Clo. E'en that —] Old copy — Is that. Corrected by Mr. Theobald. MALONE.

Re-enter Clown.

CLO. O madam, yonder is heavy news within,
between two soldiers and my young lady.

COUNT. What is the matter?

CLO. Nay, there is some comfort in the news,
some comfort; your son will not be kill'd so soon
as I thought he would.

COUNT. Why should he be kill'd?

CLO. So say I, madam, if he run away, as I hear
he does: the danger is in standing to't; that's the
loss of men, though it be the getting of children.
Here they come, will tell you more: for my part,
I only hear, your son was run away. [*Exit Clown.*]

Enter HELENA and two Gentlemen.

1 GEN. Save you, good madam.

HEL. Madam, my lord is gone, for ever gone.

2 GEN. Do not say so.

COUNT. Think upon patience, — 'Pray you,
gentlemen, —

I have felt so many quirks of joy, and grief,
That the first face of neither, on the start,
Can woman me^o unto't:—Where is my son, I pray
you?

2 GEN. Madam, he's gone to serve the duke of
Florence:

We met him thitherward; for thence we came,
And, after some despatch in hand at court,
Thither we bend again.

HEL. Look on his letter, madam; here's my
passport.

^o *Can woman me—*] i. e. affect me suddenly and deeply, as my
sex are usually affected. STEEVENS.

[Reads.] *When thou canst get the ring upon my finger, which never shall come off, and show me a child begotten of thy body, that I am father to, then call me husband; but in such a then I write a never.*

This is a dreadful sentence.

COUNT. Brought you this letter, gentlemen?

1 GEN. Ay, madam;

And, for the contents' sake, are sorry for our pains.

COUNT. I pry'thee, lady, have a better cheer;

If thou engross'st all the griefs are thine,

Thou robb'st me of a moiety: ^a He was my son;

But I do wash his name out of my blood,

And thou art all my child.—Towards Florence is he?

2 GEN. Ay, madam.

COUNT. And to be a soldier?

2 GEN. Such is his noble purpose: and, believe't,

The duke will lay upon him all the honour

That good convenience claims.

^a *When thou canst get the ring upon my finger,*] i. e. When thou canst get the ring, which is on my finger, into thy possession. The Oxford editor, who took it the other way, to signify, when thou canst get it on upoo my finger, very sagaciously alters it to—*When thou canst get the ring from my finger.* WARBURTON.

I think Dr. Warburton's explanation sufficient; but I once read it thus: *When thou canst get the ring upon thy finger, which never shall come off mine.* JOHNSON.

Dr. Warburton's explanation is confirmed incontestably by these lines in the fifth act, in which Helena again repeats the substance of this letter:

“—there is your ring;

“And, look you, here's your letter; this it says:

“*When from my finger you can get this ring,*” &c. MALONE.

^a *If thou engross'st all the griefs are thine,*

Thou robb'st me of a moiety:] We should certainly read;

—*all the griefs are thine,*

instead of—*are thine.* M. MASON.

This sentiment is elliptically expressed, but, I believe, means no more than—*If thou keep'st all thy sorrows to thyself,* i. e. “all the griefs that are thine,” &c. STEEVENS.

COUNT. Return you thither? ¹

¹ GEN. Ay, madam, with the swiftest wing off speed.

HEL. [Reads.] *'Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.*

'Tis bitter.

COUNT. Find you that there?

HEL. Ay, madam.

¹ GEN. 'Tis but the boldness of his hand, haply, which

His heart was not consenting to.

COUNT. Nothing in France, until he have no wife! There's nothing here, that is too good for him, But only she; and she deserves a lord, That twenty such rude boys might tend upon, And call her hourly, mistress. Who was with him?

¹ GEN. A servant only, and a gentleman Which I have some time known.

COUNT. Parolles, wasn't not?

¹ GEN. Ay, my good lady, he.

COUNT. A very tainted fellow, and full of wickedness.

My son corrupts a well-derived nature With his inducement.

¹ GEN. Indeed, good lady, The fellow has a deal of that, too much, Which holds him much to have. ²

² — a deal of that, too much, Which holds him much to have.] That is, his vices stand him in stead. Helen had before delivered this thought in all the beauty of expression:

" — I know him a notorious liar;

" Think him a great way fool, solely a coward;

" Yet these fix'd evils sit so fit in him,

" That they take place, while virtue's fleshy bones

" Look bleak in the cold wind —." WARBURTON.

COUNT. You are welcome, gentlemen,
I will entreat you, when you see my son,
To tell him, that his sword can never win
The honour that he loses : more I'll entreat you
Written to bear along.

2 GEN. We serve you, madam,
In that and all your worthiest affairs.

COUNT. Not so, but as we change our countesses.⁴
Will you draw near?

[*Exeunt Countess and Gentlemen.*]

HEL. *Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.*
Nothing in France, until he has no wife!
Thou shalt have none, Roussillon, none in France,
Then hast thou all again. Poor lord! is't I
That chase thee from thy country, and expose
Those tender limbs of thine to the event
Of the none-sparing war? and is it I
That drive thee from the sportive court, where thou
Wast shot at with fair eyes, to be the mark
Of smoky muskets? O you leaden messengers,
That ride upon the violent speed of fire,
Fly with false aim; move the still-piecing air,
That sings with piercing,⁵ do not touch my lord!

Mr. Heath thinks that the meaning is, this fellow hath a deal too much of *that* which alone can hold or judge that he has much in him, i. e. folly and ignorance. MALONE.

⁴ *Not so, &c.*] The gentlemen declare that they are servants to the Countess, she replies,—No otherwise than as she returns the same offices of civility. JOHNSON.

⁵ — move the still-piecing air,
[*That sings with piercing.*] The words are here oddly shuffled into nonsense. We should read :

— pierce the still-moving air,
[*That sings with piercing.*]
i. e. pierce the air, which is in perpetual motion, and suffers no injury by piercing. WARBURTON.

The old copy reads—*the still-piercing air.*
Perhaps we might better read :

— the still-piecing air.

Whoever shoots at him, I set him there;
 Whoever charges on his forward breast,
 I am the caitiff, that do hold him to it;
 And though I kill him not, I am the cause
 His death was so effected: better 'twere,
 I met the ravin lion⁶ when he roar'd
 With sharp constraint of hunger; better 'twere
 That all the miseries, which nature owes,
 Were mine at once: No, come thou home, Rou-
 sillon,
 Whence honour but of danger wins a scar,⁷
 As oft it loses all; I will be gone:
 My being here it is, that holds thee hence:
 Shall I stay here to do't? no, no, although
 The air of paradise did fan the house,
 And angels offic'd all: I will be gone;
 That pitiful rumour may report my flight,

i. e. the air that closes immediately. This has been proposed already, but I forget by whom. STEEVENS.

Peace was formerly spelt—*perce*: so that there is but the change of one letter. See *Twelfth Night*, first folio, p. 262:

"Now, good Cefario, but that *perce* of song—." MALONE.

I have no doubt that *still-piecing* was Shakspeare's word. But the passage is not yet quite found. We should read, I believe.

—rove the *still-piecing* air.

i. e. *fly at random through*. The allusion is to *shooting at rovers* in archery, which was shooting without any particular aim.

TYRWHITT.

Mr. Tyrwhitt's reading destroys the designed antithesis between *move* and *still*; nor is he correct in his definition of *roving*, which is 'not shooting without a particular aim, but at marks of uncertain lengths. DOUGL.

⁶ — the ravin lion—] i. e. the ravenous or ravencous lion. To *ravin* is to swallow voraciously. MALONE.

⁷ *Whence honour but of danger*, &c.] The sense is, from that abode, where all the advantages that honour usually reaps from the danger it rushes upon, is only a fear in testimony of its bravery, as on the other hand, it often is the cause of losing all, even life itself. HEATH.

To console thine ear. Come, night; end, day!
For, with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away.

[Exit.

S C E N E III.

Florence. *Before the Duke's Palace.*

*Flourish. Enter the Duke of Florence, BERTRAM,
Lords, Officers, Soldiers, and Others.*

DUKE. The general of our horse thou art; and we,
Great in our hope, lay our best love and credence,
Upon thy promising fortune.

PER. Sir, it is
A charge too heavy for my strength; but yet
We'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake,
To the extreme edge of hazard.¹

DUKE. I hen go thou forth;
And fortune play upon thy prosperous helm,²
As thy auspicious mistress!

BER. This very day,
Great Mars, I put myself into thy file:
Make me but like my thoughts; and I shall prove
A lover of thy drum, hater of love. [Exit.

¹ *We'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake,
To the extreme edge of hazard.]* So, in our author's 116th
Sonnet:

"But bears it not even to the edge of doom." MALONE.

Milton has borrowed this expression! *Par. Reg. B. I:*

"You see our danger on the utmost edge

"Of hazard." STEEVENS.

² *And fortune play upon thy prosperous helm,]* So, in *King
Richard III:*

"Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!"

Again, in *King John:*

"And victory with little loss dath play

"Upon the dancing banners of the French." STEEVENS.

SCENE IV.

Roussillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

Enter Countess and Steward.

COUNT. Alas ! and would you take the letter of her ?

Might you not know, she would do as she has done, By sending me a letter ? Read it again.

STEW. *I am Saint-Jaques' pilgrim,¹ thither gone ; Ambitious love hath so in me offended, That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon, With sainted vow my faults to have amended. Write, write, that, from the bloody course of war, My dearest master, your dear son may hie ; Bless him at home in peace, whilst I from far, His name with zealous servour sanctify : His taken labours bid him me forgive ; I, his despiteful Juno,² sent him forth From courtly friends, with camping foes to live, Where death and danger dog the heels of worth : He is too good and fair for death and me ; Whom I myself embrace, to set him free.*

¹ — Saint Jaques' pilgrim,] I do not remember any place famous for pilgrimages consecrated in Italy to St. James, but it is common to visit St. James of Compostella, in Spain. Another saint might easily have been found, Florence being somewhat out of the road from Roussillon to Compostella. JOHNSON.

From Dr. Heylin's *France painted to the Life*, 8vo. 1656, p. 270, 276, we learn that at Orleans was a church dedicated to St. Jaques, to which Pilgrims formerly used to resort, to adore a part of the cross pretended to be found there. REED.

² — Juno,] Alluding to the story of Hercules. JOHNSON.

COUNT. Ah, what sharp stings are in her mildest words;—

Rinaldo, you did never lack advice so much,³
As letting her pass so; had I spoke with her,
I could have well diverted her intents,
Which thus she hath prevented.

STEW. Pardon me, madam :
If I had given you this at over-night,
She might have been o'erta'en; and yet she writes,
Pursuit would be but vain.

COUNT. What angel shall
Bless this unworthy husband? he cannot thrive,
Unless her prayers, whom heaven delights to hear,
And loves to grant, relieve him from the wrath
Of greatest justice.—Write, write, Rinaldo,
To this unworthy husband of his wife;
Let every word weigh heavy of her worth,
That he does weigh too light : ⁴ my greatest grief,
Though little he do feel it, set down sharply.
Despatch the most convenient messenger :—
When, haply, he shall hear that she is gone,
He will return; and hope I may, that she,
Hearing so much, will speed her foot again,
Led hither by pure love : which of them both
Is dearest to me, I have no skill in sense
To make distinction :—Provide this messenger :—
My heart is heavy, and mine age is weak ;
Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me speak.

[*Exeunt.*

³ — *lack advice so much,*] *Advice, is discretion or thought.*
JOHNSON.

So, in *King Henry V.*

“ And, on his more advice we pardon him.” STEEVENS.

⁴ *That he does weigh too light:]* To weigh here means to value, or esteem. So, in *Love's Labour's Lost* :

“ You weigh me not, O, that's you care not for me.”

MALONE.

SCENE V.

Without the Walls of Florence.

A tucket afar off. Enter an old Widow of Florence, DIANA, VIOLENTA, MARIANA, and other Citizens.

WID. Nay, come; for if they do approach the city, we shall lose all the fight.

DIA. They say, the French count has done most honourable service.

WID. It is reported that he has taken their greatest commander; and that with his own hand he slew the duke's brother. We have lost our labour; they are gone a contrary way: hark! you may know by their trumpets.

MAR. Come, let's return again, and suffice ourselves with the report of it. Well, Diana, take heed of this French earl: the honour of a maid is her name; and no legacy is so right as honesty.

WID. I have told my neighbour, how you have been solicited by a gentleman his companion.

MAR. I know that knave; hang him! one Parolles: a filthy officer he is in those suggestions for the young earl.⁵—Beware of them, Diana; their promises, enticements, oaths, tokens, and all these engines of lust, are not the things they go under:⁶

⁵ — *these suggestions for the young earl.*] *Suggestions* are temptations. So, in *Love's Labour's Lost*:

"*Suggestions* are to others as to me." STEEVENS.

⁶ — *are not the things they go under:*] They are not really so true and sincere, as in appearance they seem to be. THEOBALD.

To go under the name of any thing is a known expression. The meaning is, they are not the things for which their names would make them pass. JOHNSON.

many a maid hath been seduced by them; and the misery is, example, that so terrible shows in the wreck of maidenhood, cannot for all that dissuade succession, but that they are limed with the twigs that threaten them. I hope, I need not to advise you further; but, I hope, your own grace will keep you where you are, though there were no further danger known, but the modesty which is so lost.

DIA. You shall not need to fear me.

Enter HELENA, in the dress of a Pilgrim.

WID. I hope so.—Look, here comes a pilgrim: I know she will lie at my house: thither they send one another: I'll question her.—

God save you pilgrim! Whither are you bound?

HEL. To Saint Jaques le grand.

Where do the palmers' lodge, I do beseech you;

WID. At the Saint Francis here, beside the port.

HEL. Is this the way?

WID. Ay marry, is it.—Hark you!
[*A march afar off.*]

They come this way:—If you will tarry, holy pilgrim,*

But till the troops come by,

* — *palmers*—] Pilgrims that visited holy places; so called from a staff, or bough of palm they were wont to carry, especially such as had visited the holy places at Jerusalem. "A pilgrim and a palmer differed thus: a *pilgrim* had some dwelling-place, a *palmer* had none; the *pilgrim* travelled to some certain place, the *palmer* to all, and not to any one in particular; the *pilgrim* must go at his own charge, the *palmer* must profess wilful poverty; the *pilgrim* might give over his profession, the *palmer* must be constant." See Blount's *Glossography*. ANONYMOUS.

* — *holy pilgrim*,] The interpolated epithet *holy* which adds nothing to our author's sense, and is injurious to his metre, may be safely omitted. STEVENS.

I will conduct you where you shall be lodg'd;
The rather, for, I think, I know your hostess
As ample as myself.

HEL. Is it yourself?

WID. If you shall please so, pilgrim.

HEL. I thank you, and will stay upon your leisure.

WID. You came, I think, from France?

HEL. I did so.

WID. Here you shall see a countryman of yours,
That has done worthy service.

HEL. His name, I pray you.

DIA. The count Roussillon: Know you such a one?

HEL. But by the ear, that hears most nobly of him:

His face I know not.

DIA. Whatsoever he is,

He's bravely taken here. He stole from France,
As 'tis reported, for the king^a had married him
Against his liking: Think you it so?

HEL. Ay, surely, mere the truth; ^b I know his lady.

DIA. There is a gentleman, that serves the count,
Reports but coarsely of her.

HEL. What's his name?

DIA. Monsieur Parolles.

HEL. O, I believe with him,
In argument of praise, or to the worth
Of the great count himself, she is too mean

^a — for the king, &c.] For, in the present instance, signifies because. So, in *Othello*:

" — and great business scant,

" For she is with me." STEVENS.

^b — mere the truth;] The exact, the entire truth. MALONE.

To have her name repeated; all her deserving
Is a reserved honesty, and that
I have not heard examin'd.²

DIA. Alas, poor lady!
'Tis a hard bondage, to become the wife
Of a detesting lord.

WID. A right good creature: ² wherefoe'er she is,
Her heart weighs sadly: this young maid might do
her

A shrewd turn, if she pleas'd.

HEL. How do you mean?
May be, the amorous count solicits her
In the unlawful purpose.

WID. He does, indeed;
And brokes ³ with all that can in such a suit
Corrupt the tender honour of a maid:
But she is arm'd for him, and keeps her guard
In honestest defence.

² ——— examin'd.] That is, *questioned, doubted.* JOHNSON.

³ *A right good creature:* There is great reason to believe, that when these plays were copied for the press, the transcriber trusted to the ear, and not to the eye; one person dictating, and another transcribing. Hence probably the error of the old copy, which reads—*I write good creature.* For the emendation now made I am answerable. The same expression is found in *The Two Noble Kinsmen*, 1634:

"A right good creature more to me deserving," &c.

MALONE.

Perhaps, Shakspeare wrote —

I weet, good creature, wherefoe'er she is, —

i. e. I know, I am well assured. He uses the word in *Antony and Cleopatra*. Thus also, Prior:

"But well I weet, thy cruel wrong

"Adorns a nobler poet's song." STEEVENS.

² ——— brokes —] Deals as a broker. JOHNSON.

To *broke* is to deal with panders. A *broker* in our author's time meant a bawd or pimp. See a note on *Hamlet*, Act I. sc. iii.

MALONE.

Enter with drum and colours, a party of the Florentine army, BERTRAM, and PAROLLES.

MAR. The gods forbid else!

WID. So, now they come: —
That is Antonio, the duke's eldest son;
That, Escalus.

HEL. Which is the Frenchman?

DIA. He;
That with the plume: 'tis a most gallant fellow;
I would, he lov'd his wife: if he were honefter,
He were much goodlier: — Is't not a handsome gentleman?

HEL. I like him well.

DIA. 'Tis pity, he is not honest: Yond's that
same knave,
That leads him to these places; ⁴ were I his lady,
I'd poison that vile rascal.

HEL. Which is he?

DIA. That jack-an-apes with scarfs: Why is he
melancholy?

HEL. Perchance he's hurt i'the battle.

PAR. Lose our drum! well.

⁴ — *Yond's that same knave,
That leads him to these places;*] What places? Have they been
talking of brothels; or, indeed, of any particular locality? I make
no question but our author wrote:

That leads him to these paces.
i. e. such irregular steps; to courses of debauchery, to not loving
his wife. THEOBALD.

The places are, apparently, where he

" — brokes with all, that can in such a suit

" Corrupt the tender honour of a maid." STEEVENS.

MAR. He's shrewdly vex'd at something: Look, he has spied us.

WID. Marry, hang you!

MAR. And your courtesy, for a ring-carrier!

[*Exeunt* BERTRAM, PAROLLES, *Officers, and Soldiers.*]

WID. The troop is past: Come, pilgrim, I will bring you

Where you shall host: of enjoin'd penitents
There's four or five, to great Saint Jaques bound,
Already at my house.

HEL. I humbly thank you:
Please it this matron, and this gentle maid,
To eat with us to-night, the charge, and thanking,
Shall be for me; and, to requite you further,
I will bestow some precepts on this^s virgin,
Worthy the note.

BOTH. We'll take your offer kindly.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.

Camp before Florence,

Enter BERTRAM, *and the two French Lords.*

1 LORD. Nay, good my lord, put him to't; let him have his way.

2 LORD. If your lordship find him not a hilding,⁶ hold me no more in your respect.

⁵ — on this —] Old copy — of this. Corrected in the second folio. MALONE.

⁶ — a hilding,] A *hilding* is a paltry cowardly fellow. So, in *King Henry V*:

"To purge the field from such a *hilding* foe." STEEVENS.
See note on the Second Part of *K. Henry IV.* Act I. sc. i. REED.

1 LORD. On my life, my lord, a bubble.

BER. Do you think, I am so far deceived in him?

1 LORD. Believe it, my lord, in mine own direct knowledge, without any malice, but to speak of him as my kintman, he's a most notable coward, an infinite and endless liar, an hourly promise-breaker, the owner of no one good quality worthy your lordship's entertainment.

2 LORD. It were fit you knew him; lest, reposing too far in his virtue, which he hath not, he might, at some great and trusty business, in a main danger, fail you.

BER. I would, I knew in what particular action to try him.

2 LORD. None better than to let him fetch off his drum, which you hear him so confidently undertake to do.

1 LORD. I, with a troop of Florentines, will suddenly surprize him; such I will have, whom, I am sure, he knows not from the enemy: we will bind and hood-wink him so, that he shall suppose no other but that he is carried into the leaguer of the adversaries,⁷ when we bring him to our tents: Be but your lordship present at his examination; if he do not, for the promise of his life, and in the highest compulsion of base fear, offer to betray you, and deliver all the intelligence in his power against you, and that with the divine forfeit of his

⁷ — *he's carried into the leaguer of the adversaries,*] i. e. camp.
 "They will not vouchsafe in their speeches or writings to use our ancient termes belonging to matters of warre, but doo call a campe by the Dutch name of *Legar*; nor will not afford to say, that such a towne or such a fort is besieged, but that it is *belegard*."
Sir John Smythe's Discourses, &c. 1500. fo. 2. Douce.

soul upon oath, never trust my judgement in any thing.

2 LORD. O for the love of laughter, let him fetch his drum; he says, he has a stratagem for't: when your lordship sees the bottom of his * success in't, and to what metal this counterfeit lump of ore * will be melted, if you give him not John Drum's entertainment, * your inclining cannot be removed. Here he comes.

* — of his —] Old copy — of this. Corrected by Mr. Rowe.
MALONE.

* — of ore —] Old copy — of ours: MALONE.

Lump of *ours* has been the reading of all the editions. *Ore*, according to my emendation, bears a consonancy with the other terms accompanying, (*viz. metal, lump, and melted,*) and helps the propriety of the poet's thought: for so one metaphor is kept up, and all the words are proper and suitable to it.

THEOBALD.

* — if you give him not John Drum's entertainment,] But, what is the meaning of *John Drum's entertainment*? Late several times afterwards calls Parolles, 'Tom Drum. But the difference of the Christian name will make none in the explanation. There is an old motley interlude, (printed in 1601,) called *Jack Drum's Entertainment: Or, The Comedy of Pasquil and Catharine*. In this, Jack Drum is a servant of intrigue, who is ever aiming at projects, and always foiled, and given the drop. And there is another old piece (published in 1627) called, *Apollo shroving*, in which I find these expressions:

"*Thuriger. Thou lozel, hath Slug infected you?*"

"*Why do you give such kind entertainment to that cobweb?*"

"*Scopas. It shall have Tom Drum's entertainment: a flap with a fox-tail.*"

But both these pieces are, perhaps too late in time, to come to the assistance of our author: so we must look a little higher. What is said here to Bertram is to this effect: "My lord, as you have taken this fellow [Parolles] into so near a confidence, if, upon his being found a counterfeit, you don't cashier him from your favour, then your attachment is not to be removed." I will now subjoin a quotation from Holinshed, (of whose books Shakspeare was a most diligent reader) which will pretty well ascertain Drum's

Enter PAROLLES:

1 LORD. O, for the love of laughter, hinder not the humour of his design; let him fetch off his drum in any hand.³

BER. How now, monsieur? this drum sticks forely in your disposition.

2 Lord. A pox on't let it go; 'tis but a drum.

PAR. But a drum! Is't but a drum? A drum so

history. This chrooologer, in his description of Ireland, speaking of Patrick Sarsfield, (mayor of Dublin in the year 1551,) and of his extravagant hospitality, subjoins, that no guest had ever a cold or forbidding look from any part of his family: so that *his porter or any other officer, durst not, for both his eares, give the simplest man that resorted to his house, Tom Drum his enterlaynement, which is, to hale a man in by the heade, and thrust him out by both the shoulders.* THEOBALD.

A contemporary writer has used this expression in the same manner that our author has done; so that there is no reason to suspect the word *John* in the text to be a misprint: "In faith good gentlemen, I think we shall be forced to give you right *Johns Drum's* entertainment, [i. e. to treat you very ill,] for he that composed the book we should present, hath—snatched it from us at the very instant of entrance." Introduction to *Jack Drum's Entertainment*, a comedy, 1601. MALONE.

Again, in Taylor's *Lough and be fat*, 78:

"And whither now is Mons' Odcome come

"Who on his owne backe-side receiv'd his pay?

"Not likè the *Entertainmt. of Jack Drum*,

"Who was best welcome when he went away."

Again, in *Manners and Customs of all Nations*, by Ed. Aston, 1611, 4to. p. 280: "—some others on the contrarie part, give them *Johns Drum's entertainment* reviling and beating them away from their houses," &c. REED.

³ — in any hand.] The usual phrase is — at any hand, but in any hand will do. It is used in Holland's *Plury*, p. 456. — "he must be a free citizen of Rome in any hand." Again, p. 508, 553, 546. STEEVENS.

lost!—There was an excellent command! to charge in with our horse upon our own wings, and to rend our own soldiers.

2 LORD. That was not to be blamed in the command of the service; it was a disaster of war that Cæsar himself could not have prevented, if he had been there to command.

BER. Well, we cannot greatly condemn our success: some dishonour we had in the loss of that drum; but it is not to be recover'd.

PAR. It might have been recover'd.

BER. It might; but it is not now.

PAR. It is to be recover'd: but that the merit of service is seldom attributed to the true and exact performer, I would have that drum or another, or *hic jacet*.⁴

BER. Why, if you have a stomach to't, monsieur, if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring this instrument of honour again into his native quarter, be magnanimous in the enterprize, and go on; I will grace the attempt for a worthy exploit: if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to you what further becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

PAR. By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.

BER. But you must not now slumber in it.

PAR. I'll about it this evening: and I will pre-

⁴ — *I would have that drum or another, or hic jacet.*] i. e. *Here lies*; — the usual beginning of epitaphs. I would (says Parolles) recover either the drum I have lost, or another belonging to the enemy; or die in the attempt. MALONE.

sently pen down my dilemmas,⁵ encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mortal preparation, and, by midnight, look to hear further from me.

BER. May I be bold to acquaint his grace, you are gone about it?

PAR. I know not what the success will be, my lord; but the attempt I vow.

BER. I know, thou art valiant; and, to the possibility of thy soldiership,⁶ will subscribe for thee. Farewell.

PAR. I love not many words. [Exit.

1 LORD. No more than a fish loves water.⁷—Is not this a strange fellow, my lord? that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he

⁵ — *I will presently pen down my dilemmas.*] By this word, Parolles is made to insinuate that he had several ways, all equally certain of recovering his drum. For a *dilemma* is an argument that concludes both ways. WARBURTON.

Shakspeare might have found the word thus used in Holinshed. STEEVENS.

I think, that by penning down his *dilemmas*, Parolles means, that he will pen down his plans on the one side, and the probable obstructions he was to meet with, on the other. M. MASON.

⁶ — *possibility of thy soldiership.*] *I will subscribe* (says Bertram) *to the possibility of your soldiership.* His doubts being now raised, he suppresses that he should not be so willing to vouch for its *probability*. STEEVENS.

I believe, Bertram means no more than that he is confident Parolles will do all that soldiership can effect. He was not yet certain that he was "a hilding." MALONE.

⁷ Par. *I love not many words.*

1 LORD. *No more than a fish loves water.*] Here we have the origin of this boaster's name; which, without doubt, (as Mr. Steevens has observed) ought in strict propriety to be written—*Paroles*. But our author certainly intended it otherwise, having made it a trisyllable:

"Rust sword, cool blushes, and *Parolles* live."

He probably did not know the true pronunciation. MALONE.

knows is not to be done; damns himself to do, and dares better be damn'd than to do't.

2 LORD. You do not know him, my lord, as we do: certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour, and, for a week, escape a great deal of discoveries; but when you find him out, you have him ever after.

BER. Why, do you think, he will make no deed at all of this, that so seriously he does address himself unto?

1 LORD. None in the world; but return with an invention, and clap upon you two or three probable lies: but we have almost emboss'd him,⁸ you shall see his fall to-night; for, indeed, he is not for your lordship's respect.

2 LORD. We'll make you some sport with the fox, ere we ease him.⁹ He was first smoked by the old lord Laseu: when his disguise and he is parted, tell me what a sprat you shall find him; which you shall see this very night.

1 LORD. I must go look my twigs; he shall be caught.

⁸ — we have almost emboss'd him,] To emboss a deer is to inclose him in a wood. Milton uses the same word:

"Like that self-begotten bird

"In the Arabian woods imbosc'd.

"Which no second knows or third." JOHNSON.

It is probable that Shakspeare was unacquainted with this word in the sense which Milton alludes to it, viz. from *imboscarsi*, Ital. to enclose in a thicket.

When a deer is run hard and foams at the mouth, in the language of the field, he is said to be *emboss'd*. STEEVENS.

"To know when a stag is weary (as Markham's *Country Contentments*, say) you shall see him *imbosc'd*, that is, *foaming and flaver-ing about the mouth with a thick white froth,*" &c. TOLLET.

⁹ — ere we ease him,] That is, before we strip him oaked. JOHNSON.

BER. Your brother, he shall go along with me.

1 LORD. As't please your lordship: I'll leave you.² [Exit.

BER. Now will I lead you to the house, and show you
The last I spoke of.

2 LORD. But, you say, she's honest.

BER. That's all the fault: I spoke with her but once,

And found her wondrous cold; but I sent to her,
By this same coxcomb that we have i'the wind,³

Tokens and letters which she did re-send;
And this is all I have done: She's a fair creature;
Will you go see her?

2 LORD. With all my heart, my lord.
[Exit.

SCENE VII.

Florence. *A Room in the Widow's House,*

Enter HELENA, and Widow.

HEL. If you misdoubt me that I am not she,
I know not how I shall assure you further,
But I shall lose the grounds I work upon.⁴

* — I'll leave you.] This line is given in the old copy to the second lord, there called Captain G, who goes out; and the first lord, there called Captain E, remains with Bertram. The whole course of the dialogue shows this to have been a mistake. See p. 117.

" 1 Lord. [i. e. Captain E.] I, with a troop of Florentines" &c.
MALONE.

³ — we have i'the wind,] To have one in the wind, is enumerated as a proverbial saying by Ray, p. 261. REED.

⁴ But I shall lose the grounds I work upon.] i. e. by discovering herself to the count. WARBURTON.

WID. Though my estate be fallen, I was well
born,
Nothing acquainted with these businessses;
And would not put my reputation now
In any staining act.

HEL. Nor would I wish you.
First, give me trust, the count he is my husband;
And, what to your sworn counsel⁵ I have spoken,
Is so, from word to word; and then you cannot,
By the good aid that I of you shall borrow,
Err in bestowing it.

WID. I should believe you;
For you have show'd me that, which well approves
You are great in fortune.

HEL. Take this purse of gold,
And let me buy your friendly help thus far,
Which I will over-pay, and pay again,
When I have found it. The count he wooes your
daughter,

Lays down his wanton siege before her beauty,
Resolves to carry her; let her, in fine, consent,
As we'll direct her how 'tis best to bear it,
Now his important blood will nought deny⁶
That she'll demand: A ring the county wears,⁷
That downward hath succeeded in his house,
From son to son, some four or five descents
Since the first father wore it: this ring he holds

⁵ — to your sworn counsel—] To your private knowledge, after having required from you an oath of secrecy. JOHNSON.

⁶ Now his important blood will nought deny—] Important here, and elsewhere, is *important*. JOHNSON.

So, Spenser in *The Fairy Queen*, B. II. c. vi. st. 29:

⁷ "And with important outrage him assailed."
Important, from the Fr. *Important*. TYRWHITT.

⁸ — the county wears,] i. e. the count. So, in *Romeo and Juliet*, we have "the county Paris." STEEVENS.

In most rich choice; yet, in his idle fire,
To buy his will, it would not seem too dear,
Howe'er repented after.

WIN. Now I see
The bottom of your purpose.

HEL. You see it lawful then: It is no more;
But that your daughter, ere she seems as won,
Desires this ring; appoints him an encounter;
In fine, delivers me to fill the time,
Herself most chaste and absent: after this,
To marry her, I'll add three thousand crowns
To what is past already.

WIN. I have yielded:
Instruct my daughter how she shall persevere,
That time and place, with this deceit so lawful,
May prove coherent. Every night he comes
With musicks of all sorts, and songs compos'd
To her unworthiness: it nothing leads us,
To chide him from our caves; for he persists,
As if his life lay on't.

HEL. Why then, to-night
Let us assay our plot; which, if it speed,
Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed,
And lawful meaning in a lawful act;
Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fact:
But let's about it. [Exeunt.

* —after this,] The latter word was added to complete the metre, by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

* Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed,
And lawful meaning in a lawful act;] To make this jingling riddle complete in all its parts, we should read the second line thus:

And lawful meaning in a wicked act;
The sense of the two lines is this: It is a wicked meaning because the woman's intent is to deceive; but a lawful deed, because the

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Without the Florentine Camp.

Enter first Lord, with five or six Soldiers in ambush.

1 LORD. He can come no other way but by this hedge' corner: When you fall upon him, speak what terrible language you will; though you understand it not yourselves, no matter: for we must not seem to understand him; unless some one among us, whom we must produce for an interpreter.

1 SOLD. Good captain, let me be the interpreter.

1 LORD. Art not acquainted with him? knows he not thy voice?

man enjoys his own wife. Again, it is a *lawful meaning* because done by her to gain her husband's estranged affection, but it is a *wicked act* because he goes intentionally to commit adultery. The riddle concludes thus: *Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fall*, i. e. Where neither of them sin, and yet it is a sinful *fall* on both sides; which conclusion, we see, requires the emendation here made.

WARBURTON.

Sir Thomas Hanmer reads in the same sense:

Unlawful meaning in a lawful act. JOHNSON.

Bertram's meaning is wicked in a lawful deed, and Helen's meaning is lawful in a lawful act; and neither of them sin: yet on his part it was a sinful act, for his meaning was to commit adultery, of which he was innocent, as the lady was his wife. TOLLET.

The first line relates to Bertram. The *deed* was *lawful*, as being the duty of marriage, owed by the husband to the wife, but his *meaning* was *wicked*, because he intended to commit adultery. The second line relates to Helena; whose *meaning* was *lawful*, in as much as she intended to reclaim her husband, and demanded only the rights of a wife. The *act* or *deed* was *lawful* for the reason already given. The subsequent line relates to them both. The *fall* was *sinful*, as far as Bertram was concerned, because he intended to commit adultery; yet neither he nor Helena *actually* sinned: not the wife, because both her intention and action were innocent; not the husband, because he did not *accomplish* his intention; he did not commit adultery.—This note is partly Mr. Heath's. MALONE.

1 SOLD. No, fir, I warrant you.

1 LORD. But what linsy-woolfs hast thou to speak to us again?

1 SOL. Even such as you speak to me.

1 LORD. He must think us some band of strangers i' the adversary's entertainment.² Now he hath a smack of all neighbouring languages: therefore we must every one be a man of his own fancy, not to know what we speak one to another; so we seem to know, is to know straight our purpose:³ chough's language,⁴ gabble enough, and good enough. As for you, interpreter, you must seem very politick. But couch, ho! here he comes; to beguile two hours in a sleep, and then to return and swear the lies he forges.

Enter PAROLLES.

PAR. Ten o'clock: within these three hours 'twill be time enough to go home. What shall I say I have done? It must be a very plausible invention that carries it: They begin to smoke me; and disgraces have of late knock'd too often at my door.

² — some band of strangers i' the adversary's entertainment.] That is, foreign troops in the enemy's pay. JOHNSON.

³ — so we seem to know, is to know, &c.] I think the meaning is,—Our seeming to know what we speak one to another, is to make him to know our purpose immediately; to discover our design to him. *To know*, in the last instance, signifies *to make known*. Sir Thomas Hanmer very plausibly reads—to show straight our purpose. MALONE.

The sense of this passage with the context I take to be this,—We must each fancy a jargon for himself, without aiming to be understood by one another, for provided we appear to understand, that will be sufficient for the success of our project. HENLEY.

⁴ — chough's language,] So, in *The Tempest*:

" — I myself could make

" A chough of as deep chat." STEEVENS.

I find, my tongue is too fool-hardy; but my heart hath the fear of Mars before it, and of his creatures, not daring the reports of my tongue.

1 LORD. This is the first truth that e'er thine own tongue was guilty of. [*Aside.*]

PAR. What the devil should move me to undertake the recovery of this drum; being not ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I had no such purpose? I must give myself some hurts, and say, I got them in exploit: Yet slight ones will not carry it: They will say, Came you off with so little? and great ones I dare not give. Wherefore? what's the instance?⁴ Tongue, I must put you into a butter-woman's mouth, and buy another of Bajazet's mule,⁵ if you prattle me into these perils.

1 LORD. Is it possible, he should know what he is, and be that he is? [*Aside.*]

PAR. I would the cutting of my garments would serve the turn; or the breaking of my Spanish sword.

1 LORD. We cannot afford you so. [*Aside.*]

⁴ — the instance?] The proof. JOHNSON.

⁵ — of Bajazet's mule,] Dr. Warburton would read—mule.

MALONE.

As a mule is as dumb by nature, as the mute is by art, the reading may stand. In one of our old Turkish histories, there is a pompous description of Bajazet riding on a mule to the Divan.

STEEVENS.

Perhaps there may be here a reference to the following apologue mentioned by Maitland, in one of his despatches to Secretary Cecil: "I think yow have bard the apologue off the Philosopher who for th' emperor's plesure tooke upon him to make a *Moyle* speak: In many yeares the lyke may yet be, eyther that the *Moyle*, the Philosopher, or Eamperor may dye before the tyme be fully ronue out." *Haynes's Collection*, 369. Parolles probably means, he must buy a tongue which has still to learn the use of speech, that he may run himself into no more difficulties by his loquacity.

READ.

PAR. Or the baring of my beard; and to say, it was in stratagem.

1 LORD. 'Twould not do. [Aside.

PAR. Or to drown my clothes, and say, I was tripp'd.

1 LORD. Hardly serve. [Aside.

PAR. Though I swore I leap'd from the window of the citadel ———

1 LORD. How deep? [Aside.

PAR. Thirty fathom.

1 LORD. Three great oaths would scarce make that be believed. [Aside.

PAR. I would, I had any drum of the enemy's; I would swear, I recover'd it.

1 LORD. You shall hear one anon. [Aside.

PAR. A drum now of the enemy's! [Alarum within.

1 LORD. *Throca movousus, cargo, cargo, cargo.*

ALL. *Cargo, cargo, villianda par corbo, cargo.*

PAR. O! ransom, ransom:—Do not hide mine eyes,
[*They seize him and blindfold him.*

1 SOLD. *Boskos thiomuldo boskos.*

PAR. I know you are the Muskos' regiment.
And I shall lose my life for want of language:
If there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch,
Italian, or French, let him speak to me,
I will discover that which shall undo
The Florentine.

1 SOLD. *Boskos vauvado: —*

I understand thee, and can speak thy tongue: —
Kerelybonto: — Sir,
Betake thee to thy faith, for seventeen poniards
Are as thy bosom.

PAR. Oh!

1 SOLD. O, pray, pray, pray.—
Manka revania dulce.

1 LORD. *Oscorbi dulchos volivoreo.*

1 SOLD. The general is content to spare thee yet;
 And, hood-wink'd as thou art, will lead thee on
 To gather from thee: haply, thou may'st inform
 Something to save thy life.

PAR. O, let me live,
 And all the secrets of our camp I'll show,
 Their force, their purposes: nay, I'll speak that
 Which you will wonder at.

1 SOLD. But wilt thou faithfully?

PAR. If I do not, damn me.

1 SOLD. *Acordo linta.*—
 Come on, thou art granted space.

[*Exit, with PAROLLES guarded.*]

1 LORD. Go, tell the count Rouffillon and my
 brother,
 We have caught the woodcock, and will keep him
 muffled,
 Till we do hear from them.

2 SOLD. Captain, I will.

1 LORD. He will betray us all unto ourselves;—
 Inform 'em^a that.

2 SOLD. So I will, sir.

1 LORD. Till then, I'll keep him dark, and safely
 lock'd. [Exit.]

^a Inform 'em — Old copy — Inform us. Corrected by M. Rowe.
 MALONE.

SCENE II.

Florence. *A Room in the Widow's House.*

Enter BERTRAM and DIANA.

BER. They told me, that your name was Fontibell.

DIA. No, my good lord, Diana.

BER. Titled goddess;

And worth it, with addition! But, fair soul,

In your fine frame hath love no quality?

If the quick fire of youth light not your mind,

You are no maiden, but a monument:

When you are dead, you should be such a one

As you are now, for you are cold and stern;⁷

And now you should be as your mother was,

When your sweet self was got.

DIA. She then was honest.

BER. So should you be.

DIA. No:

My mother did but duty; such, my lord,

As you owe to your wife.

BER. No more of that!

I prythee, do not strive against my vows:

I was compell'd to her;⁸ but I love thee

⁷ You are no maiden, but a monument:

— for you are cold and stern; | Our author had here probably in his thoughts some of the stern monumental figures with which many churches in England were furnished by the rude sculptors of his own time. He has again the same allusion to *Cymbeline*:

"Aod be her sense but as a monument,

"Thus in a chapel lying." MALONE.

I believe, the epithet *stern*, refers only to the severity often impressed by death on features which, in their animated state, were of a placid turn. STEEVENS.

⁸ No more of that!

I prythee, do not strive against my vows:

I was compell'd to her; | Against his vows, I believe, means —

By love's own sweet constraint, and will for ever
Do thee all rights of service.

DIA. Ay, so you serve us,
'Till we serve you: but when you have our roses,
You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves,
And mock us with our bareness.

BER. How have I sworn?

DIA. 'Tis not the many oaths, that make the truth;
But the plain single vow, that is vow'd true.
What is not holy, that we swear not by,⁹
But take the Highest to witness: Then, pray you,
tell me;

If I should swear by Jove's great attributes,^a
I lov'd you dearly, would you believe my oaths,
When I did love you ill? this has no holding,

against his determined resolution never to cohabit with Helena; and this vow, or resolution, he had very strongly expressed in his letter to the countess. STEVENS.

So, in *Vittoria Corombona*, a tragedy by Webster, 1612:

"Henceforth I'll never lie with thee,—

"My vow is fix'd." MALONE.

⁹ *What is not holy, that we swear not by,*] The sense is,—We never swear by what is not holy, but swear by, or take to witness, the Highest, the Divinity. The tenor of the reasoning contained in the following lines perfectly corresponds with this: If I should swear by Jove's great attributes, that I lov'd you dearly, would you believe my oaths, when you found by experience that I loved you ill, and was endeavouring to gain credit with you in order to seduce you to your ruin? No, surely; but you would conclude that I had no faith either in Jove or his attributes, and that my oaths were mere words of course. For that oath can certainly have no tie upon us, which we swear by him we profess to love and honour, when at the same time we give the strongest proof of our disbelief in him, by pursuing a course which we know will offend and dishonour him. HEATH.

^a *If I should swear by Jove's great attributes,*] In the print of the old folio, it is doubtful whether it be *Jove's* or *Love's*, the characters being not distinguishable. If it is read *Love's*, perhaps it may be something less difficult. I am still at a loss.

JOHNSON.

To swear by him whom I protest to love;
That I will work against him: ³ I heretofore, your oaths
Are words, and poor conditions; but unfeal'd;
At least, in my opinion.

BER. Change it, change it;
Be not so holy-cruel: love is holy;
And my integrity ne'er knew the crafts,
That you do charge men with: Stand no more off,
But give thyself unto my sick desires,
Who then recover: say, thou art mine, and ever
My love, as it begins, shall so persever.

DIA. I see, that men make hopes, in such affairs,⁴
That we'll forsake ourselves. Give me that ring.

³ *To swear by him whom I protest to love, &c.*] This passage likewise appears to me corrupt. She swears not by him whom she loves, but by Jupiter. I believe we may read—*To swear to him*. There is, says she, no holding, no consistency, in swearing to one that I love him, when I swear it only to injure him.

JOHNSON.

This appears to me a very probable conjecture. Mr. Heath's explanation, which refers the words—"whom I protest to love"—to *Joan*, can hardly be right. Let the reader judge.

MALONE.

⁴ *I see, that men make hopes in such affairs,*] The four folio editions read:

—make rope's in such a scarre.

The emendation was introduced by Mr. Rowe. I find the word *scarre* in *The Tragedy of Hoffman*, 1631; but do not readily perceive how it can suit the purpose of the present speaker:

"I know a cave, wherein the bright day's eye,

"Look'd never but aſcance, through a ſmall creeke,

"Or little cranny of the fretted *scarres*;

"There have I ſometimes liv'd," &c.

Again:

"Where is the villain's body?—

"Marry, even heaved over the *ſcarr*, and ſenta ſwimming," &c.

Again:

"Run up to the top of the dreadful *ſcarre*."

Again:

"I ſtood upon the top of the high *ſcarre*."

BER. I'll lend it thee, my dear, but have no power
To give it from me.

DIA. Will you not, my lord?

Ray says, that a *scarre* is a cliff of a rock, or a naked rock on the dry land, from the Saxon *carre*, cautes. He adds, that this word gave denomination to the town of Scarborough.

STEEVENS.

*I see, that men make hopes, in such a scene,
That we'll forsake ourselves.* } i. e. I perceive that while our lovers are making professions of love, and acting their assumed parts in this kind of amorous interlude, they entertain hopes that we shall be betrayed by our passions to yield to their desires. So, in *Much ado about Nothing*: "The sport will be, when they hold an opinion of one another's dotage, and no such matter,—that's the *scene* that I would see," &c. Again, in *The Winter's Tale*:

" — It shall be so my care

" To have you royally appointed, as if

" The *scene* you play, were mine."

The old copy reads:

I see, that men make ropes in such a scarre, &c.

which Mr. Rowe altered to—*make hopes in such affairs*; and all the subsequent editors adopted his correction. It being entirely arbitrary, any emendation that is nearer to the traces of the unintelligible word in the old copy, and affords at the same time an easy sense, is better entitled to a place in the text.

A corrupted passage in the first sketch of *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, suggested to me [*scene*], the emendation now introduced. In the fifth Act Fenton describes to the host his scheme for marrying Anne Page:

" And in a robe of white this night disguised

" Wherein fat Falstaff had [*r. hath*] a mighty *scarre*,

" Must Slender take her," &c.

It is manifest from the corresponding lines in the folio, that *scarre* was printed by mistake for *scene*; for in the folio the passage runs—

" — fat Falstaff

" Hath a great *scene*." MALONE.

Mr. Rowe's emendation is not only liable to objection from its dissimilarity to the reading of the four folios, but also from the awkwardness of his language, where the *literal* resemblance is most, like the words, rejected. In *such affairs*, is a phrase too vague for Shakspeare, when a determined point, to which the preceding conversation had been gradually narrowing, was in question; and to *MAKE hopes*, is as uncouth an expression as can well be imagined.

BER. It is an honour 'longing to our house,
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;
Which were the greatest obloquy i'the world
In me to lose.

DIA. Mine honour's such a ring:
My chastity's the jewel of our house,
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;
Which were the greatest obloquy i'the world
In me to lose: Thus your own proper wisdom
Brings in the champion honour on my part,
Against your vain assault.

BER. Here, take my ring:
Mine house, mine honour, yea, my life be thine,
And I'll be bid by thee.

DIA. When midnight comes, knock at my cham-
ber window;

I'll order take, my mother shall not hear.
Now will I charge you in the band of truth,
When you have conquer'd my yet maiden bed,
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me:
My reasons are most strong; and you shall know
them,

When back again this ring shall be deliver'd:
And on your finger, in the night, I'll put
Another ring; that, what in time proceeds,
May token to the future our past deeds.

Nor is Mr. Malone's supposition, of *scene for scarce*, a whit more
in point; for, first, *scarre*, in every part of England where rocks
abound, is well known to signify the detached protrusion of a large
rock; whereas *scare* is terror or affright. Nor was *scare*, in the first
sketch of *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, a mistake for *scene*, but an
intentional change of ideas; *scare* implying only Falstaff's terror,
but *scene* including the spectator's entertainment. On the supposal
that *make hopes* is the true reading, in *such a scarce*, may be taken
figuratively for in *such an extremity*, i. e. in so desperate a situation.

HENLEY.

Adieu, till then; then, fail not: You have won
A wife of me, though there my hope be done.

BER. A heaven on earth I have won, by wooing
thee. [Exit.

DIA. For which live long to thank both heaven
and me!

You may so in the end. —

My mother told me just how he would woo,
As if she sat in his heart; she says, all men
Have the like oaths: he had sworn to marry me,
When his wife's dead; therefore I'll lie with him,
When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so braid,
Marry that will, I'll live and die a maid:⁵
Only, in this disguise, I think't no sin
To cozen him, that would unjustly win, [Exit.

⁵ — Since Frenchmen are so braid,
Marry that will, I'll live and die a maid:] Braid signifies
crafty or deceitful. So, in Greene's *Never too Late*, 1616:

"Dian rose with all her maids,

"Blushing thus at love his braids."

Chaucer uses the word in the same sense; but as the passage where
it occurs in his *Troilus and Cressida* is contested, it may be necessary
to observe, that BRED is an Anglo-Saxon word, signifying *fraus*,
apud Again, in Tho. Drant's *Translation of Horace's Epistles*,
where its import is not very clear:

"Protesting thee a friend, to plaie the ribbalde at a brade."

In *The Romaunt of the Rose*, v. 1336, Braid seems to mean *forthwith*,
or, *at a jerk*. There is nothing to answer it in the French, except
tenté. STEEVENS.

SCENE III.

The Florentine Camp.

Enter the two French Lords, and two or three Soldiers.

1 LORD. You have not given him his mother's letter?

2 LORD. I have deliver'd it an hour since: there is something in't that flings his nature; for, on the reading it, he changed almost into another man.

1 LORD.⁶ He has much worthy blame laid upon him, for shaking off so good a wife, and so sweet a lady.

⁶ 1 Lord.] The latter editors have with great liberality bestowed lordship upon these interlocutors, who, in the original edition, are called, with more propriety, *capt. E.* and *capt. G.* It is true that *captain E.* in a former scene is called *lord E.* but the subordination in which they seem to act, and the timorous manner in which they converse, determines them to be only captains. Yet as the latter readers of Shakspeare have been used to find them lords, I have not thought it worth while to degrade them in the margin.

JOHNSON;

These two personages may be supposed to be two young French Lords serving in the Florentine camp, where they now appear in their military capacity. In the first scene where the two French Lords are introduced, taking leave of the king, they are called in the original edition, *Lord E.* and *Lord G.*

G. and E. were, I believe, only put to denote the players who performed these characters. In the list of actors prefixed to the first folio, I find the names of Gilburne and Ecclestone, to whom these insignificant parts probably fell. Perhaps, however, these performers first represented the French Lords, and afterwards two captains in the Florentine army; and hence the confusion of the old copy. In the first scene of this act, one of these captains is called throughout, 1 *Lord E.* The matter is of no great importance. MALONE.

2 LORD. Especially he hath incurred the everlasting displeasure of the king, who had even tuned his bounty to sing happiness to him. I will tell you a thing, but you shall let it dwell darkly with you.

1 LORD. When you have spoken it, 'tis dead, and I am the grave of it.

2 LORD. He hath perverted a young gentlewoman here in Florence, of a most chaste renown; and this night he fleshes his will in the spoil of her honour: he hath given her his monumental ring, and thinks himself made in the unchaste composition.

1 LORD. Now, God delay our rebellion; as we are ourselves, what things are we!

2 LORD. Merely our own traitors. And as in the common course of all treasons, we still see them reveal themselves, till they attain to their abhorr'd ends;⁷ so he, that in this action contrives against his own nobility, in his proper stream o'erflows himself.⁸

1 LORD. Is it not meant damnable in us,⁹ to be

⁷ — till they attain to their abhorr'd ends;] This may mean—they are perpetually talking about the mischief they intend to do, till they have obtained an opportunity of doing it. STEEVENS.

⁸ — in his proper stream o'erflows himself.] That is, betrays his own secrets in his own talk. The reply shows that this is the meaning. JOHNSON.

⁹ Is it not meant damnable in us,] I once thought that we ought to read—*Is it not most damnable*; but no change is necessary. Adjectives are often used as adverbs by our author and his contemporaries. So, in *The Winter's Tale*:

“That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant,

“And damnable ungrateful.”

Again, in *Twelfth Night*: “—and as thou drawest, swear her-
vice—.”

trumpeters of our unlawful intents? We shall not then have his company to-night?

2 LORD. Not till after midnight; for he is dieted to his hour.

1 LORD. That approaches apace; I would gladly have him see his company * anatomiz'd; that he might take a measure of his own judgements,³ wherein so curiously he had set this counterfeit.⁴

2 LORD. We will not meddle with him till he come; for his presence must be the whip of the other.

1 LORD. In the mean time, what hear you of these wars?

2 LORD. I hear, there is an overture of peace.

1 LORD. Nay, assure you, a peace concluded.

2 LORD. What will count Roussillon do then? will he travel higher, or return again into France?

1 LORD. I perceive, by this demand, you are not altogether of his council.

Again, in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*:

"Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound."

Again, in Massinger's *Very Woman*:

"I'll beat thee damnable." MALONE.

Mr. M. Mason wishes to read—mean and damnable.

STEEVENS.

* — his company—] i. e. his companion. It is so used in *King Henry V.* MALONE.

³ — he might take a measure of his own judgements,] This is a very just and moral reason. Bertram, by finding how erroneously he has judged, will be less confident, and more easily moved by admonition. JOHNSON.

⁴ — wherein so curiously he had set this counterfeit.] Parolles is the person whom they are going to anatomize. *Counterfeit* besides its ordinary signification,—[a person pretending to be what he is not, signified also in our author's time a false coin, and a picture. The word *set* shows that it is here used in the first and the last of these senses. MALONE.

2 LORD. Let it be forbid, sir! so should I be a great deal of his act.

1 LORD. Sir, his wife, some two months since, fled from his house; her pretence is a pilgrimage to Saint Jaques le grand; which holy undertaking, with most austere sanctimony, she accomplish'd: and, there residing, the tenderness of her nature became as a prey to her grief; in fine, made a groan of her last breath, and now she sings in heaven.

2 LORD. How is this justified?

1 LORD. The stronger part of it by her own letters; which makes her story true, even to the point of her death: her death itself, which could not be her office to say, is come, was faithfully confirm'd by the rector of the place.

2 LORD. Hath the count all this intelligence?

1 LORD. Ay, and the particular confirmations, point from point, to the full arming of the verity.

2 LORD. I am heartily sorry, that he'll be glad of this.

1 LORD. How mightily, sometimes, we make us comforts of our losses!

2 LORD. And how mightily, some other times, we drown our gain in tears! The great dignity, that his valour hath here acquired for him, shall at home be encounter'd with a shame as ample.

1 LORD. The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipp'd them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cherish'd by our virtues.—

Enter a Servant.

How now? where's your master?

SERV. He met the duke in the street, fir, of whom he hath taken a solemn leave; his lordship will next morning for France. The duke hath offered him letters of commendations to the king.

2 LORD. They shall be no more than needful there, if they were more than they can commend.

Enter BERTRAM.

1 LORD. They cannot be too sweet for the king's tartness. Here's his lordship now. How now, my lord, is't not after midnight?

BER. I have to-night despatched sixteen businesses, a month's length a-piece, by an abstract of success: I have conge'd with the duke, done my adieu with his nearest; buried a wife, mourn'd for her; writ to my lady mother, I am returning; entertain'd my convoy; and, between these main parcels of despatch, effected many nicer needs; the last was the greatest, but that I have not ended yet.

2 LORD. If the business be of any difficulty, and this morning your departure hence, it requires haste of your lordship.

BER. I mean, the business is not ended, as fearing to hear of it hereafter: But shall we have this dialogue between the fool and the soldier?—Come, bring forth this counterfeit module;⁵ he

⁵ — *bring forth this counterfeit module;*] *Module* being the pattern of any thing, may be here used in that sense. Bring forth this fellow, who by *counterfeit* virtue pretended to make himself a pattern. JOHNSON.

It appears from Minshieu that *module* and *model* were synonymous.

has deceived me, like a double-meaning prophesier.⁶

2 LORD. Bring him forth : [*Exeunt Soldiers.*] he has sat in the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

BER. No matter ; his heels have deserved it, in usurping his spurs so long.⁷ How does he carry himself?

1 LORD. I have told your lordship already ; the stocks carry him. But, to answer you as you would be understood ; he weeps, like a wench that had shed her milk : he hath confess'd himself to Morgan, whom he supposes to be a friar, from the time of his remembrance, to this very instant disaster of his setting i'the stocks ; and what think you he hath confessed?

BER. Nothing of me, has he?

2 LORD. His confession is taken, and it shall be read to his face : if your lordship be in't, as, I believe you are, you must have the patience to hear it.

In *K. Richard II.* *model* signifies a thing fashioned after an archetype.

"Who was the *model* on thy father's life."

Again, in *K. Henry VIII.* :

"The *model* of our chaste loves, his young daughter."

Our author, I believe, uses the word here in the same sense :—Bring forth this counterfeit *representation* of a foldier. MALONE.

"— a double meaning prophesier.] So, in *Macbeth* :

"That palter with us in a *double sense*,

"And keep the word of promise to our ear,

"But break it to our hope." STEEVENS.

⁷ — in *usurping his spurs so long.*] The punishment of a *recrunt*, or coward, was to have his spurs hacked off. MALONE.

I believe these words allude only to the ceremonial degradation of a knight. I am yet to learn, that the same mode was practised in disgracing dastards of inferior rank. STEEVENS.

*Re-enter Soldiers, with PAROLLES.**

BER. A plague upon him! muffled! he can say nothing of me; hush! hush!

1 LORD. Hoodman comes!—*Porto tartarossa.*

1 SOLD. He calls for the tortures; What will you say without 'em?

PAR. I will confess what I know without constraint; if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can say no more.

1 SOLD. *Bosko chimurcho.*

2 LORD. *Boblibindo chicurmurco.*

1 SOLD. You are a merciful general:—Our general bids you answer to what I shall ask you out of a note.

PAR. And truly, as I hope to live.

1 SOLD. *First demand of him how many horse the duke is strong.* What say you to that?

PAR. Five or six thousand; but very weak and unservicable: the troops are all scatter'd, and the commanders very poor rogues, upon my reputation and credit, and as I hope to live.

1 SOLD. Shall I set down your answer so?

PAR. Do; I'll take the sacrament on't, how and which way you will.

BER. All's one to him.² What a past-saving slave is this!

* *Re-enter soldiers, with Parolles.*] See an account of the examination of one of Henry the Eighth's captains, who had gone over to the enemy (which may possibly have suggested this of Parolles) in *The Life of Jack Wilton*, 1594. 5g. C. iii. RITSON.

² *All's one to him.*] In the old copy these words are given by

1 LORD. You are deceived, my lord; this is monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist, (that was his own phrase,) that had the whole theorick^s of war in the knot of his scarf, and the practice in the chape of his dagger.

2 LORD. I will never trust a man again, for keeping his sword clean; nor believe he can have every thing in him, by wearing his apparel neatly.

1 SOLD. Well, that's set down.

PAR. Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I will say true,—or thereabouts, set down.—for I'll speak truth.

1 LORD. He's very near the truth in this.

BER. But I con him no thanks for't,^s in the nature he delivers it."

mistake to Parolles. The present regulation, which is clearly right, was suggested by Mr. Steevens. MALONE.

It will be better to give these words to one of the Dumains, than to Bertram. RITSON.

" — that had the whole thenrick —] i. e. theory. Sn, in Montaigne's Essays, translated by J. Florio, 1603: "They know the theorique of all things, but you must seek who shall put it in practice." MALONE.

In 1597 was published "*Theorique and Practise of Warre*," written by Don Philip Prince of Castil, by Don Bernardino de Mendoza. Translated out of the Castilian tongue in English, by Sir Edward Hoby, Knight." 4to. REED.

" — I con him no thanks for't,] To con thanks exactly answers the French *savoir gré*. To con is to know. I meet with the same expression in *Pierre Pennileffe his Supplication*, &c.

" — I believe he will con thee little thanks for it."

Again, in *Wily Beguiled*, 1606:

"I can master Churms thanks for this."

Again, in *Any Thing for a Quiet Life*: "He would not trust you with it, I con him thanks for it." STEEVENS.

" — in the nature he delivers it.] He has said truly that our numbers are about five or six thousand; but having described them as "weak and unserviceable," &c. I am not much obliged to him. MALONE.

PAR. Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

1 SOLD. Well, that's set down.

PAR. I humbly thank you, sir: a truth's a truth, the rogues are marvellous poor.

1 SOLD. *Demand of him, of what strength they are a-foot.* What say you to that?

PAR. By my troth, sir, if I were to live this present hour,³ I will tell true. Let me see: Spurio a hundred and fifty, Sebastian so many, Corambus so many, Jaques so many; Guiltian, Cosmo, Lodowick, and Gratii, two hundred fifty each: mine own company, Chitopher, Vaumond, Bentii, two hundred and fifty each: so that the muster-file, rotten and sound, upon my life, amounts not to fifteen thousand poll; half of the which dare not shake the snow from off their calsocks,⁴ lest they shake themselves to pieces.

Rather, perhaps, because his narrative, however near the truth, was uttered for a treacherous purpose. STEEVENS.

³ — *if I were to live this present hour, &c.* I do not understand this passage. Perhaps (as an anonymous correspondent observes) we should read:—if I were to live *but* this present hour.

STEEVENS.

Perhaps he meant to say—if I were to *die* this present hour. But fear may be supposed to occasion the mistake, as poor frightened Scrub cries: "Spare all I have, and take my life." TOLLET.

⁴ — *off their calsocks.* Calsock signifies a horseman's loose coat, and is used in that sense by the writers of the age of Shakespeare. So, in *Every Man in his Humour*, Brainworm says:—"He will never come within the sight of a calsock or a musquet-rest again." Something of the same kind likewise appears to have been part of the dress of rusticks, in *Mucedorus*, an anonymous comedy, 1598, erroneously attributed to Shakespeare:

"Within my closet there does hang a calsock,

"Though base the weed is, 'twas a shepherd's."

Again, in *Whetstone's Promos and Cassandra*, 1578:

"——— I will not stick to wear

"A blue calsock."

On this occasion a woman is the speaker.

BER. What shall be done to him?

1 LORD. Nothing, but let him have thanks. Demand of him my conditions,⁵ and what credit I have with the duke.

1 SOLD. Well, that's set down. *You shall demand of him, whether one Captain Dumain be i' the camp, a Frenchman; what his reputation is with the duke, what his valour, honesty, and expertness in wars; or whether he thinks, it were not possible, with well-weighing sums of gold, to corrupt him to a revolt. What say you to this? what do you know of it?*

PAR. I beseech you, let me answer to the particular of the intergatories:⁶ Demand them singly.

1 SOLD. Do you know this captain Dumain?

PAR. I know him: he was a botcher's 'prentice in Paris, from whence he was whipp'd for getting the sheriff's fool⁷ with child; a dumb innocent, that could not say him, nay.⁸

[DUMAIN lifts up his hand in anger.

So again, Puttenham, in his *Art of Poetry*, 1589:—"Who would not think it a ridiculous thing to see a lady in her milk-house with a velvet gown, and at a bridal in her *cassock* of *meccado*?"

In *The Hollander*, a comedy by Glapthorne, 1640, it is again spoken of as part of a soldier's dress:

"Here, sir, receive this military *cassock*, it has seen service."

"—— This military *cassock* has, I fear, some military hangbys." STEEVENS.

⁵ — my conditions,] i. e. my disposition and character. See Vol. VI. p. 29, n. 8. MALONE.

⁶ — intergatories:] i. e. interrogatories. REED.

⁷ — the sheriff's fool —] We are not to suppose that this was a *foe* kept by the sheriff for his diversion. The custody of all *ideots*, &c. possessed of landed property, belonged to the King, who was intitled to the income of their lands, but obliged to find them with necessaries. This prerogative, when there was a large estate in the case, was generally granted to some court-favourite, or other person who made suit for and had interest enough to obtain it,

BER. Nay, by your leave, hold your hands: though I know, his brains are forfeit to the next tile that falls.⁹

I SOLD. Well, is this captain in the duke of Florence's camp?

PAR. Upon my knowledge, he is, and lousy.

which was called *begging a fool*. But where the land was of inconsiderable value, the *natural* was maintained out of the profits, by the *sheriff*, who accounted for them to the crown. As for those unhappy creatures who had neither possessions nor relations, they seem to have been considered as a species of property, being sold or given with as little ceremony, treated as capriciously, and very often, it is to be feared, left to perish as miserably, as dogs or cats. RITSON.

⁹ — a dumb innocent, that could not say him, nay.] *Innocent* does not here signify a person without guilt or blame; but means, in the good-natured language of our ancestors, an *idiot* or *natural fool*. Agreeably to this sense of the word is the following entry of a burial in the parish register of Charlewood in Surrey:— "Thomas Sole, an *innocent* about the age of fifty years and upwards, buried 19th September, 1605." WHALLEY.

Doll Common, in *The Alchemist*, being asked for her opinion of the *Widow Pliant*, observes that she is—"a good dull *innocent*." Again, in *I Would and I Would Not*, a poem, by B. N. 1614:

- "I would I were an *innocent*, a foole,
- "That can do nothing else but laugh or eric,
- "And eate fat meate, and never go to schoole,
- "And be in love, but with an apple-pie;
- "Weare a pide coate, a cockes combe, and a bell,
- "And think it did become me passing well."

Mr. Douce observes to me, that the term—*innocent*, was originally French.

See also note on Ford's *'Tis Pity she's a Whore*, new edition of Doddsley's Collection of Old Plays, Vol. VIII. p. 24.

STEVENS.

⁹ — though I know, his brains are forfeit to the next tile that falls.] In Lucian's *Contemplatives*, Mercury makes Charon remark a man that was killed by the falling of a tile upon his head, whilst he was in the act of putting off an engagement to the next day:—*ἡ μελαγχολία, ἀπὸ τοῦ καὶ αἰεὶ ἐπιτεύουσα, καὶ οὐδ' ἔτι λυπηραία, ἀπέκτενεν αὐτὸν*. See the life of Pyrrhus in Plutarch. Pyrrhus was killed by a tile. S. W.

1 LORD. Nay, look not so upon me; we shall hear of your lordship⁹ anon.

1 SOLD. What is his reputation with the duke?

PAR. The duke knows him for no other but a poor officer of mine; and writ to me this other day, to turn him out o'the band: I think, I have his letter in my pocket.

1 SOLD. Marry, we'll search.

PAR. In good sadness, I do not know; either it is there, or it is upon a file, with the duke's other letters, in my tent.

1 SOLD. Here 'tis; here's a paper; Shall I read it to you?

PAR. I do not know, if it be it, or no.

BER. Our interpreter does it well.

1 LORD. Excellently.

1 SOLD. Dian. *The count's a fool, and full of gold,*^a—

PAR. That is not the duke's letter, sir; that is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one Diana, to take heed of the allurements of one

^a —your lordship—] The old copy has *Lord*. In the Mss. of our author's age they scarcely ever wrote *Lordship* at full length.

MALONE.

^a Dian. *The count's a fool, and full of gold.*] After this line there is apparently a line lost, there being no rhyme that corresponds to *gold*. JOHNSON.

I believe this line is incomplete. The poet might have written: Dian.

The count's a fool, and full of golden store—or or; and this addition rhymes with the following alternate verses.

SLEEVENS.

May we not suppose the former part of the letter to have been prose, as the concluding words are? The sonnet intervenes.

The feigned letter from Olivia to Malvolio, is partly prose, partly, verse. MALONE.

count Rouffillon, a foolish idle boy, but, for all that, very ruttish: I pray you, sir, put it up again.

1 SOLD. Nay, I'll read it first, by your favour.

PAR. My meaning in't, I protest, was very honest in the behalf of the maid! for I knew the young count to be a dangerous and lascivious boy; who is a whale to virginity, and devours up all the fry it finds.

BER. Damnable, both sides rogue!

1 SOLD. *When he swears oaths, bid him drop gold,
and take it;*

After he scores, he never pays the score:

*Half won, is match well made; match, and well make
it;*³

He ne'er pays after debts, take it before;

³ *Half won, is match well made; match, and well make it;*]
This line has no meaning that I can find. I read, with a very slight alteration: *Half won is match well made; watch, and well make it.* That is, a match well made is half won; watch, and make it well.

This is, in my opinion, not all the error. The lines are misplaced, and should be read thus:

Half won is match well made; watch, and well make it;

When he swears oaths, bid him drop gold, and take it.

After he scores, he never pays the score:

He ne'er pays after-debts, take it before,

And say——

That is, take his money, and leave him to himself. When the players had lost the second line, they tried to make a connection out of the rest. Part is apparently in couplets, and the whole was probably uniform. JOHNSON.

Perhaps we should read:

Half won is match well made, match an' we'll make it.

i. e. if we mean to make any match of it at all. STEEVENS.

There is no need of change. The meaning is, "A match well made, is half won; make your match therefore, but make it well."

M. MASON.

The verses having been designed by Parolles as a caution to Diana, after informing her that Bertram is both rich and faithless,

And say, a soldier, Dian, told thee this,
Men are to mell with, boys are not to kifs:⁴
For count of this, the count's a fool, I know it
Who pays before, but not when he does owe it.

Thine, as he vow'd to thee in thine ear,

PAROLLES.

he admmnishes her not to yield up her virtue to his *soths*, but his *gold*; and having enforced this advice by an adage, recommends her to comply with his importunity, provided half the sum for which she shall ripulate be previously paid her:—*Half wen is match well made; watch, and well makes it.* HENLEY.

Gain half of what he offers, and you are well off; if you yield to him, make your bargain secure. MALONE.

⁴ *Men are to mell with, boys are not to kifs:*] The meaning of the word *mell*, from *miler*, French, is obvious. See, in *Ans very Excellent and Delicabill Treatise, intituled* PHILOTUS, &c. 1603:

"But he na husband is to mee;

"Then how could we twa disagree

"That never had na *melling*."

"Na *melling*, mistress? will you then

"Deny the marriage of that man?"

Again in *The Corpus Christi Play*, acted at Coventry. MSS. Cott. Vesp. VIII. p. 122:

"A fayr yonge qwene herby doth dwelle,

"Both frech and gay upon to loke,

"And a tall man with her doth *mellis*,

"The way into hyr chawmer ryght evyn he toke."

The argument of this piece is *The Woman taken in Adultery*.

STEVENS.

Men are to mell with, boys are oot to kifs:] Mr. Theobald and the subsequent editors read—*boys are but to kifs*. I do not see any need of change, nor do I believe that any opposition was intended between the words *mell* and *kifs*. Parolles wishes to recommend himself to Diana, and for that purpose advises her to grant her favours to *men*, and not to *boys*; He himself calls his letter "An advertisement to Diana to take heed of the allurements of one count Roussillon, a foolish idle *boy*."

To *mell* is used by our author's contemporaries in the sense of *meddling*, without the indecent idea which Mr. Theobald supposed

BER. He shall be whipp'd through the army,
with this rhyme in his forehead.

2 LORD. This is your devoted friend, fir, the manifold linguist, and the armipotent foldier.

BER. I could endure any thing before but a cat,
and now he's a cat to me.

1 SOLD. I perceive, fir, by the general's looks,⁵
we shall be fain to hang you.

PAR. My life, fir, in any case: not that I am
afraid to die; but that, my offences being many,
I would repent out the remainder of nature: let me
live, fir, in a dungeon, i'the stocks, or any where,
so I may live.⁶

1 SOLD. We'll see what may be done, so you con-
fess freely; therefore, once more to this captain
Dumain: You have answer'd to his reputation with
the duke, and to his valour: What is his honesty?

PAR. He will steal, fir, an egg out of a cloister;⁷

to be couched under the word in this place. So, in Hall's *Satires*,
1597:

"Hence, ye profane; mell out with holy things."

Again, in Spenser's *Fairy Queen*, B. IV. c. 1:

"With holy father his not with such things to mell."

MALONE.

⁵ — by the *general's looks*,] The old copy has — by *your*. The
emendation was made by the editor of the second folio, and the
misprint probably arose from y* in the MS. being taken for y*.

MALONE.

⁶ — *let me live, fir, in a dungeon, i'the stocks, or any where,
so I may live.*] Smith might have had this abject sentiment of
Parolles in his memory, when he put the following words into the
mouth of Lycos, in *Phædra and Hippolytus*:

"O, chain me, whip me, let me be the scorn

"Of sordid rabbles, and insulting crowds;

"Give me but life, and make that life most wretched!"

STEEVENS.

⁷ — *an egg out of a cloister*;] I know not that *cloister*, though it
may etymologically signify *any thing shut*, is used by our author

for rapes and ravishments he parallels Nessus. He professes not keeping of oaths; in breaking them, he is stronger than Hercules. He will lie, sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool: drunkenness is his best virtue; for he will be swine-drunk; and in his sleep he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him; but they know his conditions, and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, sir, of his honesty: he has every thing that an honest man should not have; what an honest man should have, he has nothing.

1 LORD. I begin to love him for this.

BER. For this description of thine honesty? A pox upon him for me, he is more and more a cat.

1 SOLD. What say you to his expertness in war?

PAR. Faith, sir, he has led the drum before the English tragedians,—to belie him, I will not,—and more of his soldiiership I know not; except, in that country, he had the honour to be the officer at a place there call'd Mile-end,¹ to instruct for the doubling of files: I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

1 LORD. He hath out-villain'd villainy so far, that the rarity redeems him.

BER. A pox on him! he's a cat still.²

otherwise than for a monastery, and therefore I cannot guess whence this hyperbole could take its original: perhaps it means only this: *He will steal any thing, however trifling, from any place, however holy.*

JOHNSON.

Robbing the spital, is a common phrase, of the like import.

M. MASON.

¹ — at a place there call'd Mile-end,] See a note on *King Henry IV.* P. II. A& III. sc. ii. MALONE.

² — he's a cat still.] That is, throw him how you will, he lights upon his legs. JOHNSON.

1 SOLD. His qualities being at this poor price, I need not ask you, if gold will corrupt him to revolt.

PAR. Sir, for a *quart d'ecu*⁹ he will sell the fee-simple of his salvation, the inheritance of it; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.

1 SOLD. What's his brother, the other captain Dumain?

2 LORD. Why does he ask him of me?²

1 SOLD. What's he?

PAR. E'en a crow of the same nest; not altogether

Bertram has no such meaning. In a speech or two before, he declares his aversion to a cat, and now only continues in the same opinion, and says he hates Parolles as much as he hates a cat. The other explanation will not do, as Parolles could not be meant by the cat, which always lights on its legs; for Parolles is now in a fair way to be totally disconcerted. STEEVENS.

I am still of my former opinion. The speech was applied by King James to Coke, which respect to his subtilties of law, that throw him which way we would, he could still, like a cat, light upon his legs. JOHNSON.

The count had said, that formerly a cat was the only thing in the world which he could not endure; but that now Parolles was as much the object of his aversion as that animal. After Parolles has gone through his next list of falsehoods, the count adds, "he's more and more a cat,"—still more and more the object of my aversion than he was. As Parolles proceeds still further, one of the Frenchmen observes, that the singularity of his impudence and villainy redeems his character.—Not, at all, replies the count, "he's a cat still;" he is as hateful to me as ever. There cannot therefore, I think, be any doubt that Dr. Johnson's interpretation, "throw him how you will, he lights upon his legs,"—is founded on a misapprehension. MALONE.

⁹ — for a quart d'ecu—] The fourth part of the smaller French crown; about eight-pence of our money. MALONE.

² Why does he ask him of me?] This is nature. Every man is on such occasions more willing to hear his neighbour's character than his own. JOHNSON.

so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil. He excels his brother for a coward, yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is: In a retreat he out-runs any lackey; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.

1 SOLD. If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine?

PAR. Ay, and the captain of his horse, count Rouffillon.

1 SOLD. I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.

PAR. I'll no more drumming; a plague of all drums! Only to seem to deserve well, and to beguile the supposition³ of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger: Yet, who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken?

[*Aside.*

1 SOLD. There is no remedy, sir, but you must die: the general says, you, that have so traiterously discovered the secrets of your army, and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headsman, off with his head.

PAR. O Lord, sir; let me live, or let me see my death!

1 SOLD. That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends. [Unmuffling him.
So, look about you; know you any here?

BER. Good morrow, noble captain.

2 LORD. God bless you, captain Parolles.

1 LORD. God save you, noble captain.

³ ——— to beguile the supposition —} That is, to deceive the opinion, to make the count think me a man that deserves well.

2 LORD. Captain, what greeting will you to my lord Lafeu? I am for France.

1 LORD. Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the count Roussillon? an I were not a very coward, I'd compel it of you; but fare you well.

[*Exeunt* BERTRAM, Lords, &c.]

1 SOLD. You are undone, captain; all but your scarf, that has a knot on't yet.

PAR. Who cannot be crush'd with a plot?

1 SOLD. If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare you well, sir; I am for France too; we shall speak of you there. [*Exit.*]

PAR. Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great,
 'Twould burst at this: captain I'll be no more;
 But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft
 As captain shall: simply the thing I am
 Shall make me live. Who knows himself a braggart,
 Let him fear this; for it will come to pass,
 That every braggart shall be found an ass.
 Rust, sword! cool, blushes! and Parolles, live
 Safest in shame! being fool'd, by foolery thrive!
 There's place, and means, for every man alive.
 I'll after them. [*Exit.*]

S C E N E IV.

Florence. *A Room in the Widow's House.*

Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA.

HEL. That you may well perceive I have not
wrong'd you,

One of the greatest in the christian world
Shall be my surety; 'fore whose throne, 'tis needful,
Ere I can perfect mine intents, to kneel:
Time was, I did him a desired office,
Dear almost as his life; which gratitude
Through flinty Tartar's bosom would peep forth,
And answer, thanks: I duly am inform'd,
His grace is at Marseilles;⁴ to which place
We have convenient convoy. You must know,
I am supposed dead: the army breaking,
My husband hies him home; where, heaven aiding,
And by the leave of my good lord the king,
We'll be, before our welcome.

WID. Gentle, madam

You never had a servant, to whose trust
Your business was more welcome.

HEL. Nor you,⁵ mistress,

Ever a friend, whose thoughts more truly labour
To recompence your love; doubt not, but heaven
Hath brought me up to be your daughter's dower,

⁴ *His grace is at Marseilles; &c.]* From this line, and others, it appears that *Marseilles* was pronounced by our author as a word of three syllables. The old copy has here *Marcella*, and in the last scene of this *Act* *Marcellus*. MALONE.

⁵ *Nor you,]* Old copy — *Nor your*. Corrected by Mr. Rowe.

MALONE.

As it hath fated her to be my motive⁵
 And helper to a husband. But O strange men!
 That can such sweet use make of what they hate,
 When saucy truffling of the cozen'd thoughts
 Defiles the pitchy night!⁶ so lust doth play
 With what it loaths, for that which is away:
 But more of this hereafter:— You, Diana,
 Under my poor instructions yet must suffer
 Something in my behalf.

DIA. Let death and honesty⁷
 Go with your impositions,⁸ I am yours
 Upon your will to suffer.

HEL. Yet, I pray you,—
 But with the word, the time will bring on summer,
 When briars shall have leaves as well as thorns,
 And be as sweet as sharp.⁹ We must away;

⁵ — my motive—] *Motive* for assistant. WARBURTON.

Rather for *mover*. So in the last Ad of this play:

" — all impediments in fancy's course

" *Are motives of more fancy.*" MALONE.

⁶ *When saucy truffling of the cozen'd thoughts*

Defiles the pitchy night!] *Saucy* may very properly signify
luxurious, and by consequence *lascivious*. JOHNSON.

So, in *Measure for Measure*:

" as to remit

" *Their fancy sweetness that do coin heaven's image*

" *In stamps that are forbid.*" MALONE.

⁷ — *death and honesty*—] i. e. an honest death. So, in another
 of our author's plays, we have "death and honour" for *honour-
 able death*. STEEVENS.

⁸ — your impositions,] i. e. your commands. MALONE.

An *imposition* is a talk imposed. The term is still current in
 Universities. STEEVENS.

⁹ *But with the word, the time will bring on summer, &c.*] *With the
 word*, i. e. in an instant of time. WARBURTON.

The meaning of this observation is, that as *briars* have *sweet-
 ness* with their *prickles*, so shall these troubles be recompensed with
 joy. JOHNSON.

Our waggon is prepar'd, and time revives us :³

I would read :

Yet I 'troy you

But with the word : the time will bring, &c.

And then the sense will be, "I only frighten you by mentioning the word *suffer*; for a short time will bring on the season of happiness and delight." BLACKSTONE.

As the beginning of Helen's reply is evidently a designed apostrophe, a break ought to follow it, thus :

Helen. Yet, I pray you :

The sense appears to be this:—Do not think that I would engage you in any service that should expose you to such an alternative, or indeed, to any lasting inconvenience; *But with the word, i. e.* But on the contrary, you shall no sooner have delivered what you will have to testify on my account, than the irksomeness of the service will be over, and every pleasant circumstance to result from it, will instantaneously appear. HENLEY.

³ *Our waggon is prepar'd, and time revives us:]* The word *revives* conveys so little sense, that it seems very liable to suspicion.

— *and time revives us :*

i. e. looks us in the face, calls upon us to hasten.

WARRINGTON.

The present reading is corrupt, and I am afraid the emendation none of the soundest. I never remember to have seen the word *revive*. One may as well leave blunders as make them. Why may we not read for a shift, without much effort, *the time invites us*? JOHNSON.

To *vye* and *revye* were terms at several ancient games at cards, but particularly at *Gleeke*. So, in *Greene's Art of Cony-catching*, 1592: "I'll either win something or lose something, therefore I'll *vye* and *revie* every card at my pleasure, till either yours or mine come out; therefore '12d. upon this card, my card comes first." Again: "— so they *vye* and *revie* till some ten shillings be on the stake," &c. Again: "This felleth the Conie, and the sweetness of gain makes him frolick, and none more ready to *vye* and *revie* than he." Again: "So they *vye* and *revie*, and for once that the Barnacle wins, the Conie gets five." Perhaps, however, *revies* is not the true reading. Shakspeare might have written—*time reviles us*, *i. e.* reproaches us for wasting it. Yet, —*time reviveth us* may mean, it *revives* us. So, in another play of our author:

"— I would *revine* the soldiers' hearts,

"Because I found them ever as myself." STEEVENS.

All's well that ends well:² still the fine's³ the crown;
Whate'er the course, the end is the renown.

[*Exit.*

SCENE V.

Rouffillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

Enter Countess, LAFEU, and Clown.

LAF. No, no, no, your son was misled with a snipt-taffata fellow there; whose villainous saffron would have made all the unbaked and doughy youth of a nation in his colour:⁴ your daughter-in-law

Time revives us, seems to refer to the happy and speedy termination of their embarrassments. She had just before said:

"With the word, the time will bring on summer."

HENLEY.

* *All's well that ends well*: } So, in *The Spanish Tragedy*:

"The end is crown of every work well done."

All's well that ends well, is one of Camden's proverbial sentences.

MALONE.

² — *the fine's* — } i. e. the end. So, in *The London Prodigal*,
1603:

"Nature hath done the last for me, and there's the fine."

MALONE.

⁴ — *whose villainous saffron would have made all the unbaked and doughy youth of a nation in his colour*: Parolles is represented as an affected follower of the fashion, and an encourager of his master to run into all the follies of it; where he says, "Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords — they wear themselves in the cap of time — and though the devil lead the measure, such are to be followed." Here some particularities of fashionable dress are ridiculed. *Snipt-taffata* needs no explanation; but *villainous saffron* is more obscure. This alludes to a fantastic fashion, then much followed, of using yellow starch for their bands and ruffs. So, Fletcher, in his *Queen of Corinth*:

" — — Has he familiarly

"Dillik'd your yellow starch; or said your doubles

"Was not exactly frenchified? —"

had been alive at this hour; and your son here at home, more advanced by the king, than by that red-tail'd humble-bee I speak of.

And Jonson's *Devil's an Ass*:

"Carmen and chimney-sweepers are got into the *yellow starch*." This was invented by one Turner, a tire-woman, a court-bawd; and, in all respects, 'of so infamous a character, that her invention deserved the name of *villainous saffron*. This woman was, afterwards, amongst the miscreants concerned in the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury, for which she was hanged at Tyburn, and would die in a *yellow ruff* of her own invention: which made yellow starch so odious, that it immediately went out of fashion. 'Tis this, then, to which Shakspeare alludes: but using the word *saffron* for *yellow*, a new idea presented itself, and he pursues his thought under a quite different allusion — *Whose villainous saffron would have made all the unbaked and doughy youths of a nation in his colour*, i. e. of his temper and disposition. Here the general custom of that time, of colouring *paste* with saffron, is alluded to. So, in *The Winter's Tale*:

"I must have *saffron* to colour the warden pyes."

WARBURTON.

This play was probably written several years before the death of Sir Thomas Overbury.—The plain meaning of the passage seems to be:—"Whose evil qualities are of so deep a dye, as to be sufficient to corrupt the most innocent, and to render them of the same disposition with himself." MALONE.

Stubbs, in his *Anatomic of Abuses*, published in 1595, speaks of starch of various colours:

"—The one arch or pillar wherewith the devil's kingdome of great ruffles is underpropped, is a certain kind of liquid matter which they call *starch*, wherein the devill hath learned them to wash and die their ruffles, which, being drie, will stand stiff and inflexible about their neckes. And this starch they make of divers substances, sometimes of wheate flower, of branne, and other graines: sometimes of rootes, and sometimes of other thinges: of all colours and hues, as white, redde, blew, purple, and the like."

In *The World tsst'd at Tennis*, a masque by Middleton, the *five starches* are personified, and introduced contesting for superiority. Again, in *Alibonazar*, 1615:

"What price bears wheat and *saffron*, that your band's so stiff and *yellow*?"

Again, in Heywood's *If you know not Me, you know Nobody*,

COUNT. I would, I had not known him!⁴ it was the death of the most virtuous gentlewoman, that ever nature had praise for creating: if she had partaken of my flesh, and cost me the dearest groans of a mother, I could not have owed her a more rooted love.

LAF. 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady: we may pick a thousand fallads, ere we light on such another herb.

CLO. Indeed, sir, she was the sweet-majoram of the fallad, or, rather the herb of grace.⁵

LAF. They are not fallad-herbs, you knave, they are nose-herbs.

CLO. I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, sir, I have not much skill in grafs.⁶

LAF. Whether dost thou profess thyself; a knave, or a fool?

CLO. A fool, sir, at a woman's service, and a knave at a man's.

LAF. Your distinction?

CLO. I would cozen the man of his wife, and do his service.

1606: " — have taken an order to wear yellow garters, points, and shoe-tying, and 'tis thought yellow will grow a custom."

" It has been long used at London."

It may be added, that in the year 1446, a parliament was held at Trim in Ireland, by which the natives were ordered, among other things, not to wear shirts stained with *safron*. STEEVENS.

See a note on *Albumazar*. Doddsley's *Collection of Old Plays*, Vol. VII. p. 156, edit. 1780. REED.

⁴ *I would, I had not known him!* | This dialogue serves to connect the incidents of Parolles with the main plan of the play. JOHNSON.

⁵ — *herb of grace*. | i. e. rue. So, in *Hamlet*: "there's rue for you—we may call it *herb of grace* o' Sundays." STEEVENS.

⁶ — *in grafs*. | The old copy, by an evident error of the press, reads — *grace*. The correction was made by Mr. Rowe. The word *fallad* in the preceding speech was also supplied by him. MALONE.

LAF. So you were a knave at his service, indeed.

CLO. And I would give his wife my bauble, sir, to do her service.⁶

LAF. I will subscribe for thee; thou art both knave and fool.

CLO. At your service.

LAF. No, no, no.

CLO. Why, sir, if I cannot serve you, I can serve as great a prince as you are.

⁶ — I would give his wife my bauble, sir, to do her service.] Part of the furniture of a fool was a *bauble*, which, though it be generally taken to signify any thing of small value, has a precise and determinable meaning. It is, in short, a kind of truncheon with a head carved on it, which the fool anciently carried in his hand. There is a representation of it in a picture of Watteau, formerly in the collection of Dr. Mead, which is engraved by Baron, and called *Comédiens Italiens*. A faint resemblance of it may be found in the frontispiece of L. de Guernier to *King Lear*, in Mr. Pope's edition in duodecimo. SIR J. HAWKINS.

So, in Marston's *Dutch Courtesan*, 1604:

" — if a fool, we must bear his *bauble*."

Again, in *The Two Angry Women of Abingdon*, 1599: "The fool will not leave his *bauble* for the Tower of London."

Again, in *Jack Drum's Entertainment*, 1601:

"She is enamoured of the fool's *bauble*."

In the *STULTIFERA NAVIS*, 1497, are several representations of this instrument, as well as in *Cocke's Lorel's Bole*, printed by Wynkyn de Worde. Again, in *Lyte's Herbal*: "In the hollownes of the said flower (the great blue wolfe's-bane) grow two small crooked hayres, somewhat great at the end, fashioned like a *fool's bable*." An ancient proverb, in Ray's collection, points out the materials of which these *baubles* were made: "If every fool should wear a *bauble*, fewel would be dear." See figure 12, in the plate at the end of *The First Part of King Henry IV.* with Mr. Tollet's explanation. SEEVERS.

The word *bauble* is here used in two senses. The Clown had another *bauble* besides that which the editor alludes to. M. MASON.

When Cromwell, 1653, forcibly turned out the rump parliament, he bid the soldiers "take away that *fool's bauble*," pointing to the speaker's mace. BLACKSTONE.

LAF. Who's that? a Frenchman?

CLO. Faith, fir, he has an English name;⁷ but his phisnomy is more hotter in France, than there.⁸

LAF. What prince is that?

CLO. The black prince,⁹ fir, *alias*, the prince of darkness; *alias*, the devil.

LAF. Hold thee, there's my purse: I give thee not this to suggest thee from thy master² thou talk'st of; serve him still.

CLO. I am a woodland fellow, fir, that always loved a great fire;³ and the master I speak of, ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the

⁷ — an English name;] The old copy reads *maine*.

STEEVENS.

Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

Maine, or *head of hair*, agrees better with the context than *name*. His hair was thick. HENLEY.

⁸ — his phisnomy is more hotter in France, than there.} This is intolerable nonsense. The stupid editors, because the devil was talked of, thought no quality would suit him but *hotter*. We should read, more *honour'd*. A joke upon the French people, as if they held a dark complexion, which is natural to them, in more estimation than the English do, who are generally white and fair.

WARBURTON.

The allusion is, in all probability, to the *Merbas Gallicus*.

STEEVENS.

⁹ The black prince,} Bishop Hall, in his *Satires*, B. V. Sat. ii. has given the same name to Pluto: "So the black prince is broken loose againe," &c. HOLT WHITE.

² — to suggest thee from thy master —} Thus the old copy. The modern editors read — *seduce*, but without authority. To *suggest* had anciently the same meaning. So, in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*:

"Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested,

"I nightly lodge her in an upper tower." STEEVENS.

³ I am a woodland fellow, fir, &c.} Shakspeare is but rarely guilty of such impious trash. And it is observable, that when he always puts that into the mouth of his *fools*, which is now grown the characteristic of the *fine gentleman*. WARBURTON.

world³ let his nobility remain in his court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter: some, that humble themselves, may; but the many will be too chill and tender; and they'll be for the flowery way, that leads to the broad gate, and the great fire.⁴

LAF. Go thy ways, I begin to be a-weary of thee; and I tell thee so before, because I would not fall out with thee. Go thy ways; let my horses be well look'd to, without any tricks.

CLO. If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir, they shall be jades' tricks; which are their own right by the law of nature. [Exit.

LAF. A shrewd knave, and an unhappy.⁵

COUNT. So he is. My lord, that's gone, made himself much sport out of him: by his authority he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for his fauciness; and, indeed, he has no pace, but runs where he will.⁶

LAF. I like him well; 'tis not amiss: and I was about to tell you, Since I heard of the good lady's

³ — But, sure, he is the prince of the world,] I think we should read — But since he is, &c. and thus Sir T. Hanmer. STEEVENS.

⁴ — the flowery way, — and the great fire.]. The same impious stuff occurs again in *Macbeth*: "— the primrose way to the everlasting bonfire." STEEVENS.

⁵ — unhappy.] i. e. mischievously waggish, unlucky. JOHNSON.
So, in *King Henry VIII*:

"You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,

"I should judge now unhappily." STEEVENS.

⁶ So he is. My lord, that's gone, made himself much sport out of him: by his authority he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for his fauciness; and, indeed, he has no pace, but runs where he will.] Should not we read — no place, that is, no station, or office in the family? TYRWHITT.

A pace is a certain or prescribed walk; so we say of a man meanly obsequious, that he has learned his paces, and of a horse who moves irregularly, that he has no paces. JOHNSON.

death, and that my lord your son was upon his return home, I moved the king my master, to speak in the behalf of my daughter; which, in the minority of them both, his majesty, out of a self-gracious remembrance, did first propose: his highness hath promised me to do it: and, to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived against your son, there is no fitter matter. How does your ladyship like it?

COUNT. With very much content, my lord, and I wish it happily effected.

LAF. His highness comes post from Marseilles, of as able body as when he number'd thirty; he will be here to-morrow, or I am deceived by him that in such intelligence hath seldom fail'd.

COUNT. It rejoices me, that I hope I shall see him ere I die. I have letters, that my son will be here to-night: I shall beseech your lordship, to remain with me till they meet together.

LAF. Madam, I was thinking, with what manners I might safely be admitted.

COUNT. You need but plead your honourable privilege.

LAF. Lady, of that I have made a bold charter; but, I thank my God, it holds yet.

Re-enter Clown.

CLO. O madam, yonder's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on's face: whether there be a scar under it, or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet: his left cheek is a cheek of two pile and a half, but his right cheek is worn bare.

LAF. A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good livery of honour: ⁶ so, belike, is that.

⁷ Laf. *A scar nobly got, &c.*] This speech in the second folio and the modern editions is given to the countess, and perhaps

CLO. But it is your carbonado'd⁷ face.

LAF. Let us go see your son, I pray you; I long to talk with the young noble soldier

CLO. 'Faith, there's a dozen of 'em, with delicate fine hats, and most courteous feathers, which bow the head, and nod at every man.⁸ [*Exeunt.*

ACT V. SCENE I.

Marfeilles. *A Street.*

Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA, with two Attendants.

HEL. But this exceeding posling, day and night,
Must wear your spirits low: we cannot help it;
But, since you have made the days and nights as one,
To wear your gentle limbs in my affairs,
Be bold, you do so grow in my requital,
As nothing can unroot you. In happy time; —

rightly. It is more probable that she should have spoken thus favourably of Bertram, than Lafew. In the original copy, to each of the speeches of the countess *Lad.* or *La.* [i. e. *Lady*] is prefixed; so that the mistake was very easy. MALONE.

I do not discover the improbability of this commendation from Lafew, who is at present anxious to marry his own daughter to Bertram. STEEVENS.

⁷ — *Carbonado'd* —] i. e. scotched like a piece of meat for the gridiron STEEVENS.

The word is again used in *King Lear*. Kent says to the Steward —

"I'll carbonado your thanks for you." MALONE.

⁸ — *feathers, which — nod at every man.*] So, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

" ————— a blue promontory,

"With trees upon't, that nod unto the world —." STEEVENS.

*Enter a gentle Astringer.**

This man may help me to his majesty's ear,
If he would spend his power. — God save you, sir.

GENT. And you.

HEL. Sir, I have seen you in the court of France.

GENT. I have been sometimes there.

HEL. I do presume sir, that you are not fallen
From the report that goes upon your goodness;
And therefore, goaded with most sharp occasions,
Which lay nice manners by, I put you to
The use of your own virtues, for the which
I shall continue thankful.

GENT. What's your will?

HEL. That it will please you
To give this poor petition to the king;
And aid me with that store of power you have,
To come into his presence.

* *Enter a gentle Astringer.*] Perhaps a *gentle stranger*, i. e. a stranger of gentle condition, a gentleman. The error of this conjecture, [which I have learned, since our first edition made its appearance, from an old book of Falconry, 1633,] should teach diffidence to those who conceive the words which they do not understand, to be corruptions. An *astringer* or *astringer* is a falconer, and such a character was probable to be met with about a court which was famous for the love of that diversion. So, in *Hamlet*:

"We'll e'en to it like French Falconers."

A *gentle astringer* is a gentleman falconer. The word is derived from *ostercus* or *austercus*, a gothawk; and thus, says Cowell in his *Law Dictionary*: "We usually call a falconer, who keeps that kind of hawk, an *astringer*." Again, in *The Book of Hawking*, &c. bl. l. no date: "Now because I spoke of *ostregiers*, ye shall understand that they ben called *ostregiers* that keep gofshawks or tercels," &c. I learn from Blount's *Antient Tenures*, that a "gofshawk is in our records termed by the several names *Osticum*, *Hoftricum*, *Eftricum*, *Aftricum*, and *Auftricum*," and all from the French *Aufleur*. STEEVENS.

GENT. The king's not here.

HEL. Not here, fir?

GENT. Not, indeed;

He hence remov'd last night, and with more haste
Than is his use.

WID. Lord, how we lose our pains!

HEL. *All's well that ends well*, yet;

Though time seem so adverse, and means unfit.—
I do beseech you, whither is he gone?

GENT. Marry, as I take it, to Roussillon;
Whither I am going.

HEL. I do beseech you, fir,
Since you are like to see the king before me,
Commend the paper to his gracious hand;
Which, I presume, shall render you no blame,
But rather make you thank your pains for it:
I will come after you, with what good speed
Our means will make us means.*

GENT. This I'll do for you.

HEL. And you shall find yourself to be well
thank'd,

Whate'er falls more.—We must to horse again;—
Go, go, provide. [Exit.

* *Our means will make us means.*] Shakspeare delights much in this kind of reduplication, sometimes so as to obscure his meaning. Helena says, *they will follow with such speed as the means which they have will give them ability to exert.* JOHNSON.

SCENE II.

Rouffillon. *The inner Court of the Countess's Palace.*

Enter Clown and PAROLLES.

PAR. Good monsieur Lavatch,* give my lord Lafcu this letter: I have ere now, fir, been better known to you, when I have held familiarity with fresher clothes; but I am now, fir, muddied in fortune's moat, and smell somewhat strong of her strong displeasure.³

* — *Lavatch,*] This is an undoubted and perhaps irremediable corruption of some French word. STEEVENS.

³ — *but I am now, fir, muddied in fortune's moat, &c.*] In former editions: — *but I am now, fir, muddied in fortune's mood, and smell somewhat strong of her strong displeasure.* I believe the poet wrote — *in fortune's moat*; because the Clown in the very next speech replies — “I will henceforth eat no fish of fortune's buttering;” and again, when he comes to repeat Parolles's petition to Lafcu, “That hath fallen into the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and, as he says, is muddied withal.” And again — “Pray you, fir, use the carp as you may,” &c. In all which places, it is obvious a moat or a pond is the allusion. Besides, Parolles smelling strong, as he says, of fortune's strong displeasure, carries on the same image; for as the moats round old seats were always replenished with fish, so the Clown's joke of holding his nose, we may presume, proceeded from this, that the privy was always over the moat; and therefore the Clown humourously says, when Parolles is pressing him to deliver his letter to Lord Lafcu, “Foh! pr'ythee stand away: a paper from fortune's class-school, to give to a nobleman!” WARBURTON.

Dr. Warburton's correction may be supported by a passage in *The Alchemist*:

“Subtle. — Come along fir,

“I must now shew you Fortune's privy lodgings.

“Face. Are they perfum'd, and his bath ready?

“Sub. All.

“Only the fumigation somewhat strong.” FARMER.

CLO. Truly, fortune's displeasure is but fluttish, if it smell so strong as thou speak'st of: I will henceforth eat no fish of fortune's buttering. Pr'ythee, allow the wind.⁴

PAR. Nay, you need not to stop your nose, sir; I spake but by a metaphor.

CLO. Indeed, sir, if your metaphor stink, I will stop my nose; or against any man's metaphor.⁵ Pr'ythee, get thee further.

By the whimsical caprices of Fortune, I am fallen into the mud, and smell somewhat strong of her displeasure. In *Pericles, Prince of Tyre*, 1609, we meet with the same phrase,

"—but Fortune's mood

"Varies again."

Again, in *Timon of Athens*:

"When fortune, in her shift and change of mood,

"Spurns down her late belov'd."

Again, in *Julius Caesar*:

"Fortune is merry,

"And in this mood will give us any thing."

Mood is again used for *resentment* or *caprices*, in *Othello*: "You are but now cast in his mood, a punishment more in policy than in malice."

Again, for *anger*, in the old *Taming of a Shrew*, 1607:

"—This brain-sick man,

"That in his mood cares not to murder me."

Dr. Warburton in his edition changed *mood* into *moat*, and his emendation was adopted, I think, without necessity, by the subsequent editors. All the expressions enumerated by him,—“I will eat no fish,”—“he hath fallen into the unelean fishpond of her displeasure,” &c.—agree sufficiently well with the text, without any change. Parolles having talked metaphorically of being muddy'd by the displeasure of fortune, the clown to render him ridiculous, supposes him to have actually fallen into a fishpond.

MALONE.

Though Mr. Malone defends the old reading, I have retained Dr. Warburton's emendation, which, in my opinion, is one of the luckiest ever produced. STEEVENS.

⁴ —allow the wind.] i. e. stand to the leeward of me.

STEEVENS.

⁵ Indeed, sir, if your metaphor stink, I will stop my nose; or against any man's metaphor.] Nothing could be conceived with greater

PAR. Pray you, sir, deliver me this paper.

CLO. Foh, pr'ythee, stand away; A paper from fortune's close-stool to give to a nobleman! Look, here he comes himself.

Enter LAFEU.

Here is a pur of fortune's, sir, or of fortune's cat.⁶ (but not a musk-cat,) that has fallen into the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and, as he says, is muddied withal: Pray you, sir, use the carp as you may; for he looks like a poor, decay'd, ingenuous, foolish, rascally knave. I do pity his distress

humour or justness of satire, than this speech. The use of the *sinking metaphor* is an odious fault, which grave writers often commit. It is not uncommon to see moral declaimers against vice, describe her as Hesiod did the fury Tristitia:

Τὴν δὲ πύοντα μύθηται πέον.

Upon which Longinus justly observes, that, instead of giving a terrible image, he has given a very nasty one. Cicero cautions well against it, in his book *de Orat.* "*Quoniam hæc, says he, vel summa laus est in verbis transferendis ut sensum feriat id, quod translatum fit, fugienda est omnis turpitudine eorum rerum, ad quas eorum animos qui audiunt trahet similitudo. Nolo morte dici Africani castratam esse rempublicam. Nolo sturcus curiæ dici Glanciam.*" Our poet himself is extremely delicate in this respect; who, throughout his large writings, if you except a passage in *Hamlet*, has scarce a metaphor that can offend the most squeamish reader.

WARRBURTON.

Dr. Warburton's recollection must have been weak, or his zeal for his author extravagant. Otherwise, he could not have ventured to countenance him on the score of delicacy; his offensive metaphors and allusions being undoubtedly more frequent than those of all his dramatick predecessors or contemporaries. STEEVENS.

⁶ Here is a pur of fortune's, sir, or of fortune's cat,] We should read — or fortune's cat; and indeed I believe there is an error in the former part of the sentence, and that we ought to read — Here is a pur of fortune's, instead of pur. M. MASON.

in my smiles of comfort,⁵ and leave him to your lordship. [*Exit Clown.*]

PAR. My lord, I am a man whom fortune hath cruelly scratch'd.

LAF. And what would you have me to do? 'tis too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have you play'd the knave with fortune, that she should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady, and would not have knaves thrive long under her?⁶ There's a *quart d'ecu* for you: Let the justices make you and fortune friends; I am for other business.

PAR. I beseech your honour, to hear me one single word.

LAF. You beg a single penny more: come, you shall ha't; save your word.⁷

PAR. My name, my good lord, is Parolles.

LAF. You beg more than one word then,⁸—Cox' my passion! give me your hand:—How does your drum?

⁵ — *I do pity his distress in my smiles of comfort.*] We should read,—*families* of comfort, such as the calling him *fortune's cat*, *corp*, &c. WARBURTON.

The meaning is, I testify my pity for his distress, by encouraging him with a gracious smile. The old reading may stand.

HEATH.

Dr. Warburton's proposed emendation may be countenanced by an entry on the books of the Stationers' Company, 1595: "— A booke of verie pythie *families*, *comfortable* and profitable for all men to reade." STEVENS.

⁶ — *under her?*] *Her*, which is not in the first copy, was supplied by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

⁷ — *save your word.*] i. e. you need not ask;—here it is.

MALONE.

⁸ *You beg more than one word then.*] A quibble is intended on the word *Parolles*, which in French is plural, and signifies *words*. *One*, which is not found in the old copy, was added, perhaps unnecessarily, by the editor of the third folio. MALONE.

PAR. O my good lord, you were the first that found me.

LAF. Was I, in sooth? and I was the first that lost thee.

PAR. It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in some grace, for you did bring me out.

LAF. Out upon thee, knave! dost thou put upon me at once both the office of God and the devil? one brings thee in grace, and the other brings thee out. [*Trumpets sound.*] The king's coming, I know by his trumpets.—Sirrah, inquire further after me; I had talk of you last night: though you are a fool and a knave, you shall eat;⁹ go to, follow.

PAR. I praise God for you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.

The same. A Room in the Countess's Palace.

Flourish. Enter King, Countess, LAFEU, LORDS, Gentlemen, Guards, &c.

KING. We lost a jewel of her; and our esteem^a Was made much poorer by it: but your son,

⁹ ——— *you shall eat;*] Parolles has many of the lineaments of Falstaff, and seems to be the character which Shakspeare delighted to draw, a fellow that had more wit than virtue. Though justice required that he should be detected and exposed, yet his vices fit so fit in him that he is not at last suffered to starve.

JOHNSON.

^a ——— *esteem* —] Dr. Warburton, in Theobald's edition, altered this word to *estate*; in his own he lets it stand and explains it by *worth or estate*. But *esteem* is here *reckoning or estimate*. Since the loss of Helen with her virtues and qualifications, our account is sunk; what we have to reckon ourselves king of, is much poorer than before. JOHNSON.

As mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know
Her estimation home.³

COUNT. 'Tis past, my liege:
And I beseech your majesty to make it
Natural rebellion, done i'the blaze of youth;⁴
When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force,
O'erbears it, and burns on.

KING. My honour'd lady,
I have forgiven and forgotten all;
Though my revenges were high bent upon him,
And watch'd the time to shoot.

LAF. This I must say,——
But first I beg my pardon.—The young lord
Did to his majesty, his mother, and his lady,
Offence of mighty note; but to himself
The greatest wrong of all: he lost a wife,
Whose beauty did astonish the survey

Meaning that his esteem was lessened in its value by Bertram's misconduct; since a person who was honoured with it could be so ill treated as Helena had been, and that with impunity. Johnson's explanation is very unnatural. M. MASON.

³ — home. | That is, *completely*, in its full extent. JOHNSON.
So, in *Macbeth*: "That thrust home," &c. MALONE.

⁴ — blaze of youth; | The old copy reads—*blade*.

STEEVENS.

"*Blaze of youth*" is the *spring of early life*, when the man is yet *green*. Oil and fire suit but ill with *blade*, and therefore Dr. Warburton reads, *blaze of youth*. JOHNSON.

This very probable emendation was first proposed by Mr. Theobald, who has produced these two passages in support of it:

"—— I do know

"When the blood burns, how prodigal the soul

"Leads the tongue vows, These *blazes*," &c. *Hamlet*.

Again, in *Troilus and Cressida*:

"For Hector, in his *blaze of wrath*," &c. MALONE.

In *Hamlet* we have also "*flaming youth*," and in the present comedy "*the quick fire of youth*." I read, therefore, without hesitation,—*blaze*. STEEVENS.

THAT ENDS WELL. 175

Of richest eyes; ⁵ whose words all ears took capti-
tive;

Whose dear perfection, hearts that scorn'd to serve,
Humbly call'd mistrefs.

KING. Praising what is lost,
Makes the remembrance dear. — Well, call him
hither; —

We are reconcil'd, and the first view shall kill
All repetition: ⁶ — Let him not ask our pardon;
The nature of his great offence is dead,
And deeper than oblivion we do bury
The incensing relicks of it: let him approach,
A stranger, no offender; and inform him,
So 'tis our will he should.

GENT. I shall, my liege.
[Exit Gentleman.]

KING. What says he to your daughter? have you
spoke?

LAF. All that he is hath reference to your high-
ness.

⁵ *Of richest eyes,*] Shakspeare means that her beauty had astonished those, who, having seen the greatest number of fair women, might be said to be the *richest* in ideas of beauty. So, in *As you Like it*: " — to have seen much and to have nothing, is to have *rich eyes* and poor hands." STEEVENS.

⁶ — *the first view shall kill*

All repetition:] *The first interview shall put an end to all recollection of the past.* Shakspeare is now hastening to the end of the play, finds his matter sufficient to fill up his remaining scenes, and therefore, as on other such occasions, contracts his dialogue and precipitates his action. Decency required that Bertram's double crime of cruelty and disobedience, joined likewise with some hypocrisy, should raise more relentment; and that though his mother might easily forgive him, his king should more pertinaciously vindicate his own authority and Helen's merit. Of all this Shakspeare could not be ignorant, but Shakspeare wanted to conclude his play.

JOHNSON

KING. Then shall we have a match. I have letters
sent me,
That set him high in fame.

Enter BERTRAM.

LAF. He looks well on't.

KING. I am not a day of season,⁷
For thou may'st see a sun-shine and a hail
In me at once: But to the brightest beams
Distracted clouds give way; so stand thou forth,
The time is fair again.

BER. My high-repented blames,⁸
Dear sovereign pardon to me.

KING. All is whole;
Not one word more of the consumed time.
Let's take the instant by the forward top;
For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees
The inaudible and noiseless foot of time
Steals ere we can effect them:⁹ You remember
The daughter of this lord?

⁷ *I am not a day of season,*] That is, of uninterrupted rain: one of those wet days that usually happen about the vernal equinox. A similar expression occurs in *The Rape of Lucrece*:

"But I alone, alone must sit and pine,

"Seasoning the earth with showers."

The word is still used in the same sense in Virginia, in which government, and especially on the eastern shore of it, where the descendants of the first settlers have been less mixed with later emigrants, many expressions of Shakspeare's time are still current.

HENLEY.

⁸ *My high-repented blames,*] *High-repented blames*, are faults repented of to the height, to the utmost. Shakspeare has *high-fantastical* in *Twelfth Night*. STEEVENS.

⁹ *The inaudible and noiseless foot of time, &c.*] This idea seems to have been caught from the third Book of Sidney's *Arcadia*: "The summons of Time had so creepingly stolen upon him, that hee had heard scarcely the noise of his feet." STEEVENS.

BER. Admiringly,
My liege: At first
I stuck my choice upon her, ere my heart
Durst make too bold a herald of my tongue:
Where the impression of mine eye infixing,
Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me,
Which warp'd the line of every other flavour;
Scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stol'n;
Extended or contracted all proportions,
To a most hideous object: Thence it came,
That she, whom all men prais'd and whom myself,
Since I have lost, have lov'd, was in mine eye
The dust that did offend it.

KING. Well excus'd:
That thou didst love her, strikes some scores away
From the great compt: But love that comes too
late,
Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried,
To the great sencer turns a four offence,
Crying, That's good, that's gone: our rash faults
Make trivial price of serious things we have,
Not knowing them, until we know their grave:
Oft our displeasures, to ourselves unjust,
Destroy our friends, and after weep their dust:
Our own love waking cries to see what's done,
While shameful hate sleeps out the afternoon.*

* *Our own love waking, &c.*] These two lines I should be glad to call an interpolation of a player. They are ill connected with the former, and not very clear or proper in themselves. I believe the author made two couplets to the same purpose; wrote them both down that he might take his choice; and so they happened to be both preserved.

For *sleep* I think we should read *sest*. *Love cries to see what was done while hatred sest*, and suffered mischief to be done. Or the meaning may be, that *hatred still continues to sleep at ease, while love is weeping*; and so the present reading may stand. JOHNSON.

Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget her.
Send forth your amorous token for fair Maudlin ;
The main consents are had : and here we'll stay
To see our widower's second marriage-day.

COUNT. Which better than the first, O dear heaven, blefs !

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cease !³

LAF. Come on, my son, in whom my house's name,

Must be digested, give a favour from you,
To sparkle in the spirits of my daughter,
That she may quickly come.—By my old beard,
And every hair that's on't, Helen, that's dead,
Was a sweet creature ; such a ring as this,

I cannot comprehend this passage as it stands, and have no doubt but we should read—

Our old love waking, &c.

Extinctus amabitur idem.

Our own love, can mean nothing but our *self-love*, which would not be sense in this place ; but *our old love waking*, means our former affection being revived. M. MASON.

This conjecture appears to me extremely probable ; but *waking* will not, I think, here admit of Mr. M. Mason's interpretation, *being revived* ; nor indeed is it necessary to his emendation. It is clear from the subsequent line that *waking* is here used in its ordinary sense. Hate *sleeps* at ease, unmolested by any remembrance of the dead, while old love, reproaching itself for not having been sufficiently kind to a departed friend, "*wakes and weeps*;" crying, "*that's good that's gone*." MALONE.

³ *Which better than the first, O dear heaven, blefs !*

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cease !] I have ventured against the authorities of the printed copies, to prefix the Countess's name to these two lines. The king appears, indeed, to be a favourer of Bertram ; but if Bertram should make a bad husband the second time, why should it give the king such mortal pangs ? A fond and disappointed mother might reasonably not desire to live to see such a day : and from her the wish of dying, rather than to behold it, comes with propriety. THEOBALD.

The last that e'er I took her leave⁴ at court,
I saw upon her finger.

BER. Hers it was not.

KING. Now, pray you, let me see it; for mine eye,
While I was speaking, oft was fasten'd to't.—
This ring was mine; and, when I gave it Helen,
I bade her, if her fortunes ever flood
Necessitated to help, that⁵ by this token
I would relieve her: Had you that craft, to reave her
Of what should stead her most?

BER. My gracious sovereign,
Howe'er it pleases you to take it so,
The ring was never her's.

COUNT. Son, on my life,
I have seen her wear it; and she reckon'd it
At her life's rate.

LAF. I am sure, I saw her wear it.

BER. You are deceiv'd, my lord, she never saw it:
In Florence was it from a casement thrown me,⁶
Wrapp'd in a paper, which contain'd the name
Of her that threw it: noble she was, and thought
I stood engag'd:⁷ but when I had subscrib'd

⁴ *The last that e'er I took her leave—*] The last time that I saw her, when she was leaving the court. Mr. Rowe and the subsequent editors read—*that e'er she took, &c.* MALONE.

⁵ *I bade her, if her fortunes ever flood*

Necessitated to help, that—] Our author here, as in many other places, seems to have forgotten in the close of the sentence how he began to construe it. See p. 9, n. 9. The meaning however is clear, and I do not suspect any corruption. MALONE.

⁶ *In Florence was it from a casement thrown me,*] Bertram still continues to have too little virtue to deserve Helen. He did not know indeed that it was Helen's ring, but he knew that he had it not from a window. JOHNSON.

⁷ — *noble she was, and thought*

I stood engag'd:] Thus the old copy. Dr. Johnson reads—*engaged.* STEEVENS.

To mine, own fortune, and inform'd her fully,
I could not answer in that course of honour
As she had made the overture, she ceas'd,
In heavy satisfaction, and would never
Receive the ring again.

KING.

Plutus himself.

That knows the tinct and multiplying medicine,¹
Hath not in nature's mystery more science,
Than I have in this ring: 'twas mine, 'twas Helen's,
Whoever gave it you: Then if you know
That you are well acquainted with yourself,
Confess 'twas hers,² and by what rough enforcement

The plain meaning is, when she saw me receive the ring, she thought me *engaged* to her. JOHNSON.

Engag'd, may be intended in the same sense with the reading proposed by Mr. Theobald, [*ungag'd*] i. e. *not engaged*; as Shakspeare in another place uses *gag'd* for *engaged*. *Merchant of Venice*, Act I. sc. i. TYRWHITT.

I have no doubt that *engaged* (the reading of the folio) is right.

Gaged is used by other writers, as well as by Shakspeare, for *engaged*. So, in a *Pastoral*, by Daniel, 1605:

"Not that the earth did *gage*

"Unto the husbandman

"Her volutary fruits, free without fees."

Engaged, in the sense of *unengaged*, is a word of exactly the same signification as *inhabitable*, which is used by Shakspeare and the contemporary writers for *uninhabitable*. MALONE.

¹ *Plutus himself*,

[*That knows the tinct and multiplying medicine*,] *Plutus*, the grand alchemist, who knows the *tincture* which confers the properties of gold upon base metals, and the *matter* by which *gold* is multiplied, by which a small quantity of gold is made to communicate its qualities to a large mass of base metal.

In the reign of Henry the Fourth a law was made to forbid *all men* thenceforth to multiply gold, or use any craft of multiplication. Of which law, Mr. Boyle, when he was warm with the hope of transmutation, procured a repeal. JOHNSON.

² — *Then, if you know*

That you are well acquainted with yourself,

Confess 'twas hers,] i. e. confess the ring was hers, for you know it as well as you know that you are yourself. EDWARDS.

You got it from her : she call'd the saints to surety,
That she would never put it from her finger,
Unless she gave it to yourself in bed,
(Where you have never come,) or sent it us
Upon her great disaster.

BER. She never saw it.

KING. Thou speak'st it falsely, as I love mine
honour;

And mak'st conjectural fears to come into me,
Which I would fain shut out : If it should prove
That thou art so inhuman,—'twill not prove so ;—
And yet I know not :—thou didst hate her deadly,
And she is dead ; which nothing, but to close
Her eyes myself, could win me to believe,
More than to see this ring.—Take him away.—

[*Guards seize BERTRAM.*]

My fore-past proofs, howe'er the matter fall,
Shall tax my fears of little vanity,
Having vainly fear'd too little.^a—Away with him ;—
We'll sift this matter further.

BER. If you shall prove
This ring was ever hers, you shall as easy
Prove that I husbanded her bed in Florence,
Where yet she never was.

[*Exit BERTRAM, guarded.*]

The true meaning of this expression is, *If you know that your faculties are so sound, as that you have the proper consciousness of your own actions, and are able to recollect and relate what you have done, tell me, &c.* JOHNSON.

^a *My fore-past proofs, howe'er the matter fall,*

Shall tax my fears of little vanity,

Having vainly fear'd too little] The proofs which I have already had are sufficient to show that my fears were not vain and irrational. I have rather been hitherto more easy than I ought, and have unreasonably had too little fear. JOHNSON.

Enter a Gentleman.

KING. I am wrapp'd in dismal thinkings.

GENT.

Gracious sovereign,

Whether I have been to blame, or no, I know not;
Here's a petition from a Florentine,
Who hath, for four or five removes, come short
To tender it herself.³ I undertook it,
Vanquish'd thereto by the fair grace and speech
Of the poor suppliant, who by this, I know,
Is here attending: her business looks in her
With an importing visage; and she told me,
In a sweet verbal brief, it did concern
Your highness with herself.

KING [Reads.]—*Upon his many protestations to marry me, when his wife was dead, I blush to say it, he won me. Now is the count Rouffillon a widower; his vows are forfeited to me, and my honour's paid to him. He stole from Florence, taking no leave, and I follow him to his country for justice: Grant it me, O king; in you it best lies; otherwise a seducer flourishes, and a poor maid is undone.*

DIANA CAPULET.

LAF. I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and
toll him: for this, I'll none of him.⁴

³ *Who hath, for four or five removes come short, &c.]* Who hath missed the opportunity of presenting it in person to your majesty, either at Marseilles, or on the road from thence to Rouffillon, in consequence of having been four or five removes behind you.

MALONE.

Removes are journeys or post-stages. JOHNSON.

⁴ *I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and toll him: for this, I'll none of him.]* Thus the second folio. The first omits—*him*. Either reading is capable of explanation.

The meaning of the earliest copy seems to be this: I'll buy me a new son-in-law, &c. and toll the bell for this: i. e. look upon him

KING. The heavens have thought well on thee
Lafeu,

as a dead man.—The second reading, as Dr. Percy suggests, may imply: I'll buy me a son-in-law as they buy a horse in a fair; *toll* him, i. e. enter him on the *toll* or *toll-book*, to prove I came honestly by him, and ascertain my title to him. In a play called *The famous History of Tho. Stukely*, 1605, is an allusion to this custom:

"Gov. I will be answerable to thee for thy *horses*.

"*Stuk.* Dost thou keep a *toll-book*? zounds, dost thou make a *horse-courser* of me?"

Again, in *Hudibras*, p. 11. C. 1:

"— a roan gelding

"Where, when, by whom, and what y'were sold for

"And to the open market *toll'd* for."

Alluding (as Dr. Grey observes) to the two statutes relating to the sale of horses, 2 and 3 *Phil. and Mary*, and 31. *Eliz. c. 12.* and publicly *tolling* them in fairs, to prevent the sale of such as were stolen, and to preserve the property to the right owner.

The previous mention of a *Fair*, seems to justify the reading I have adopted from the second folio. STEEVENS.

The passage should be pointed thus:

I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and toll;

For this, I'll none of him.

That is, "I'll buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and pay toll; as for this, I will have none of him." M. MASON.

The meaning, I think, is, "I will purchase a son-in-law at a fair, and get rid of this worthless fellow, by *telling him out of it*." To *tell* a person *out of a fair* was a phrase of the time. So, in Camden's *Remains*, 1605: "At a Bartholomew Faire at London there was an elcheator of the same city, that had arrested a clothier that was outlawed, and had seized his goods, which he had brought into the faire, *telling him out of the faire*, by a traioe."

And *toll* for this may however mean—and I will sell this fellow in a fair, as I would a horse, publicly entering in the *toll-book* the particulars of the sale. For the hint of this latter interpretation I am indebted to Dr. Percy. I incline, however, to the former exposition.

The following passage in *King Henry IV. P. II.* may be adduced to support of Mr. Steeven's interpretation of this passage: "Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gow,—and I will take such order that thy friends shall ring for thee."

Here Falstaff certainly means to speak equivocally; and one of his senses is, "I will take care to have thee knocked to the head, and thy friends shall ring thy funeral knell. MALONE.

To bring forth this discovery.—Seek these suitors :—
Go, speedily, and bring again the count.

[*Exeunt Gentleman, and some Attendants.*
I am afeard, the life of Helen, lady,
Was foully snatch'd.

COUNT. Now, justice on the doers !

Enter BERTRAM, guarded.

KING. I wonder, fir, since wives are monsters
to you,⁵
And that you fly them as you swear them lordship,
Yet you desire to marry.—What woman's that ?

Re-enter Gentleman, with Widow, and DIANA.

DIA. I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine,
Derived from the ancient Capulet ;
My suit, as I do understand, you know,
And therefore know how far I may be pitied.

⁵ *I wonder, fir, since wives, &c.]* This passage is thus read in the first folio :

*I wonder, fir, fir, wives are monsters to you,
And that you fly them, as you swear them lordship,
Yet you desire to marry.—*

Which may be corrected thus :

I wonder, fir, since wives are monsters, &c.

The editors have made it—*wives are so monstrous to you*, and in the next line—*swear to them*, instead of—*swear them lordship*. Though the latter phrase be a little obscure, it should not have been turned out of the text without notice. I suppose *lordship* is put for that *protection* which the husband in the marriage ceremony promises to the wife. TYRWHITT.

As, I believe, here signifies *as soon as*. MALONE.

I read with Mr. Tyrwhitt, whose emendation I have placed in the text. It may be observed, however, that the second folio reads :

I wonder, fir, wives are such monsters to you—

STEEVENS.

WID. I am her mother, sir, whose age and honour
Both suffer under this complaint we bring,
And both shall cease,⁶ without your remedy.

KING. Come hither, count; Do you know these
women?

BER. My lord, I neither can, nor will deny
But that I know them: Do they charge me further?

DIA. Why do you look so strange upon your
wife?

BER. She's none of mine, my lord.

DIA. If you shall marry,
You give away this hand, and that is mine;
You give away heaven's vows, and those are mine;
You give away myself, which is known mine;
For I by vow am so embodied yours,
That she, which marries you, must marry me,
Either both, or none.

LAF. Your reputation [*To BERTRAM.*] comes
too short for my daughter, you are no husband for
her.

BER. My lord, this is a fond and desperate crea-
ture,
Whom sometime I have laugh'd with: let your
highness
Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour,
Than for to think that I would sink it here.

KING. Sir, for my thoughts, you have them ill to
friend,
Till your deeds gain them: Fairer prove your ho-
nour,
Than in my thought it lies!

⁶ — *shall cease,*] i. e. decessse, die. So, in *King Lear*
"Fall and *cease*." The word is used in the same sense in p. 178
of the present comedy. STEVENS.

DIA. Good my lord,
Ask him upon his oath, if he does think
He had not my virginity.

KING. What say'st thou to her?

BER. She's impudent, my lord;
And was a common gamester to the camp.⁶

DIA. He does me wrong, my lord; if I were so,
He might have bought me at a common price;
Do not believe him: O, behold this ring,
Whose high respect, and rich validity,⁷
Did lack a parallel; yet, for all that,
He gave it to a commoner o'the camp,
If I be one.

COUNT. He blushes, and 'tis it:⁸
Of six preceding ancestors, that gem
Confer'd by testament to the sequent issue,

⁶ — a common gamester to the camp.] The following passage, in an ancient MS. tragedy, entitled *The Second Maiden's Tragedy*, will sufficiently elucidate the idea once affixed to the term — gamester, when applied to a female:

" 'Tis to me woodrous how you should spare the day

" From amorous clips, much less the general season

" When all the world's a gamester."

Agais, in *Pericles*, Lyfimachus asks Marina —

" Were you a gamester at five or at seven?"

Agais, in *Troilus and Cressida*:

" — daughters of the game." STEEVENS.

⁷ Whose high respect, and rich validity,] *Validity* means *value*. So, in *K. Lear*:

" No less in space, *validity*, and pleasure."

Again in *Twelfth-Night*:

" Of what *validity* and pitch forever." STEEVENS.

⁸ — 'tis it:] The old copy has — 'tis *hit*. The emendation was made by Mr. Steevens. In many of our old chronicles I have found *hit* printed instead of *it*. Hence probably the mistake here. Mr. Pope reads — and 'tis *his*. MALONE.

Or, *he blushes*, and 'tis *his*. HENLEY.

Hath it been ow'd, and worn. This is his wife;
That ring's a thousand proofs.

KING. Methought, you said,²
You saw one here in court could witness it.

DIA. I did, my lord, but loth am to produce
So bad an instrument; his name's Parolles.

LAF. I saw the man to-day, if man he be.

KING. Find him, and bring him hither.

BER. What of him?

He's quoted for a most perfidious slave,³
With all the spots o'the world tax'd and debosh'd;⁴
Whose nature sickens, but to speak a truth:⁴
Am I or that, or this, for what he'll utter,
That will speak any thing?

KING. She hath that ring of yours.

BER. I think, she has: certain it is, I lik'd her,
And boarded her i'the wanton way of youth:
She knew her distance, and did angle for me,
Madding my eagerness with her restraint,

² *Methought, you said,*] The poet has here forgot himself. Diana has said no such thing. BLACKSTONE.

³ *He's quoted for a most perfidious slave,*] Quoted has the same sense as noted, or observed.

So, in *Hamlet*:

"I'm sorry that with better heed and judgement

"I had not quoted him." STEEVENS.

⁴ — *debosh'd*;] See a note on *The Tempest*, A& III. sc. ii. Vol. IV. p. 95. STEEVENS.

⁴ *Whose nature sickens, but to speak a truth*:] Here the modern editors read:

Which nature sickens with:—

a most licentious corruption of the old reading, in which the punctuation only wants to be corrected. We should read, as here printed:

Whose nature sickens, but to speak a truth:

i. e. *only to speak a truth*. TYRWHITT.

As all impediments in fancy's course
 Are motives of more fancy;⁵ and, in fine,
 Her insuit coming with her modern grace,
 Subdued me to her rate: she got the ring;
 And I had that, which any inferior might
 At market-price have bought.

DIAN. I must be patient;
 You, that turn'd off a first so noble wife,
 May justly diet me.⁶ I pray you yet,

⁵ — all impediments in fancy's course
 Are motives of more fancy; &c.] Every thing that abstracts love is
 an occasion by which love is heightened. And, to conclude, her solicitation
 concurring with her fashionable appearance, she got the ring.

I am not certain that I have attained the true meaning of the
 word *modera*, which, perhaps, signifies rather *meanly pretty*.

JOHNSON.

I believe *modern* means *common*. The sense will then be this—
 Her solicitation concurring with her appearance of being common, i. e.
 with the appearance of her being to be had as we say at present.
 Shakspeare uses the word *modern* frequently, and always in this
 sense. So, in *King John*:

" — — scorns a modern invocation."

Again, in *As you Like it*:

" Full of wise saws and modern instances.

" Trifles, such as we present modern friends with."

Again, in the present comedy, p. 252: " — — to make *modern*
 and familiar things supernatural and causeless."

Mr. M. Mafoe says, that *modern grace* means, with a tolerable
 degree of beauty. He questions also the insufficiency of the instances
 brought in support of my explanation, but adduces none in defence
 of his own. STEEVENS.

Dr. Johnson's last interpretation is certainly the true one. See
 vol. viii. p. 236, n. 9, and above, p. 72, n. 9. I think with Mr. Steevens,
 that *modern* here, as almost every where in Shakspeare, means *common*,
ordinary; but do not suppose that Bertram here means to call Diana
 a common gamester, though he has styled her so in a former passage.

MALONE.

⁶ May justly diet me.] May justly loath or be weary of me, as
 people generally are of a regimen or prescribed diet. Such, I
 imagine, is the meaning. Mr. Collins thinks, she means, " May
 justly make me fast, by depriving me (as Desdemona says) of the
 rites for which I love you." MALONE.

(Since you lack virtue, I will lose a husband.)
Send for your ring, I will return it home,
And give me mine again.

BER. I have it not.

KING. What ring was yours, I pray you?

DIA. Sir, much like

The same upon your finger.

KING. Know you this ring? this ring was his of late.

DIA. And this was it I gave him, being a-bed.

KING. The story then goes false, you threw it him Out of a casement.

DIA. I have spoke the truth.

Enter PAROLLES.

BER. My lord, I do confess, the ring was hers.

KING. You boggle shrewdly, every feather starts you.——

Is this the man you speak of?

DIA. Ay, my lord.

KING. Tell me, but, firrah, tell me true, I charge you,

Not fearing the displeasure of your master,

(Which, on your just proceeding, I'll keep off.)

By him, and by this woman here, what know you?

PAR. So please your majesty, my master hath

Mr. Collins's interpretation is just. The allusion may be to the management of hawks, who were half starved till they became tradable. Thus, in *Coriolanus*:

"——I'll watch him,

"Till he be dieted to my request."

"To fast, like one who takes diet," is a comparison that occurs in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*. STEEVENS.

been an honourable gentleman: tricks he hath had in him, which gentlemen have.

KING. Come, come, to the purpose: Did he love this woman?

PAR. 'Faith, fir, he did love her; But how?⁶

KING. How, I pray you?

PAR. He did love her, fir, as a gentleman loves a woman.

KING. How is that?

PAR. He loved her, fir, and loved her not.

KING. As thou art a knave, and no knave:—What an equivocal companion⁷ is this?

PAR. I am a poor man, and at your majesty's command.

LAF. He's a good drum, my lord, but a naughty orator.

DIA. Do you know, he promised me marriage?

PAR. 'Faith, I know more than I'll speak.

KING. But wilt thou not speak all thou know'st?

PAR. Yes, so please your majesty; I did go between them, as I said; but more than that, he loved her,—for, indeed, he was mad for her, and talk'd of Satan, and of limbo, and of furies, and I

⁶ — *he did love her; But how?*] But how perhaps belongs to the King's next speech:

But how, *how*, I pray you?

This suits better with the King's apparent impatience and solicitude for Helena. MALONE.

Surely, all transfer of these words is needless. *Hamlet* addresses such another slipshod interrogatory to himself: "The mouse-trap. Marry, how? Tropically." STEEVENS.

⁷ — *companion*—] i. e. fellow. So, in *K. Henry VI.* P. II:

"Why, rude companion, what's for'er thou be.

"I know thee not." STEEVENS.

know not what: yet I was in that credit with them at that time, that I knew of their going to bed; and of other motions, as promising her marriage, and things that would derive me ill will to speak of, therefore I will not speak what I know.

KING. Thou hast spoken all already, unless thou canst say they are married: But thou art too fine in thy evidence;² therefore stand aside.—

This ring, you say was yours?

DIA. Ay, my good lord.

KING. Where did you buy it? or who gave it you?

DIA. It was not given me, nor I did not buy it.

KING. Who lent it you?

DIA. It was not lent me neither.

KING. Where did you find it then?

DIA. I found it not.

KING. If it were yours by none of all these ways, How could you give it him?

DIA. I never gave it him.

LAF. This woman's an easy glove, my lord; she goes off and on at pleasure.

KING. This ring was mine, I gave it his first wife.

DIA. It might be yours, or hers, for aught I know.

KING. Take her away, I do not like her now;
To prison with her: and away with him.—
Unless thou tell'st me where thou had'st this ring,
Thou die'st within this hour.

DIA. I'll never tell you.

² — But thou art too fine in thy evidence;] *Too fine*, too full of finelle; too artful. A French expression — *trop fine*.

So, in Sir Henry Wotton's celebrated Parallel: "We may rate this one secret, as it was *finely* carried, at 4000*l*. in present money."

MALONE.

KING. Take her away.

DIA. I'll put in bail, my liege.

KING. I think thee now some common customer.*

DIA. By Jove, if ever I knew man, 'twas you.

KING. Wherefore hast thou accus'd him all this while?

DIA. Because he's guilty, and he is not guilty ;
He knows, I am no maid, and he'll swear to't :

I'll swear, I am a maid, and he knows not.

Great king; I am no strumpet, by my life ;

I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

[*Pointing to LAFEU.*

KING. She does abuse our ears ; to prison with her.

DIA. Good mother, fetch my bail.—Stay, royal fir;

[*Exit Widow.*

The jeweller, that owes the ring, is sent for,
And he shall surety me. But for this lord,
Who hath abus'd me, as he knows himself,
Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit him :
He knows himself, my bed he hath defil'd ;^a
And at that time he got his wife with child :
Dead though she be, she feels her young one kick ;
So there's my riddle, One, that's dead, is quick :
And now behold the meaning.

* — *customer.*] i. e. a common woman. So, in *Othello* :

" I marry her!—what?—a *customer*!" STEVENS.

^a *He knows himself, &c.*] The dialogue is too long, since the audience already knew the whole transaction; nor is there any reason for puzzling the King and playing with his passions; but it was much easier than to make a pathetic interview between Helen and her husband, her mother, and the King. JOHNSON.

Re-enter Widow, with HELENA.

KING. Is there no exorcist³
Beguiles the truer office of mine eyes?
Is't real, that I see?

HEL. No, my good lord;
'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see,
The name, and not the thing.

BER. Both, both; O, pardon!

HEL. O, my good lord, when I was like this maid,
I found you wond'rous kind. There is your ring,
And, look you, here's your letter; This it says,
When from my finger you can get this ring,

³ — *exorcist* —] This word is used, not very properly, for *enchanter*. JOHNSON.

Shakspeare invariably uses the word *exorcist*, to imply a person who can raise spirits, not in the usual sense of one that can lay them. So, Ligarius, in *Julius Caesar* says—

“Thou, like an *exorcist*, hast conjur'd up

“My mortified spirit.”

And in the Second Part of *Henry VI.* where Bolingbroke is about to raise a spirit, he asks of Eleanor,

“Will her ladyship behold and hear our *exorcisms*?”

M. MASON.

Such was the common acceptation of the word in our author's time. So, Minsheu in his *DICT.* 1617: “An *Exorcist*, or *Conjuror*.”—So also, “To *conjure* or *exorcise* a spirit.”

The difference between a *Conjuror*, a *Witch*, and an *Enchanter*, according to that writer, is as follows:

“The *Conjuror* seeketh by prayers and invocations of God's powerfull names, to compell the Divell to say or doe what he commandeth him. The *Witch* dealeth rather by a friendly and voluntarie conference or agreement between him or her and the Divell or Familiar, to have his or her turne served, in lieu or stead of blood or other gift offered unto him, especially of his or her soule:—And both these differ from *Enchanters* or *Sorcerers*, because the former two have personal conference with the Divell, and the other meddles but with medicines and ceremoiall formes of words called *charmes*, without apparition.” MALONE.

*And are*³ *by me with child*, &c.—This is done:
Will you be mine, now you are doubly won?

BER. If she, my liege, can make me know this
clearly,

I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly.

HEL. If it appear not plain, and prove untrue,
Deadly divorce step between me and you!—

O, my dear mother, do I see you living?

LAF. Mine eyes smell onions, I shall weep anon:—
Good Tom Drum, [*To PAROLLES.*] lend me a hand-
kerchief: So, I thank thee; wait on me home, I'll
make sport with thee: Let thy courtesies alone, they
are scurvy ones.

KING. Let us from point to point this story know,
To make the even truth in pleasure flow:—
If thou be'st yet a fresh uncropped flower,

[*To DIANA.*

Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy dower;
For I can guess, that, by thy honest aid,
Thou kept'st a wife herself, thyself a maid.—
Of that, and all the progress, more and less,
Resolvedly more leisure shall express:
All yet seems well; and, if it end so meet,
The bitter past, more welcome is the sweet.

[*Flourish.*

Advancing.

*The king's a beggar, now the play is done:*⁴
All is well ended, if this suit be won,

³ *And are*—] The old copy reads—*And is.* Mr. Rowe made the emendation. MALONE.

⁴ *The king's a beggar, now the play is done:*] Though these lines are sufficiently intelligible in their obvious sense, yet perhaps there is some allusion to the old tale of *The King and the Beggar*, which was the subject of a ballad, and, as it should seem, from

*That you express content ; which we will pay,
With strife to please you, day exceeding day :
Ours be your patience then, and yours our parts ;⁵
Your gentle hands lend us, and take our hearts.*

Exeunt,

the following lines in *King Richard II.* of some popular interlude also :

" Our scene is altered from a serious thing,
" And now chaog'd to the beggar and the king."

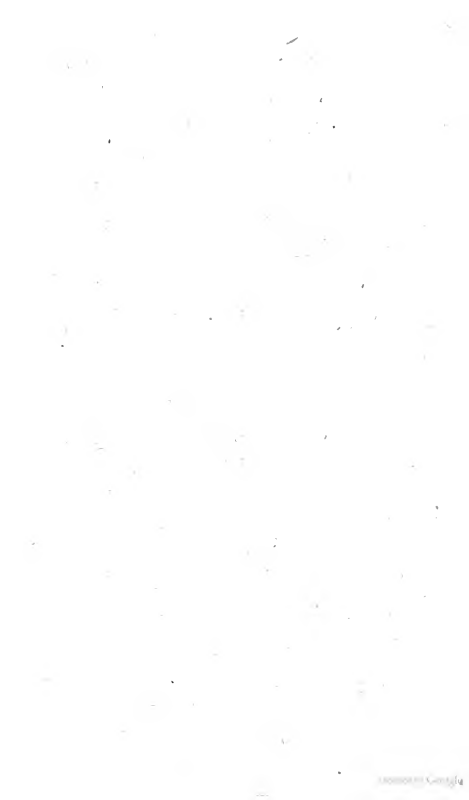
MALONE,

⁵ *Ours be your patience then, and yours our parts ;*] The meaning is : Grant us then your patience ; hear us without interruption. And take our parts ; that is, support and defend us. JOHNSON.

This play has many delightful scenes, though not sufficiently probable, and some happy characters, though not new, nor produced by any deep knowledge of human nature. Parolles is a boaster and a coward, such as has always been the sport of the stage, but perhaps never raised more laughter or contempt than in the hands of Shakspeare.

I cannot reconcile my heart to Bertram ; a man noble without generosity, and young without truth ; who marries Helio as a coward, and leaves her as a profligate : when she is dead by his unkindness, sneaks home in a second marriage, is accused by a woman whom he has wooed, defends himself by falsehood, and is dismissed to happiness.

The story of Bertram and Diana had been told before of Mariana and Angelo, and, to confess the truth, scarcely merited to be heard a second time. JOHNSON.

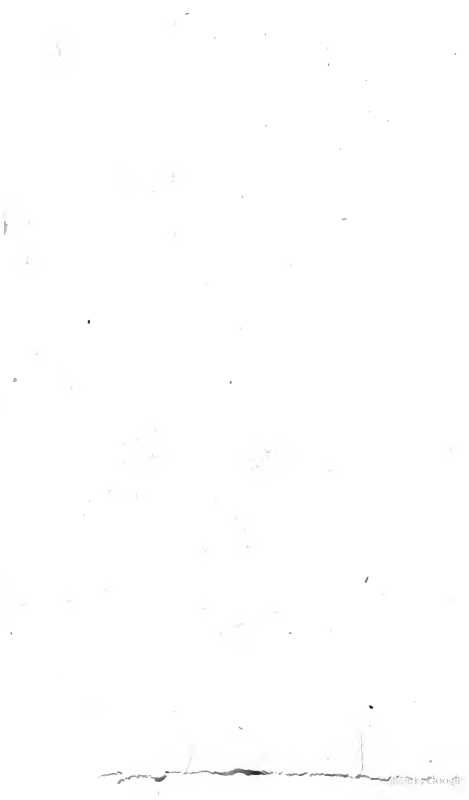


T A M I N G

OF THE

S H R E W.*

O 3



* Taming of the Shrew.] We have hitherto supposed Shakspeare the author of *The Taming of the Shrew*, but his property in it is extremely disputable. I will give my opinion, and the reasons on which it is founded. I suppose then the present play not *originally* the work of Shakspeare, but restored by him to the stage, with the whole Induction of the Tinker; and some other occasional improvements; especially in the character of Petruchio. It is very obvious that the Induction and the Play were either the works of different hands, or written at a great interval of time. The former is in our author's *best* manner, and a great part of the latter in his *worst*, or even below it. Dr. Warburton declares it to be certainly spurious; and without doubt, *supposing* it to have been written by Shakspeare, it must have been one of his earliest productions. Yet it is not mentioned in the list of his works by Meres in 1598.

I have met with a facetious piece of Sir John Harrington, printed in 1596, (and possibly there may be an earlier edition,) called *The Metamorphosis of Ajax*, where I suspect an allusion to the old play: "Read the *Booke of Taming a Shrew*, which hath made a number of us so perfect, that now every one can role a shrew in our countrey, save he that hath his." — I am aware a modern linguist may object, that the word *book* does not at present seem *dramatick*, but it was once *technically* so: Gossuo, in his *Schools of Abuse*, containing a pleasant Invective against Poets, Pipers, Players, Jesters, and such like Caterpillars of a Commonwealth, 1579, mentions "twoo profe *bookes* played at the Bell Savage;" and Hearne tells us, in a note at the end of William of Worcester, that he had seen a MS. in the nature of a *Play* or *Interlude*, intitled *The Booke of Sir Thomas Moore*.

And in fact there is such an old *anonymous* play in Mr. Pope's list: "A pleasant conceited history, called, *The Taming of a Shrew*—sundry times acted by the earl of Pembroke his servants." Which seems to have been republished by the remains of that company in 1607, when Shakspeare's copy appeared at the Black-Friars or the Globe.—Nor let this seem derogatory from the character of our poet. There is no reason to believe that he wanted to claim the play as his own; for it was not even printed till some years after his death; but he merely revived it on his stage as a *manager*.

In support of what I have said relative to this play, let me only observe further at present, that the author of *Hamlet* speaks of Gonzago, and his wife Baptista; but the author of *The Taming of the Shrew* knew Baptista to be the name of a man. Mr. Capell indeed made me doubt, by declaring the authenticity of it to be confirmed by the testimony of Sir Arlo Cockayne. I knew Sir Arlo was much acquainted with the writers immediately subsequent to Shakspeare; and I was not inclined to dispute his autho-

rity: but how was I fortified, when I found that Cockayne ascribes nothing more to Shakspeare, than the *Induction-Wincot-Ale and the Beggar*! I hoped this was only a slip of Mr. Capell's memory.

FARMER.

The following is Sir Aston's Epigram:

To MR. CLEMENT FISHER, OF WINCOT.

- " Shakspeare your Wincot-ale hath much renown'd,
- " That for'd a beggar for by change was found
- " Sleeping) that there needed not many a word
- " To make him to believe he was a lord:
- " But you assure (and in it seem most eager)
- " 'I will make a lord as drunk as any beggar.
- " Bid Norton brew such ale as Shakspeare lancies
- " And put Kit Sly into such lordly trances
- " And let us meet there (for a hit of gladness)
- " And drink ourselves merry in sober sadness."

Sir A. Cockayne's *Poems*, 1659, p. 124.

In spite of the great deference which is due from every commentator to Dr. Farmer's judgement, I own I cannot concur with him on the present occasion. I know not to whom I could impute this comedy, if Shakspeare was not its author. I think his hand is visible in almost every scene, though perhaps not so evidently as in those which pass between Katharine and Petruchio.

I once thought that the name of this play might have been taken from an old story entitled, *The Wyf lapped in Morells Skin, or The Taming of a Shrew*; but I have since discovered among the entries in the books of the Stationers' Company the following: " Peter Shore | May 2, 1594, a pleasaunt conceyted hystorie, called, *The Teyminge of a Shrowe*." It is likewise entered to Nich. Ling, Jan. 22, 1606; and to John Smythwicke, Nov. 19, 1607.

It was no uncommon practice among the authors of the age of Shakspeare, to avail themselves of the titles of ancient performances. Thus, as Mr. Warton has observed, Spenser sent out his *Pastorals* under the title of *The Shepherd's Kalender*, a work which had been printed by Wynken de Worde, and reprinted about twenty years before these poems of Spenser appeared, viz. 1559.

Dr. Percy, in the last volume of his *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry*, is of opinion, that *The Frolicsome Duke, or the Tinker's Good Fortune*, an ancient ballad in the Pepys' Collection, might have suggested to Shakspeare the Induction for this comedy.

Chance, however, has at last furnished me with the original to which Shakspeare was indebted for his fable; nor does this discovery at all dispose me to retract my former opinion, which the reader may find at the conclusion of the play. Such parts of the dialogue as our author had immediately imitated, I have occa-

sionally pointed out at the bottom of the page; but must refer the reader, who is desirous to examine the whole structure of the piece, to *Six old Plays on which Shakspeare founded*, &c. published by S. Leacroft, at Charing-cross, as a Supplement to our commentaries on Shakspeare.

Beaumont and Fletcher wrote what may be called a sequel to this comedy, viz. *The Woman's Prize, or the Tamer Tam'd*; in which Petruchio is subdued by a second wife. STEEVENS.

Among the books of my friend the late Mr. William Collins of Chichester, now dispersed, was a collection of short comick stories in prose, printed in the black letter under the year 1570, "set forth by maister Richard Edwards, mayster of her Majesties revels." Among these tales was that of the INDUCTION OF THE TINKER in Shakspeare's *Taming of the Shrew*; and perhaps Edward's story-book was the immediate source from which Shakspeare, or rather the author of the old *Taming of a Shrew*, drew that diverting apologue. If I recollect right, the circumstances almost tallied with an incident which Heuterus relates from an epistle of Ludovicus Vives to have actually happened at the marriage of Duke Philip the Good of Burgundy, about the year 1440. That perspicuous annalist, who flourished about the year 1580, says, this story was told to Vives by an old officer of the Duke's court. T. WARREN.

See the earliest English original of this story, &c. at the conclusion of the play. STEEVENS.

Our author's *Taming of the Shrew* was written, I imagine, in 1594. See *An Attempt to ascertain the Order of Shakspeare's Plays*, Vol. II. MALONE.

PERSONS represented.

A Lord.

Christopher Sly, *a drunken tinker.* } *Persons in the*
Hoftefs, Page, Players, Huntsmen, and } *Induction.*
other servants attending on the Lord. }

Baptista, *a rich gentleman of Padua.*

Vincentio, *an old gentleman of Pisa.*

Lucentio, *son to Vincentio, in love with Bianca.*

Petruchio, *a gentleman of Verona, a suitor to Katharina.*

Gremio, } *Suitors to Bianca.*
 Hortensio, }

Tranio, } *Servants to Lucentio.*
 Biondello, }

Grumio, } *Servants to Petruchio.*
 Curtis, }

Pedant, *an old fellow set up to personate Vincentio.*

Katharina, *the Shrew;* } *Daughters to Baptista.*
 Bianca, *her sister,* }

Widow.

Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants attending on Baptista and Petruchio.

SCENE, sometimes in Padua; and sometimes in Petruchio's House in the Country.

Characters in the Induction

to the Original Play of *The Taming of a Shrew*,
entered on the Stationers' books in 1594, and
printed in quarto in 1607.

A Lord, &c.

Sly.

A Tapster.

Page, Players, Huntsmen, &c.

PERSONS represented.

Alphonfus, a merchant of Athens.

Jerobel, Duke of Ceflus.

Aurelius, his son, } *Suitors to the daughters of Al-*
Ferando, } *phonfus.*
Polidor, }

Valeria, servant to Aurelius.

Sander, servant to Ferando.

Phylotus, a merchant who personates the Duke.

Kate, }
Emelia, } *Daughters to Alphonfus.*
Phylema, }

Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants to Ferando and
Alphonfus.

SCENE, Athens; and sometimes Ferando's Country
House.



T A M I N G

OF THE

S H R E W.

I N D U C T I O N.

S C E N E I.

Before an Alehouse on a Heath.

Enter Hostess and SLY.

SLY. I'll pheeze you,^a in faith.

HOST. A pair of stocks, you rogue!

* I'll pheeze you,] To pheeze or feaze, is to separate a twist into single threads. In the figurative sense it may well enough be taken, like *tease* or *toze*, for to harass, to plague. Perhaps I'll pheeze you, may be equivalent to I'll comb your head, a phrase vulgarly used by persons of Sly's character on like occasions. The following explanation of the word is given by Sir Thomas Smith, in his book *de Sermone Anglicano*, printed by Robert Stephens, 4to: "To *feize*, means in *fila diducere*." JOHNSON.

Shakspeare repeats his use of the word in *Troilus and Cressida*, where Ajax says he will pheeze the pride of Achilles: and Lovewit in *The Alchemist* employs it in the same sense. Again, in Puttenham's *Arte, of English Poesie*, 1589:

"Your pride serves you to *feaze* them all alone."

Again, in Stanyhurst's version of the first book of Virgil's *Æneid*:

"We are touz'd, and from Italye *feaz'd*."

— *Italix longe-disjungimur oris.*

Again, *ibid* :

"*Feaze* away the dronee bees," &c. STEEVENS.

¶ SLY. Y'are a baggage; the Slies are no rogues: ³ I look in the chronicles, we came in with Richard Conqueror. Therefore, *paucas pallabris*; ⁴ let the world slide: ⁵ *Seffa*!

HOST. You will not pay for the glasses you have burst? ⁶

To *phesse* a man, is to beat him; to give him a *phesse*, is, to give him a knock. In *The Chances*, Antonio says of Don John, "I felt him in my small guts: I am sure he has *feaz'd* me."

M. MASON.

To *tourre* or *tourre* had the same signification. See Florio's Italian Dictionary, 1598: "Attruffare. To *tourre*, to tug, to bang, or rib-batte one." MALONE.

³ — no rogues:] That is, *vagrants*, no mean fellows, but gentlemen. JOHNSON.

One William Sly was a performer in the plays of Shakspeare, as appears from the list of comedians prefixed to the folio, 1623. This Sly is likewise mentioned in Heywood's *Adler's Vindication*, and the Induction to Marston's *Malecontent*. He was also among those to whom James I. granted a licence to act at the Globe theatre in 1603. STEEVENS.

⁴ — *paucas pallabris*:] Sly, as an ignorant fellow, is purposely made to aim at languages out of his knowledge, and knock the words out of joint. The Spaniards say, *pocas palabras*, i. e. few words: as they do likewise, *Cessa*, i. e. be quiet.

THEOBALD.

This is a burlesque on Hieronymo, which Theobald speaks of in a following note: "What new device have they devised now? *Potas pallabris*." In the comedy of *The Roaring Girl*, 1611, a cut-puric soakes use of the same words. Again, they appear in *The Wise Woman of Hogsden*, 1638, and in some others, but are always appropriated to the lowest characters. STEEVENS.

⁵ — *let the world slide*:] This expression is proverbial. It is used in Beaumont and Fletcher's *Wit without Money*:

"—— will you go drink,

"And let the world slide, uncle?" STEEVENS.

⁶ — *you have burst*:] To *burst* and to *break* were anciently synonymous. Falstaff says, that "John of Gaunt *burst* Shallow's, head for crowding in among the marshal's men."

Again, in *Soliman and Perseda*:

"God save you, Sir, you have *burst* your shin."

SLY. No, not a denier: Go by, says Jeronimy;—
Go to thy cold bed, and warm thee.⁷

Again, in Dr. Philemon Holland's translation of Plutarch's *Apophthegms*, edit. 1603, p. 403. *To brast* and *to burst* have the same meaning. So, in *All for Money*, a tragedy by T. Lupton, 1574:

"If you forsake our father, for sorrow he will *brast*."

In the same piece, *burst* is used when it suited the rhyme. Again, in the old morality of *Every Man*:

"Though thou weep till thy hart to-*brast*." STEEVENS.

Burst is still used for *break* in the North of England. See Doddsley's *Collection of Old Plays*, edit. 1780, Vol. XII. p. 375.

REED.

⁷ — Go by, says Jeronimy;—Go to thy cold bed, and warm thee.]
The old copy reads — go by S. Jeronimie —. STEEVENS.

All the editions have coined a Saint here, for Sly to swear by. But the poet had no such intentions. The passage has particular humour in it, and must have been very pleasing at that time of day. But I must clear up a piece of stage history to make it understood. There is a suttian old play, called *Hieronymo*; or *The Spanish Tragedy*; which I find was the common butt of raillery to all the poets in Shakspeare's time: and a passage, that appeared very ridiculous in that play, is here humorously alluded to. Hieronymo, thinking himself injur'd, applies to the king for justice; but the counsellors, who did not desire his wrongs should be set in a true light, attempt to hinder him from an audience:

"*Hiero.* Justice! O! justice to Hieronymo.

"*Lor.* Back; — seest thou not the king is busy?

"*Hiero.* O, is he so?

"*King.* Who is he, that interrupts our business?

"*Hiero.* Not I: — Hieronymo, beware; go by, go by."

So Sly here, not caring to be dun'd by the Hostess, cries to her in effect, "Don't be troublesome, don't interrupt me, go by;" and to fix the satire in his allusion, pleasantly calls her Jeronimo.

THEOBALD.

The first part of this tragedy is called *Jeronimo*. The Tiuker therefore does not say *Jeronimo* as a mistake for *Hieronymo*.

STEEVENS.

I believe the true reading is — Go by, says Jeronimo, and that the *s* was the beginning of the word *says*, which, by mistake, the printers did not complete. The quotation from the old play proves that it is Jeronimo himself that says, *Go by*. M. MASON.

I have not scrupled to place Mr. M. Mason's judicious correction in the text. STEEVENS.

HOST. I know my remedy, I must go fetch the thirdborough.*

Surely Sly, who in a preceding speech is made to say *Richard for William, paucos pallabris for paucos palabrat*, &c. may be allowed here to misquote a passage from the same play in which that scrap of Spanish is found, viz. *The Spanish Tragedy*. He afterwards introduces a faint in form. — The similitude, however slight, between *Jeronomy* and S. Jerome, who in Sly's dialect would be *Jerry*, may be supposed the occasion of the blunder. He does not, I conceive, mean to address the Hostess by the name of Jeronomy, as Mr. Theobald supposed, but merely to quote a line from a popular play. Nym, Pillol, and many other of Shakspeare's low characters, quote scraps of plays with equal invidiousness.

There are two passages in *The Spanish Tragedy* here alluded to. One quoted by Mr. Theobald, and this other:

"What outcry calls me from my naked bed?"

Sly's making Jeronomy a faint is surely not more extravagant than his exhorting his Hostess to go to her cold bed to warm herself; or declaring that he will go to his cold bed for the same purpose; for perhaps, like Hieronymo, he here addresses himself.

In *King Lear*, Edgar, when he assumes the madman, utters the same words that are here put in the mouth of the tinker: "Humph; go to thy cold bed, and warm thee." MALONE.

* — I must go fetch the thirdborough.] The old copy reads: — I must go fetch the headborough.

Sly. Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, &c. STEEVENS.

This corrupt reading had pass'd down through all the copies, and none of the editors pretended to guess at the poet's conceit. What an insipid, unmeaning reply does Sly make to his Hostess? How do *third*, or *fourth*, or *fifth* borough relate to *Headborough*? The author intended but a poor witticism, and even that is lost. The Hostess would say, that she'd fetch a *conffable*; and this officer she calls by his other name, a *Third-borough*; and upon this term Sly founds the conundrum in his answer to her. Who does not perceive at a single glance, some conceit blatted by this certain correction? There is an attempt at wit, tolerable enough for a tinker, and one drunk too. *Third-borough* is a Saxon term sufficiently explained by the glossaries; and in our statute-books, no further back than the 28th year of Henry VIII. we find it used to signify a *conffable*.

THEOBALD.

In the Personæ Dramatis to Ben Jonson's *Tale of a Tub*, the *high-conffable*, the *petty-conffable*, the *head-borough*, and the *third-borough*, are enumerated as distinct characters. It is difficult to say precisely what the office of a *third-borough* was. STEEVENS.

TAMING OF THE SHREW. 209

SLY. Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I'll answer him by law : I'll not budge an inch, boy ; let him come, and kindly.

[*Lies down on the ground, and falls asleep.*]

Wind Horns. Enter a Lord from hunting, with Huntsmen and Servants.

LORD. Huntsman, I charge thee, tender well my hounds :

Brach Merriman,—the poor cur is emboss'd,*

The office of *thirdborough* is known to all acquainted with the civil constitution of this country, to be co-extensive with that of the constable. SIR J. HAWKINS.

The office of *Thirdborough* is the same with that of *Constable*, except in places where there are both, in which case the former is little more than the constable's assistant. The *headborough*, *petty constable*, and *thirdborough*, introduced by Ben Jonson in *The Tale of a Tub*, being all of different places, are but one and the same officer under so many different names. In a book intitled *The Constable's Guide*, &c. 1771, it is said that "there are in several counties of this realm other officers; that is, by other titles, but not much inferior to our constables; as in *Warwickshire* a *thirdborough*." The etymology of the word is uncertain. RISSON.

* — [*falls asleep.*] The spurious play, already mentioned, begins thus :

" *Enter a Tapster, beating out of his doores Sly drunken.*

" *Tapst.* You whoreson drunken slave, you had best be gone,

" And empty your drunken paunch somewhere else,

" For in this house thou shalt not rest to night." [*Exit Tapster.*

" *Sly.* Tilly vally; by criske Tapster Ile *sefe* you anone:

" Fills the t'other pot, and all's paid for: looke you,

" I doe drink it of mine own instigation. *Omne bene.*

" Heere Ile lie awhile: why Tapster, I say,

" Fill's a fresh culthen heere:

" Heigh ho, here's good warme lying. *He falls asleepe.*

" *Enter a noble man and his men from hunting.*"

STEVENS.

* Brach Merriman,—the poor cur is emboss'd,] Here, says Pope, *brach* signifies a degenerate hound; but Edwards explains it a hound in general.

And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth'd brach.

That the latter of these criticks is right, will appear from the use of the word *brach*, in Sir T. More's *Comfort against Tribulation*, Book III. ch. xxiv:—"Here it must be known of some men that can skill of hunting, whether that we mistake not our terms, for then are we utterly ashamed as ye wott well.—And I am so cunning, that I cannot tell, whether among them a bitche be a bitche or no; but as I remember she is no bitch but a *bratche*." The meaning of the latter part of the paragraph seems to be, "I am so little skilled in hunting, that I can hardly tell whether a bitch be a bitch or not; my judgement goes no further, than just to direct me to call either dog or bitch by their general name—Hound." I am aware that Spelman acquaints his reader, that *brache* was used in his days for a *lurcker*, and that Shakspeare himself has made it a dog of a particular species:

"Mastiff, greyhound, mungrill grim,

"Hound or spaoiel, *brach* or lym."

King Lear, A& III. sc. v.

But it is manifest from the passage of *More* just cited, that it was sometimes applied in a general sense, and may therefore be so understood in the passage before us; and it may be added, that *brache* appears to be used in the same sense by Beaumont and Fletcher:

"A. Is that your brother?

"E. Yes, have you lost your memory?

"A. As I live he is a pretty fellow.

"Y. O this is a sweet *brach*."

Scornful Lady, A& I. sc. I. T. WARTON.

I believe *brach* Merriman means only Merriman the *brach*. So in the old song:

"Cow Cramdock is a very good cow."

Brach however appears to have been a particular sort of hound. In an old metrical charter, granted by Edward the Confessor to the hundred of Chobuer and Dancing, in Essex, there are the two following lines:

"Four greyhounds & six *Bratches*,

"For hare, fox, and wild-cattes."

Merriman surely could not be designed for the name of a female of the canine species. STEEVENS.

It seems from the commentary of Ulpian upon *Gratius*, from *Caius de Canibus Britannicis*, from *bracco*, in Spelman's *Glossary*, and from Markham's *Country Contentments*, that *brache* originally meant a bitch. Ulpian, p. 163, observes, that bitches have a superior sagacity of nose:—"fœminis [canibus] sagacitatis pluri-

Saw'st thou not, boy, how Silver made it good³

mum inesse, usus docuit;" and hence, perhaps, any hound with eminent quickness of scent, whether dog or bitch, was called *brache*, for the term *brache* is sometimes applied to males. Our ancestors hunted much with the large southern hounds, and had in every pack a couple of dogs peculiarly good and cunning to find game, or recover the scent, as *Martham* informs us. To this custom Shakespeare seems here to allude, by naming *two braches*, which, in my opinion, are beagles; and this discriminates *brach*, from the *lyn*, a blood-hound mentioned together with it, in the tragedy of *King Lear*. In the following quotation altered by Mr. Stevens on another occasion, the *brache* hunts truly by the scent, behind the doe, while the hounds are on every side:

"For as the dogs pursue the silly doe,

"The *brache* behind, the hounds on every side;

"So trac'd they me among the mountains wide."

Phaer's Legend of Owen Glendower. TOLLET.

The word is certainly used by Chapman in his *Gentleman Usher*, a comedy, 1606, as synonymous to *bitch*: "*Venus*, your *brach* there, runs so proud, &c. So also, our author in *K. Henry IV.* P. I: "I'd rather hear *Lady*, my *brach*, howl in Irish." The structure of the passage before us, and the manner in which the next line is connected with this, [*And couple*, &c.] added to the circumstance of the word *brach* occurring in the end of that line, incline me to think that *Brach* is here a corruption, and that the line before us began with a verb, not a noun. MALONE.

Mr Thomas Hanmer reads—*Leech* Merriman; that is, *apply some remedies* to Merriman, the prior cur has his joints swell'd.—Perhaps we might read—*bathe* Merriman, which is, I believe, the common practice of huntsmen; but the present reading may stand. JOHNSON.

Embofs'd is a hunting term. When a deer is hard run, and foams at the mouth, he is said to be *embofs'd*. A dog, also when he is strained with hard running (especially upon hard ground) will have his knees swelled, and then he is said to be *embofs'd*: from the French word *boffe*, which signifies a tumour. This explanation of the word will receive illustration from the following passage in the old comedy, intitled, *The Shoemakers Holiday, or the gentle Craft*, acted at court, and printed in the year 1600, signat. C:

"Beate every brake, the game's not farre,

"This way with winged feet be fled from death:

"Besides, the miller's boy told me even now,

"He saw him take soyle, and he hallawed him,

"Affirming him so *embofs'd*." T. WARTON.

At the hedge-corner, in the coldest fault?
I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.

1 HUN. Why, Belman is as good as he, my lord;
He cried upon it at the merest loss,
And twice to-day pick'd out the dullest scent:
'Trust me, I take him for the better dog.

LORD. 'Thou art a fool; if Echo were as fleet,
I would esteem him worth a dozen such.
But sup them well, and look unto them all;
To-morrow I intend to hunt again.

1 HUN. I will, my lord.

LORD. What's here? one dead, or drunk? See,
doth he breathe?

2 HUN. He breathes, my lord; Were he not
warm'd with ale,
This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.

M. T. Warton first explanation may be just. Lily, in his *Midas*, 1592, has not only given us the term, but the explanation of it:

"Pet. There was a boy leath'd on the fingle, because whico he was *imbaf's'd* he took foyle.

"Li. What's that.

"Pet. Why a boy was beaten on the tayle with a leathern thong, because, when he *sem'de at the mouth* with running, he went into the water." STEEVENS.

From the Spanish, *desembocar*, to cast out of the mouth. We have again the same expression in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

"—— the boar of Thessaly

"Was never so *embaf's'd*." MALONE.

Can any thing be more evident than that *imbaf's'd* means *swelled* in the knees, and that we ought to read *taike*? What has the *imbaf'sing* of a deer to do with that of a hound? "*Imbaf'sed* sores." occur in *As you Like it*; and in the First Part of *King Henry IV.* the Prince calls Falstaff "*imbaf's'd* rascal." RITSON.

"—— how Silver made it good.] This, I suppose, is a technical term. It occurs likewise in the 25d song of Drayton's *Polyolbion*:

"What's offer'd by the first, the other *good* *doth* make."

STEEVENS.

LORD. O monstrous beast! how like a swine he lies!
 Grim death, how foul and loathsome is thine image!
 Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man.—
 What think you, if he were convey'd to bed,
 Wrap'd in sweet clothes, rings put upon his fingers,
 A most delicious banquet by his bed,
 And brave attendants near him when he wakes,
 Would not the beggar then forget himself?

1 HUN. Believe me, lord, I think he cannot choose.

2 HUN. It would seem strange unto him when he wak'd.

LORD. Even as a flattering dream, or worthless fancy.

Then take him up, and manage well the jest:
 Carry him gently to my fairest chamber,
 And hang it round with all my wanton pictures:
 Balm his foul head with warm distilled waters,
 And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet:
 Procure me musick ready when he wakes,
 To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound;
 And if he chance to speak, be ready straight,
 And, with a low submissive reverence,
 Say,—What it is your honour will command?
 Let one attend him with a silver basin,
 Full of rose-water, and bestrew'd with flowers;
 Another bear the ewer, the third a diaper,
 And say,—Will't please your lordship cool your hands?

Some one be ready with a costly suit,
 And ask him what apparel he will wear;
 Another tell him of his hounds and horse,
 And that his lady mourns at his disease:
 Persuade him, that he hath been lunatick;

And, when he says he is —, say, that he dreams,
 For he is nothing but a mighty lord.⁴
 This do, and do it kindly,⁵ gentle firs;
 It will be pastime passing excellent,
 If it be husbanded with modesty.⁶

1 HUN. My lord, I warrant you, we'll play our
 part,
 As he shall think, by our true diligence,
 He is no less than what we say he is.

LORD. Take him up gently, and to bed with him;
 And each one to his office, when he wakes.—

[Some bear out SLY. A trumpet sounds.
 Sirrah, go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds:—

[Exit Servant.

⁴ *And, when he says he is —, say, that he dreams,
 For he is nothing but a mighty lord.]* I rather think (with Sir
 Thomas Hanmer) that Shakspeare wrote:

And when he says he's poor, say that he dreams.
 The dignity of a lord is then significantly opposed to the poverty
 which it would be natural for Sly to acknowledge. STEEVENS.

If any thing should be inserted, it may be done thus:
And when he says he's Sly, say that he dreams.
 The likeness in writing of *Sly*, and *say* produced the omission.

JOHNSON,
 This is hardly right; for how should the Lord know the beggar's
 name to be *Sly*? STEEVENS.

Perhaps the sentence is left imperfect, because he did not know
 by what name to call him. BLACKSTONE.

I have no doubt that the blank was intended by the author. It
 is observable that the metre of the line is perfect, without any sup-
 plemental word. In *The Tempest* a similar blank is found, which
 Shakspeare there also certainly intended:—"I should know that
 voice; it should be —; but he is drown'd, and these are devils."

MALONE.

⁵ *This do, and do it kindly.]* *Kindly*, means naturally.

M. MASON.

⁶ — *modestly.*] By *modestly* is meant *adoration*, without suf-
 fering our meritment to break into an excess. JOHNSON.

Belike, some noble gentleman ; that means,
Travelling some journey, to repose him here.—

Re-enter a Servant.

How now ? who is 'it ?

SER. An it please your honour,
Players that offer service to your lordship.

LORD. Bid them come near :

Enter Players.

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

1 PLAY. We thank your honour.

LORD. Do you intend to stay with me to-night ?

2 PLAY. So please your lordship to accept our duty.⁷

⁷ *Enter Players.*] The old play already quoted reads :

" *Enter two of the players with packs at their backs, and a boy.*

" Now, fir, what store of plaies have you ?

" *Sen.* Marry my lord you may have a tragicall,

" Or a commoditie, or what you will.

" *The other.* A comedy thou shouldst say, founs thou'lt shame
us all.

" *Lord.* And what's the name of your comedie ?

" *Sen.* Marry my lord, 'tis calde *The Taming of a Shrew* :

" 'Tis a good lesson for us my L. for us that are married men, &c.
STEEVENS.

⁸ ——— *to accept our duty.*] It was in those times the custom of
players to travel in companies, and offer their service at great
houses. JOHNSON.

In the fifth *Earl of Northumberland's Household Book*, (with a
copy of which I was honoured by the late duchess,) the following
article occurs. The book was begun in the year 1512.

⁹ " Rewards to Players.

" Item, to be payd, to the said Richard Gowe and Thomas
Percy for rewards to players for playes playd in Chryllynmas by
strangers in my house after xxd. every play by estimation somme
xxxij s. iiij d. Which ys appoynted to be paid to the said Richard
Gowe and Thomas Percy at the said Chryllynmas in full contenta-
cion of the said rewardys xxiiij s. iiij d." STEEVENS.

LORD. With all my heart.—This fellow I remember,
 Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son;—
 'I was where you woo'd the gentlewoman so well:
 I have forgot your name; but sure that part
 Was aptly fitted, and naturally perform'd.

1. PLAY. I think, 'twas Soto⁹ that your honour
 means.

LORD. 'Tis very true;—thou didst it excellent.—
 Well, you are come to me in happy time;
 The rather for I have some sport in hand,
 Wherein your cunning can assist me much.

⁹ *I think, 'twas Soto—*] I take our author here to be paying a compliment to Beaumont and Fletcher's *Women Pleas'd*, in which comedy there is the character of *Soto*, who is a farmer's son, and a very facetious serving man. Mr. Rowe and Mr. Pope prefix the name of *Sim* to the line here spoken; but the first folio has it *Sincklo*; which, no doubt, was the name of one of the players here introduced, and who had played the part of *Soto* with applause.

THEOBALD.

As the old copy prefixes the name of *Sincklo* to this line, why should we displace it? *Sincklo* is a name elsewhere used by Shakespeare. In one of the parts of *King Henry VI.* *Humphrey* and *Sincklo* enter with their bows, as foresters.

With this observation I was favoured by a learned lady, and have replaced the old reading. STEEVENS.

It is true that *Soto*, in the play of *Women Pleas'd*, is a farmer's eldest son, but he does not woo any gentlewoman; so that it may be doubted, whether that be the character alluded to. There can be little doubt that *Sincklo* was the name of one of the players, which has crept in, both here and in the Third Part of *Henry VI.* instead of the name of the person represented.

Again, at the conclusion of the Second Part of *King Henry IV.* 2
 "Enter *Sincklo* and three or four officers." See the quarto 1600.

TYRWHITT.

If *Soto* were the character alluded to, the compliment would be to the person who played the part not the author. M. MASON.

Sincklo or *Sinckler*, was certainly an actor in the same company with Shakespeare, &c. He is introduced together with Burbage, Condell, Lowin, &c. in the Induction to Marston's *Malecontent*, 1604, and was also a performer in the entertainment entitled *The Seven Deadly Sinns.* MALONE.

There is a lord will hear you play to-night:
But I am doubtful of your modesties;
Left, over-eying of his odd behaviour,
(For yet his honour never heard a play,)
You break into some merry passion,
And so offend him; for I tell you, sirs,
If you should smile, he grows impatient.

1 PLAY. Fear not, my lord; we can contain our-
selves,
Were he the veriest antick in the world. *

* ——— in the world.] Here follows another interpolation made by Mr. Pope from the old play. These words are not in the folio, 1623. I have therefore degraded them, as we have no proof that the first sketch of the piece was written by Shakspeare:

44 *San.* [to the other.] Go, get a dishcloth to make cleane
your shooes, and Ile speak for the properties. * [Exit Player.

"My lord, we muſt have a ſhoulder of mutton for a propertie, and a little vinegre to make our diuell rore. †"

The *shoulder of mutton* might indeed be necessary afterwards for the dinner of Petruchio, but there is no devil in this piece, or in the original on which Shakspeare form'd it; neither was it yet determined what comedy should be represented. STEEVENS.

* *Property* } in the language of a playhouse, is every implement necessary to the exhibition. JOHNSON.

† ——— a little vinegar to make our dinell rose.) When the acting the mysteries of the Old and New Testament was in vogue, at the representation of the mystery of the Passion, Judas and the devil made a part. And the devil, wherever he came, was always to suffer some disgrace, to make the people laugh: as here, the buffoonery was to apply the gall and vinegar to make him rot. And the Passion being that, of all the mysteries, which was most frequently represented, vinegar became at length the standing implement to torment the devil; and was used for this purpose even after the mysteries ceased, and the moralities came in vogue; where the devil continued to have a considerable part. — The mention of it here, was to ridicule to absurd a circumstance in these old farces. WARBURTON.

All that Dr. Warburton has said relative to *Judas* and the *vinegar*, wants confirmation. I have met with no such circumstances in any *mylicries*, whether in MS. or in print; and yet both the *Chester* and *Coventry* collections are preserved in the British Museum. See MS.-Harl. 2013, and Cotton MS. Vespasian D. viii.

Perhaps, however, some entertainments of a farcical kind might have been introduced between the acts. Between the divisions of one of the *Casier Mysteries*, I met with this marginal direction: *Here the Boy*

LORD. Go, firrah, take them to the buttery,*

and *Pigs*; and perhaps the devil in the intervals of this first comedy of *The Taming of the Shrew*, might be tormented for the entertainment of the audience; or, according to a custom observed in some of our ancient puppet-shews, might beat his wife with a shoulder of mutton. In the Preface to Marlowe's *Tamburlaine*, 1590, the Printer says:

"I have (purposelie) omitted and left out some fond and frivolous jestures, digressing (and in my poore opinion) farre unmeete for the matter, which I thought might seeme more tedious unto the wife, than any way els to be regarded, though (happily) they have bene of some vaine conceited fondlings greatly gaped at, what time they were showed upon the stage in their graced deformities: nevertheless now to be mixtured in print with such matter of worth, it would prove a great disgrace," &c.

The *Bladder of vinegar* was, however, used for other purposes. I meet with the following stage direction in the old play of *Cambyse*, (by T. Preston,) when one of the characters is supposed to die from the wounds he had just received:—*Here let a small bladder of vinegar be prick'd*. I suppose to counterfeit blood: red-wine vinegar was chiefly used, as appears from the ancient books of cookery.

In the ancient Tragedy, or rather Morality, called *All for Money*, by T. Lupton, 1578, *Sin* says:

"I knew I would make him soon change his note,

"I will make him sing the Black Sanderus, I bold him a grost."

"Here *Satan* shall cry and tear."

Again, a little after.

"Here be *teareth and cleth*."

Of the kind of wit current through these productions, a better specimen can hardly be found than the following:

"*Satan*. Whatever thou wilt have, I will not thee denie.

"*Sinne*. Then give me a piece of thy tayle to make a flappe for a flye.

"For if I had a piece thereof, I do verely believe

"The humble bees stinging should never me grieve.

"*Satan*. No, my friend, no, my tayle I cannot spare,

"But aske what thou wilt besides, and I will it prepare.

"*Sinne*. Then your nose I would have to stop my tayle behind.

"For I am combred with collike and letting out of winde:

"And if it be too little to make thereof a case,

"Then I would be so bold to borrowe your face."

Such were the entertainments, of which our maiden queen sat a spectator in the earlier part of her reign. STEEVENS.

* — take them to the buttery, } Mr. Pope had probably these words in his thoughts, when he wrote the following passage of his preface: "— the top of the profession were then mere players, not gentlemen of the stage; they were led into the *buttery* by the steward, not placed at the lord's table, or the lady's toilette." But he seems not to have observed, that the players here introduced are *strollers*; and there is no reason to suppose that our author, Heminge, Burbage, Condell, &c. who were licensed by King James, were treated in this manner. MALONE.

And give them friendly welcome every one;
Let them want nothing that my house affords. —

[*Exeunt Servant and Players.*]

Sirrah, go you to Bartholomew my page,

[*To a Servant.*

And see him drefs'd in all suits like a lady:
That done, conduct him to the drunkard's chamber.

And call him—madam, do him obeisance.

Tell him from me, (as he will win my love,)

He bear himself with honourable action.

Such as he hath observ'd in noble ladies

Unto their lords, by them accomplished :

Such duty to the drunkard let him do.

With soft low tongue,³ and lowly courtesy;

And say,—What is't your honour will command.

Wherewith your lady, and your humble wife,

May show her duty, and make known her love?

And then—with kind embraces, tempting
kisses,

And with declining head into his bosom,—

Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd

To see her noble lord restor'd to health,

Who, for twice seven years, hath esteemed him

No better than a poor and loathsome beggar: ⁴

^B With soft low tongue,] So, in *King Lear*:

44 _____ Her voice was ever *soft*.

"Gentle and low; an excellent thing in woman."

MALONE.

⁴ *Was, for twice seven years, &c.*] In former editions:

Who for this seven years hath esteemed him

No better than a poor and loathsome beggar.

I have ventured to alter a word here, against the authority of the printed copies; and hope, I shall be justified in it by two subsequent passages. That the poet designed the tinker's supposed lunacy should be of fourteen years standing at least, is evident upon two parallel passages in the play to that purpose. THEOBALD.

The remark is just, but perhaps the alteration may be thought

And if the boy have not a woman's gift,
 To rain a shower of commanded tears,
 An onion⁵ will do well for such a shift;
 Which in a napkin being close convey'd,
 Shall in despite enforce a watry eye.
 See this despatch'd with all the haste thou canst;
 Anon I'll give thee more instructions.—

[Exit Servant.

I know, the boy will well usurp the grace,
 Voice, gait, and action of a gentlewoman:
 I long to hear him call the drunkard, husband;
 And how my men will stay themselves from laughter,
 When they do homage to this simple peasant.
 I'll in to counsel them: haply, my presence
 May well abate the over-merry spleen,
 Which otherwise would grow into extremes.

[Exeunt.

unnecessary by those who recollect that our author rarely reckons time with any great correctness. Both Falstaff and Orlando forget the true hour of their appointments. STEEVENS.

In both these passages the term mentioned is *fifteen*, not *fourteen*, years. The servants may well be supposed to forget the precise period dictated to them by their master, or, as is the custom of such persons, to aggravate what they have heard. There is therefore, in my opinion, no need of change. MALONE.

— *hath esteemed him*—] This is an error of the press. — We should read *himself*, instead of *him*. M. MASON.

Him is used instead of *himself*, as *you* is used for *yourselves* in *Matthæw*:

"Acquaint you with the perfect spy o'the time —."

i. e. acquaint *yourselves*.

Again, in *Ovid's Banquet of Seneca*, by Chapman, 1595:

"Sweet touch, the engine that love's bow doth bend,

"The fence wherewith he feels him deified."

STEEVENS.

⁵ *An onion*—] It is not unlikely that the *onion* was an expedient used by the actors of interludes. JOHNSON.

So, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

"The tears live in an onion that should water this sorrow."

STEEVENS.

S C E N E II.

*A Bedchamber in the Lord's House.**

SLY is discovered⁷ in a rich night gown, with Attendants; some with apparel, others with bason, ewer, and other appurtenances. Enter Lord, dress'd like a Servant.

SLY. For God's sake, a pot of small ale.⁸

1 SERV. Will't please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

* *A Bedchamber, &c.*] From the original stage-direction in the first folio it appears that Sly and the other persons mentioned in the Induction, were intended to be exhibited here, and during the representation of the comedy, in a balcony above the stage. The direction here is—"Enter aloft the drunkard with attendants, &c." So afterwards at the end of this scene—"The Presenters above speak." See the Account of our old Treatises, Vol. III.

MALONE.

⁷ *Sly is discovered, &c.*] Thus in the original play:

"Enter two with a table and a banquet on it, and two other, with Sly asleepe in a chaire, richlie apparelled, and the musick plaing.

"One. So, firha, now go call my lord;

"And tell him all things are ready as he will'd it.

"Another. Set thou some wine upon the boord,

"And then he go fetch my lord presently.

[Exit.

"Enter the Lord and his men.

"Lord. How now, what is all things readie?

"One. Yea, my lord.

"Lord. Then sound the musicke, and he wake him strait,

"And see you doe as earst I gave in charge.

"My lord, my lord, {he sleeps soundly,} my lord.

"Sly. Tapster, give's a little small ale: beigh ho.

"Lord. Heere's wisse, my lord, the purtlik of the grape.

"Sly. For which lord?

"Lord. For your honor, my lord.

"Sly. Who I, am I a lord?—Iesus, what fine apparell have I got!

"Lord. More richer far your honour hath to weare,

"And if it please you, I will fetch them straight.

2 SERV. Will't please your honour taste of these conserves?

3 SERV. What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

SLY. I am Christopher Sly; call not me—honour, nor lordship: I ne'er drank sack in my life; and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beef: Ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear; for I have no more doublets than backs, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet; nay, sometimes, more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the overleather.

LORD. Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!

O, that a mighty man, of such descent,
Of such possessions, and so high esteem,
Should be infused with so foul a spirit!

SLY. What, would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burton-heath;⁹

"Wil. And if your honour please to ride abroad,

"He fetch your lustie steeds more swift of pace

"Then winged Pegasus in all his pride,

"That ran so swiftilie over Persian plaines.

"Tom. And if your honour please to hunt the deere,

"Your hounds stands readie cuppled at the doore,

"Who in running will oretake the row,

"And make the long-breathde tygre broken-winded." STEEVENS.

* — *small ale*.] This beverage is mentioned in the accounts of the Stationers' Company in the year 1558: "For a stonde of *small ale*;" I suppose it was what we now call *small beer*, no mention of that liquor being made on the same books, though *duble bere*, and *duble duble ale*, are frequently recorded. STEEVENS.

It appears from *The Captain*, by Beaumont and Fletcher, Act IV. sc. ii. that *single beer* and *small beer* were synonymous terms.

MALONE.

* — of Burton-heath; — *Marian Hackett, the fat ale-wife of Winecot*.] I suspect we should read — *Barton-heath*. *Barton* and *Woodmancot*, or, as it is vulgarly pronounced, *Wonecot*, are both of them in Gloucestershire, near the residence of Shakspere's old

by birth a pedler, by education a card-maker, by transmutation a bear-herd, and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Wincot, if she know me not: if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheer ale, score me up for the lying'st knave in Christendom. What, I am not bestraught: Here's —

enemy. Justice Shallow. Very probably too, this fat ale-wife might be a real character. STEEVENS.

Wincote is a village in Warwickshire, with which Shakspeare was well acquainted, near Stratford. The house kept by our genial hostess, still remains, but is at present a mill. The meanest hovel to which Shakspeare has no allusion, interests curiosity, and acquires an importance: at least, it becomes the object of a poetical antiquarian's inquiries. T. WARTON.

Burton Dorset is a village in Warwickshire. RITSON.

There is likewise a village in Warwickshire called *Burton Hastings*.

Among Sir A. Cockayne's poems (as Dr. Farmer and Mr. Steevens have observed) there is an epigram on Sly and his ale, addressed to Mr. Clement Fisher of *Wincot*.

The text is undoubtedly right.

There is a village in Warwickshire called *Barton on the Heath*, where Mr. Dover, the founder of the Cotswold games, lived.

MALONE.

* — I am not bestraught:] I once thought that if our poet did not design to put a corrupted word into the mouth of the Tinker, we ought to read — *disfraught*, i. e. *distrailed*. So, in *Romeo and Juliet*:

"O, if I wake, shall I not be *disfraught*," &c.

For there is no verb extant from which the participle *bestraught* can be formed. In *Albion's England*, however, by Warner, 1602, I meet with the word as spelt by Shakspeare:

"Now teares had drowned further speech, till she as one
bestraught

"Did crie," &c.

Again, in the old Song, beginning, "When gripiog grief," &c. No. 33. *Paradyse of dainty Devises*, edit. 1576:

"*Be-fraughted* heads relyef hath founde."

Again, in Lord Surrey's translation of the 4th Book of Virgil's *Æneid*:

"Well near *bestraught*, upstart his heare for dread."

STEEVENS.

1 SERV. O, this it is that makes your lady mourn.

2 SERV. O, this it is that makes your servants droop.

LORD. Hence comes it that your kindred shun
your house,

As beaten hence by your strange lunacy.

O, noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth;

Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment,

And banish hence these abject lowly dreams:

Look, how thy servants do attend on thee,

Each in his office ready at thy beck.

Wilt thou have musick? hark! Apollo plays,

[*Musick.*

And twenty caged nightingales do sing:

Or wilt thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch,

Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed

On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis.

Say, thou wilt walk; we will bestrew the ground:

Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp'd.

Their harnesses studded all with gold and pearl.

Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will soar

Above the morning lark: Or wilt thou hunt?

Thy hounds shall make the welkin answer them,

And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth.

1 SERV. Say, thou wilt course; thy greyhounds
are as swift

As breathed flags, ay, fleetier than the roe.

2 SERV. Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch
thee straight

Adonis, painted by a running brook;

And Cytherea all in sedges hid;

Bestraught seems to have been synonymous to *disfraight* or *disturbed*. See Minshew's *Dict.* 1617: "*Bestraught*, a Lat. *distrahus* mente. Vi. *Mad* and *Bedlam*." MALONE.

Which seem to move and wanton with her breath,
Even as the waving fedges play with wind.

LORD. We'll show thee so, as she was a maid;
And how she was beguiled and surpris'd,
As lively painted as the deed was done.

3 SERV. Or Daphne, roaming through a thorny
wood;

Scratching her legs, that one shall swear she bleeds:
And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep,
So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.

LORD. Thou art a lord, and nothing but a lord:
Thou hast a lady far more beautiful
Than any woman in this waning age.

1 SERV. And, till the tears, that she hath shed
for thee,

Like envious floods, o'er-ran her lovely face,
She was the fairest creature in the world;
And yet she is inferior to none.

SLY. Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?
Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?
I do not sleep: I see, I hear, I speak;

I smell sweet favours, and I feel soft things: —
Upon my life, I am a lord, indeed;

And not a tinker, nor Christophero Sly. —
Well, bring our lady hither to our sight;

And once again, a pot o' the smallest ale.

2 SERV. Will't please your mightiness to wash
your hands?

[*Servants present an ewer, basin, and napkin.*
O, how we joy to see your wit restor'd!

O, that once more you knew but what you are!
These fifteen years you have been in a dream;

Or, when you wak'd, so wak'd as if you slept.

SLY. These fifteen years! by my fay, a goodly nap.

But did I never speak of all that time?

1 SERV. O, yes, my lord; but very idle words:—
For though you lay here in this goodly chamber,
Yet would you say, ye were beaten out of door;
And rail upon the hostess of the house;
And say, you would present her at the leet,²
Because she brought stone jugs, and no seal'd quarts;
Sometimes, you would call out for Cicely Hacket.

SLY. Ay, the woman's maid of the house.

3 SERV. Why, fir, you know no house, nor no
such maid;

Nor no such men, as you have reckon'd up,—
As Stephen Sly, and old John Naps of Greece,⁴

² — leet,] At the Court-leet, or courts of the manor.

JOHNSON.

And say, you would present her at the leet,
Because she brought stone jugs, and no seal'd quarts:] The leet is
the Court-leet, or View of frank pledge, held anciently once a year,
within a particular hundred, manor, or lordship, before the steward
of the leet. See *Kitcher On Courts*, 4th edit. 1663. "The resi-
due of the matters of the charge which ensue," says that writer,
on Court Leets, p. 21, "are enquirable and presentable, and are
also punishable in a leet." He then enumerates the various articles,
of which the following is the twenty-seventh: "Also if tiplers sell
by cups and dishes, or measures sealed, or not sealed, is inquirable."
See also *Charakteristick*, or *Lenton's Leasures*, 12mo. 1631: "He
[an informer] transforms himselfe into several shapes, to avoid
suspicion of inne-holders, and inwardly joyes at the sight of a blacke
pot or juggle, knowing that their sale by sealed quarts, spoyles his
market." MALONE.

⁴ — John Naps of Greece,] A hart of Greece, was a fat
hart. *Graisse*, Fr. So, in the old ballad of *Adam Bell*, &c.

"Eche of them flew a hart of greace."

Again, in *Ives's Select Papers*, at the coronation feast of Elizabeth
of York, queen of King Henry VII. among other dishes were
"capons of high Greece."

Perhaps this expression was used to imply that John Naps (who
might have been a real character) was a fat man: or as Point calls
the associates of Falstaff *Trojans*, John Naps might be called a
Grecian for such another reason. STEEVENS.

For old John Naps of Greece, read — old John Naps o' th'
Green. BLACKSTONE.

And Peter Turf, and Henry Pimpernell;
And twenty more such names and men as these,
Which never were, nor no man ever saw.

SLY. Now, Lord be thanked for my good amends!

ALL. Amen.⁵

SLY. I thank thee; thou shalt no lose by it.

*Enter the Page, as a lady, with Attendants.**

PAGE. How fares my noble lord?

SLY. Marry, I fare well; for here is cheer enough.
Where is my wife?

The addition seems to have been a common one. So, in our author's *King Henry IV.* P. II:

"Who is next? — Peter Bullcalf of the Green."

In *The London Chantrelers*, a comedy, 1659, a ballad entitled "George o' the Green" is mentioned. Again, in our author's *King Henry IV.* P. II: "I beseech you, sir, to countenance William Visor of Wencot, against Clement Perkes o' the hill." — The emendation proposed by Sir W. Blackstone was also suggested in Theobald's edition, and adopted by Sir T. Hanmer.

MALONE.

* In this place, Mr. Pope, and after him other editors, had introduced the three following speeches, from the old play, 1607. I have already observed that it is by no means probable, that this former comedy of *The Taming of the Shrew* was written by Shakespeare, and have therefore removed them from the text:

"Sly. By the mass, I think I am a lord indeed:

"What is thy name?

"Man. Sim, an it please your honour.

"Sly. Sim? that's as much as to say, *Simson*, or *Simca*. Put forth thy hand, and fill the pot." STEEVENS.

* *Enter the Page, &c.*] Thus in the original play:

"*Enter the Boy in woman's attire.*

"Slie. Sim, is this she?

"Lord. I, my lord.

"Slie. Masse 'tis a pretty wench; what's her name?

"Boy. Oh that my lovelie lord would once vouchsafe

PAGE. Here, noble lord; What is thy will with her?

SLY. Are you my wife, and will not call me—husband?

My men should call me—lord; I am your good-man.

PAGE. My husband and my lord, my lord and husband;

I am your wife in all obedience.

SLY. I know it well:—What must I call her?

LORD. Madam.

SLY. Al'ce madam, or Joan madam?

LORD. Madam, and nothing else; so lords call ladies.

"To looke on me, and leave these frantike fits!

"Or were I now but halfe so eloquent

"To paint in words what he performe in deedes,

"I know your honour then would pittie me.

"*Slie.* Marke you, mistresse; will you eat a peece of bread?

"Come, sit downe on my knee: *Sim*, drinke to her, *Sim*;

"For she and I will go to bed anon.

"*Lord.* May it please you, your honour's plaiers be come

"To offer your honour a plaie.

"*Slie.* A plaie, *Sim*, O brave! be they my plaiers?

"*Lord.* I my lord.

"*Slie.* Is there not a foole in the plaie?

"*Lord.* Yes, my lord.

"*Slie.* When will they plaie, *Sim*?

"*Lord.* Even when it please your honour; they be readie.

"*Boy.* My lord, he go bid them begin their plaie.

"*Slie.* Doo, but looke that you come againe.

"*Boy.* I warrant you, my lord; I will not leave you thus.

[*Exit Boy.*]

"*Slie.* Come, *Sim*, where be the plaiers? *Sim*, stand by me,

"And we'll blow the plaiers out of their coates.

"*Lord.* He cal them my lord. Ho, where are you there?

"*Sound trumpets.*

"*Enter two young gentlemen, and a man, and a boy.*" STEEVENS.

SLY. Madam wife,⁷ they say, that I have dream'd,
and slept

Above some fifteen year and more.

PAGE. Ay, and the time seems thirty unto me;
Being all this time abandon'd from your bed.

SLY. 'Tis much;——Servants, leave me and her
alone.——

Madam. undress you, and come now to bed.⁸

PAGE. Thrice noble lord, let me entreat of you,
To pardon me yet for a night or two;

Or, if not so, until the sun be set:

For your physicians have expressly charg'd,

In peril to incur your former malady,

'That I should yet absent me from your bed:

I hope, this reason stands for my excuse.

SLY. Ay, it stands so, that I may hardly tarry so
long. But I would be loth to fall into my dreams
again; I will therefore tarry, in despite of the flesh
and the blood.

Enter a Servant.

SERV. Your honour's players, hearing your
amendment,

Are come to play a pleasant comedy,

For so your doctors hold it very meet;

Seeing too much sadness hath congeal'd your blood,

And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy,

⁷ *Madam wife.*] Mr. Pope gives likewise the following prefix
to this speech from the elder play:

"Sly. Come, sit down on my knee. Sim, drink to her." Ma-
dam, &c. STREUVANS.

⁸ ——— *come now to bed.*] Here Mr. Pope adds again, —*Sim, drink
to her.* STREUVANS.

Therefore, they thought it good you hear a play,
And frame your mind to mirth and merriment,
Which bars a thousand harms, and lengthens life.

SLY. Marry, I will; let them play it: Is not a
commonly a Christmas gambol, or a tumbling
trick?⁹

PAGE. No my good lord; it is more pleasing
stuff.

SLY. What, household stuff?

PAGE. It is a kind of history.

SLY. Well, we'll see't: Come, madam wife, sit
by my side, and let the world slip; we shall ne'er
be younger. [*They sit down.*

⁹ *Is not a commonly a Christmas gambol, or a tumbling trick?*
Thus the old copies; the modern ones read—*It is not a commodity,*
&c. *Commonly* for *comedy*, &c. STEEVENS.

In the old play the players themselves use the word *commodity*
corruptly for a *comedy*. BLACKSTONE.

ACT I. SCENE I.

Padua. *A public Place.**Enter LUCENTIO and TRANIO.*

LUC. Tranio, since—for the great desire I had
 To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,—
 I am arriv'd for fruitful Lombardy,^a
 The pleasant garden of great Italy;
 And, by my father's love and leave, am arm'd
 With his good will, and thy good company,
 Most trusty servant, well approv'd in all;
 Here let us breathe, and happily institute
 A course of learning, and ingenious³ studies.
 Pisa, renowned for grave citizens,
 Gave me my being, and my father first,
 A merchant of great traffick through the world,
 Vincentio, come of the Bentivolii.⁴

^a ——— for *fruitful Lombardy*.] Mr. Theobald reads *from*. The former editions, instead of *from* had *for*. JOHNSON.

Padua is a city of Lombardy, therefore Mr. Theobald's emendation is unnecessary. STEVENS.

³ ——— *ingenious* —] I rather think it was written—*ingenuous* studies, but of this and a thousand such observations there is little certainty. JOHNSON.

In Cole's Dictionary, 1677, it is remarked — “*ingenuous* and *ingenious* are too often confounded.”

Thus, in *The Match at Midnight*, by Rowley, 1633: — “Me thinks he dwells in my opinion: a right *ingenious* spirit, veil'd merely with the variety of youth, and wildness.”

Again, in *The Bird in a Cage*, 1633:

“ ——— deal *ingeniously*, sweet lady.” REED.

⁴ *Pisa, renowned for grave citizens, &c.*] This passage, I think, should be read and pointed thus:

Vincentio his son,⁵ brought up in Florence,
It shall become, to serve all hopes conceiv'd,⁶
To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds:
And therefore, Tranio, for the time I study,
Virtue, and that part of philosophy⁷

*Pisa, renowned for grave citizens,
Gave me my being, and my father first,
A merchant of great traffick through the world,
Vincentio, come of the Bentivolii.*

In the next line, which should begin a new sentence, *Vincentio his son*, is the same as *Vincentio's son*, which Mr. Heath not apprehending, has proposed to alter Vincentio into Lucentio. It may be added, that Shakspeare in other places expresses the genitive case in the same improper manner. See *Tr Julius and Cæsar*, Act II. sc. i: "*Mars his ideot.*" And *Twelfth Night*, Act III. sc. iii: "*The Countess's galleys.*" T. W. H.

Vincentio, come of the Bentivolii.] The old copy reads—*Vincentio's*. The emendation was made by Sir T. Hanmer. I am not sure that it is right. Our author might have written:

Vincentio's son, come of the Bentivolii.

If that be the true reading, this line should be connected with the following, and a colon placed after *world* in the preceding line; as is the case in the original copy, which adds some support to the emendation now proposed:

*Vincentio's son, come of the Bentivolii,
Vincentio's son brought up in Florence,
It shall become, &c.* MALONE.

⁵ *Vincentio his son.*] The old copy reads—*Vincentio's*. STEEVENS. *Vincentio's* is here used as a quadrisyllable. Mr. Pope, I suppose, not perceiving this, unnecessarily reads—*Vincentio his son*, which has been too hastily adopted by the subsequent editors. MALONE.

Could I have read the line, as a verse, without Mr. Pope's emendation, I would not not have admitted it. STEEVENS

⁶ —to serve all hopes conceiv'd,] To fulfil the expectations of his friends. MALONE.

⁷ *Virtue, and that part of philosophy.*—] Sir Thomas Hanmer, and after him Dr. Warburton, read—*to virtue*; but formerly *ply* and *apply* were indifferently used, as *to ply* or *apply* his studies.

JOHNSON.

The word *ply* is afterwards used in this scene, and in the same manner, by Tranio:

"For who shall bear your part, &c.

"Keep house and *ply* his book?" M. MASON.

Will I apply, that treats of happiness
By virtue 'specially to be achiev'd.
Tell me thy mind: for I have Pisa left,
And am to Padua come; as he that leaves
A shallow plash, to plunge him in the deep,
And with satiety seeks to quench his thirst.

TRA. *Mi perdonate*,¹ gentle master mine,
I am in all affected as yourself;
Glad that you thus continue your resolve,
To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy.
Only, good master, while we do admire
This virtue, and this moral discipline,
Let's be no stoicks, nor no stocks, I pray;
Or so devote to Aristotle's checks,²
As Ovid be an outcast quite abjur'd:
Talk logick³ with acquaintance that you have,
And practice rhetorick in your common talk;
Musick and poesy use, to quicken you;⁴
The mathematicks, and the metaphysicks,

So, in *The Nice Wanton*, an ancient interlude, 1560:

"O ye children, let your time be well spent,

"*Apply* your learning, and your elders obey."

Again, in Gascoigne's *Supposes*, 1566: "I feare he *applies* his study to, that he will not leave the minute of an houre from his booke." MALONE.

¹ *Mi perdonate*,] Old copy—*Me perdonato*. The emendation was suggested by Mr. Steevens. MALONE.

² — *Aristotle's checks*,] are, I suppose, the harsh rules of Aristotle. STEEVENS.

Such as tend to *check* and restrain the indulgence of the passions.

MALONE.

Tranio is here descanting on academical learning, and mentions by name six of the seven liberal sciences. I suspect this to be a mis-print, made by some copyist or compositor, for *ethicks*. The sense confirms it. BLACKSTONE.

³ Talk *logick* —] Old copy—*Balk*. Corrected by Mr. Rowe.

MALONE.

⁴ — to quicken you;] i. e. *animate*. So, in *All's well that ends well*:

"Quicken a rock, and make you dance canary." STEEVENS.

Fall to them, as you find your stomach serves you:
No profit grows, where is no pleasure ta'en;—
In brief, sir, study what you most affect.

LUC. Gramercies, Tranio, well dost thou advise.
If, Biondello, thou wert come ashore,
We could at once put us in readines;
And take a lodging, fit to entertain
Such friends as time in Padua shall beget.
But stay awhile: What company is this?

TRA. Master, some show, to welcome us to town.

*Enter BAPTISTA, KATHARINA, BIANCA, GREMIO, and
HORTENSIO. LUCENTIO and TRANIO stand aside.*

BAP. Gentlemen, importune me no further,
For how I firmly am resolv'd you know;
That is,—not to bestow my youngest daughter,
Before I have a husband for the elder:
If either of you both love Katharina,
Because I know you well, and love you well,
Leave shall you have to court her at your pleasure.

GRE. To cart her rather: She's too rough for me:—
There, there Hortensio, will you any wife?

KATH. I pray you, sir, [*To BAP.*] is it your will
To make a stale of me amongst these mates?

HOR. Mates, maid! how mean you that? no
mates for you,
Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

KATH. I'faith, sir, you shall never need to fear;
I wis, it is not half way to her heart:
But, if it were; doubt not, her care should be
To comb your noddle with a three-legg'd stool,
And paint your face, and use you like a fool.

HOR. From all such devils, good Lord, deliver us!

GRE. And me too, good Lord!

TRA. Hush, master! here is some good pastime toward;

That wench is stark mad, or wonderful froward.

LUC. But in the other's silence I do see
Maids' mild behaviour and sobriety.
Peace, Tranio.

TRA. Well said, master; mum! and gaze your fill.

BAP. Gentlemen, that I may soon make good
What I have said,—Bianca, get you in:
And let it not displease thee, good Bianca;
For I will love thee ne'er the less, my girl.

KATH. A pretty peat! ³ 'tis best
Put finger in the eye,—an she knew why.

BIAN. Sister, content you in my discontent.—
Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe:
My books, and instruments, shall be my company;
On them to look, and practise by myself.

LUC. Hark, Tranio! thou may'st hear Minerva
speak. [Aside.

HOR. Signior Baptista, will you be so strange? ⁴
Sorry am I, that our good will effects
Bianca's grief.

³ A pretty peat!] *Peat* or *pet* is a word of endearment from *petit*, little, as if it meant pretty little thing. JOHNSON.

This word is used in the old play of *King Leir* (not Shakespeare's):

"Gon. I marvel, Ragan, how you can endure

"To see that proud, pert *peat*, our youngest sister," &c.

Again, in *Coridon's Song*, by Tho. Lodge; published in *England's Helicon*, 1600:

"And God send every pretty *peat*,

"Heigh hoe the pretty *peat*," &c.

and is, I believe, of Scotch extraction. I find it in one of the proverbs of that country, where it signifies *darling*.

"He has fault of a wife, that marries mam's *pet*." i. e. He is in great want of a wife who marries one that is her mother's darling. STEEVENS.

⁴ — so strange?] That is, so odd, so different from others in your conduct. JOHNSON.

GRE. Why, will you mew her up,
Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell,
And make her bear the penance of her tongue?

BAP. Gentlemen, content ye; I am resolv'd:—
Go in, Bianca. [Exit BIANCA.]

And for I know, she taketh most delight
In musick, instruments, and poetry,
Schoolmasters will I keep within my house,
Fit to instruct her youth.—If you, Hortensio,
Or signior Gremio, you,—know any such,
Prefer them hither; for to cunning men⁵
I will be very kind, and liberal

To mine own children in good bringing-up;
And so farewell. Katharina you may stay;
For I have more to commune with Bianca. [Exit.]

KATH. Why, and I trust, I may go too, May I not?
What, shall I be appointed hours; as though, belike,
I knew not what to take, and what to leave? Ha!

[Exit.]

GRE. You may go to the devil's dam; your gifts⁶
are so good, here is none will hold you. Their love
is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our
nails together, and fast it fairly out; ⁷ our cake's

⁵ ——— *cunning men*,] *Cunning* had not yet lost its original signification of *knowing, learned*, as may be observed in the translation of the Bible. JOHNSON.

⁶ ——— *your gifts*—] *Gifts for endowments*. MALONE.

So, before in this comedy:

"—— a woman's gift,

"To rain a shower of commanded tears." STEEVENS.

⁷ ——— *Their love is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our nails together, and fast it fairly out;*] I cannot conceive whose love Gremio can mean by the words *their love*, as they had been talking of no love but that which they themselves felt for Bianca. We must therefore read, *our love*, instead of *their*. M. MASON.

Perhaps we should read—*Your love*. In the old manner of writing *y^e* stood for either *their* or *your*. The editor of the third

dough on both sides. Farewell:—Yet, for the love I bear my sweet Bianca, if I can by any means light on a fit man, to teach her that wherein she delights, I will wish him to her father.⁸

HOR. So will I, signior Gremio: But a word, I pray. Though the nature of our quarrel yet never brook'd parle, know now, upon advice,⁹ it toucheth us both,—that we may yet again have access to our fair mistress, and be happy rivals in Bianca's love,—to labour and effect one thing 'specially.

GRE. What's that, I pray?

HOR. Marry, sir, to get a husband for her sister.

GRE. A husband! a devil.

HOR. I say, a husband.

GRE. I say, a devil: Think'st thou, Hortensio, though her father be very rich, any man is so very a fool to be married to hell?

HOR. Tush, Gremio! though it pass your patience, and mine, to endure her loud alarms, why, man, there be good fellows in the world, an a man could light on them, would take her with all faults, and money enough.

GRE. I cannot tell: but I had as lief take her dowry with this condition,—to be whipp'd at the high-crofs every morning.

folio and some modern editors, with, I think, less probability, read *our*. If *their* love be right, it must mean—the good will of Baptista and Bianca towards us. MALONE.

⁸ ——— *I will wish him to her father.*] i. e. I will recommend him. So, in *Much ado about Nothing*:

“To wish him wrestle with affection.” REED.

⁹ ——— *upon advice,*] i. e. on consideration, or reflection. So, in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*:

“How shall I dote on her, with more *advice*,

“That thus, without *advice*, begin to love her!”

STEVENS.

HON. 'Faith, as you say, there's small choice in rotten apples. But, come; since this bar in law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth friendly maintain'd,—till by helping Baptista's eldest daughter to a husband, we set his youngest free for a husband, and then have to't afresh.—Sweet Bianca!—Happy man be his dole! ⁹ He that runs fastest, gets the ring. ^{*} How say you, signior Gremio?

GRE. I am agreed: and 'would I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing, that would thoroughly woo her, wed her, and bed her, and rid the house of her. Come on.

[*Exeunt GREMIO and HORTENSIO.*]

TRA. [*Advancing.*] I pray, sir, tell me,—Is it possible

That love should of a sudden take such hold?

LUC. O, Tranio, 'till I found it to be true,
I never thought it possible, or likely;
But see! while idly I stood looking on,
I found the effect of love in idleness:
And now in plainness do confess to thee,—
That art to me as secret, and as dear,
As Anna to the queen of Carthage was,—
Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish, Tranio,
If I achieve not this young modest girl:
Counsel me Tranio, for I know thou canst;
Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.

⁹ *Happy man be his dole!*] A proverbial expression. It is used in *Damon and Pythias*, 1571. *Dole* is any thing dealt out or distributed, though its original meaning was the provision given away at the doors of great men's houses. STEVENS.

In *Cupid's Revenge*, by Beaumont and Fletcher, we meet with a similar expression, which may serve to explain that before us: "Then happy man be his fortune!" i. e. May his fortune be that of a happy man! MALONE.

^{*} — *He that runs fastest, gets the ring.*] An allusion to the sport of running at the ring. DOUCE.

TRA. Master, it is no time to chide you now;
Affection is not rated ³ from the heart:
If love have touch'd you, nought remains but so, ⁴—
Redime te captum quam queas minimo. ⁵

LUC. Gramercies, lad; go forward: this contents;
The rest will comfort, for thy counsel's sound.

TRA. Master, you look'd so longly ⁶ on the maid,
Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all.

LUC. O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face,
Such as the daughter of Agenor ⁷ had,
That made great Jove to humble him to her hand,
When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan strand.

³ — is not rated —] Is not driven out by chiding. MALONE.

So, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

" — 'tis to be chid,

" As we rate boys." STEEVENS.

⁴ If love have touch'd you, nought remains but so,] The next line from Terence shows that we should read:

If Love hath toyl'd you, —

i. e. taken you in his toils, his nets. Alluding to the *captus est*, *habet*, of the same author. WARBURTON.

It is a common expression at this day to say, when a bailiff has arrested a man, that he has *touch'd* him on the shoulder. Therefore *touch'd* is as good a translation of *captus*, as *toyl'd* would be. Thus, in *As you Like it*, Rosalind says to Orlando: "Cupid hath *clapt* him on the shoulder, but I warrant him heart-whole." M. MASON.

⁵ *Redime*, &c.] Our author had this line from *Lilly*, which I mention, that it may not be brought as an argument for his learning. JOHNSON.

Dr. Farmer's pamphlet affords an additional proof that this line was taken from *Lilly*, and not from *Terence*; because it is quoted, as it appears in the *grammarian*, and not as it appears in the *poet*. It is introduced also in Decker's *Bellman's Night-Walk*, &c. It may be added, that *captus est*, *habet*, is not in the same play which furnished the quotation. STEEVENS.

⁶ — *longly* —] i. e. longingly. I have met with no example of this adverb. STEEVENS.

⁷ — *daughter of Agenor* —] Europa, for whose sake Jupiter transformed himself into a bull. STEEVENS.

TRA. Saw you no more? mark'd you not, how
her sister

Began to scold; and raise up such a storm,
That mortal ears might hardly endure the din?

LUC. Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move,
And with her breath she did perfume the air;
Sacred, and sweet, was all I saw in her.

TRA. Nay, then, 'tistime to stir him from his trance.
I pray, awake, sir; If you love the maid,
Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it
stands:—

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd,
That, till the father rid his hands of her,
Master, your love must live a maid at home;
And therefore has he closely mew'd her up,
Because she shall not be annoy'd ' with suitors.

LUC. Ah, Tranio, what a cruel father's he!
But art thou not advis'd, he took some care
To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct her?

TRA. Ay, marry, am I, sir; and now 'tis plotted.

LUC. I have it, Tranio.

TRA. Master, for my hand,
Both our inventions meet and jump in one.

LUC. Tell me thine first.

TRA. You will be schoolmaster,
And undertake the teaching of the maid:
That's your device.

LUC. It is: May it be done?

TRA. Not possible; For who shall bear your part,
And be in Padua here Vincentio's son?
Keep house, and ply his book; welcome his friends;
Visit his countrymen, and banquet them?

— she shall not be annoy'd —] Old copy—she will not.
Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

LUC. Basta;⁹ content thee; for I have it full.⁹
 We have not yet been seen in any house;
 Nor can we be distinguish'd by our faces,
 For man, or master: then it follows thus;—
 Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead,
 Keep house, and port,¹⁰ and servants, as I should:
 I will some other be; some Florentine,
 Some Neapolitan, or mean man of Pisa.¹¹—
 'Tis hatch'd, and shall be so:—Tranio, at once
 Uncase thee; take my colour'd hat and cloak:
 When Biondello comes, he waits on thee,
 But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

TRA. So had you need. [*They exchange habits.*]
 In brief, sir, sith it your pleasure is,
 And I am tied to be obedient;
 (For so your father charg'd me at our parting;
Be serviceable to my son, quoth he,
 Although, I think, 'twas in another sense,)
 I am content to be Lucentio.
 Because so well I love Lucentio.

LUC. Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves:
 And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid
 Whose sudden fight hath thrall'd my wounded eye.

⁹ *Basta*;] i. e. 'tis enough; Italian and Spanish. This expression occurs in *The Mad Lover*, and *The Little French Lawyer*, of Beaumont and Fletcher. STEEVENS.

⁹ — *I have it full.*] i. e. conceive our stratagem in its full extent, I have already planned the whole of it. So, in *Othello*:

"I have it, 'tis engender'd —" STEEVENS.

¹⁰ — *port*,] *Port*, is figure, show, appearance. JOHNSON.
 So, in *The Merchant of Venice*:

"'Tis not unknown to you, Antonio,

"How much I have disabled mine estate

"By something showing a more swelling port

"Than my faint means would grant continuance." REED.

¹¹ — *or mean man of Pisa.*] The old copy, regardless of metre, reads — *meaner*. STEEVENS.

Enter BIONDELLO.

Here comes the rogue.—Sirrah, where have you been?

BION. Where have I been? Nay, how now, where are you?

Master, has my fellow Tranio stol'n your clothes? Or you stol'n his? or both? pray, what's the news?

LUC. Sirrah, come hither; 'tis no time to jest, And therefore frame your manners to the time. Your fellow Tranio here, to save my life, Puts my apparel and my countenance on, And I for my escape have put on his; For in a quarrel, since I came ashore, I kill'd a man, and fear I was descried:^a Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes, While I make way from hence to save my life: You understand me?

BION. I, sir? ne'er a whit.

LUC. And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth; Tranio is chang'd into Lucentio.

BION. The better for him; 'Would, I were so too!

TRA. So would I,³ 'faith, boy, to have the next with after,—

That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's youngest daughter.

^a —and fear I was descried: } i. e. I fear I was observ'd in the act of killing him. The editor of the third folio reads — I am descried; which has been adopted by the modern editors.

MALONE.

³ So would I, } The old copy has—could. Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

But, firrah,—not for my sake, but your master's,—
I advise

You use your manners discreetly in all kind of companies:

When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio;
But in all places else, your matter⁴ Lucentio.

LUC. Tranio, let's go:—

One thing more rests, that thyself execute;—
To make one among these wooers: If thou ask me
why,—

Sufficeth, my reasons are both good and weighty.⁵
[*Exeunt.*⁶

1 SERV. My lord, you nod; you do not mind the play.

SLY. Yes, by saint Anne, do I. A good matter, surely; Comes there any more of it?

PAGE. My lord, 'tis but begun.

SLY. 'Tis a very excellent piece of work, madam lady; 'Would't were done!

⁴ —your master—] Old copy—*you* master. Corrected by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

⁵ —good and weighty.] The division for the second act of this play is neither marked in the folio nor quarto editions. Shakspeare seems to have meant the first act to conclude here, where the speeches of the Tinker are introduced; though they have been hitherto thrown to the end of the first act, according to a modern and arbitrary regulation. STEEVENS.

⁶ *Exeunt.*] Here in the old copy we have—"The Presenters above speak."—meaning Sly, &c. who were placed in a balcony raised at the back of the stage. After the words—"Would it were done," the marginal direction is—*They sit and mark.*

MALONE.

S C E N E II.

The same. Before Hortensio's House.

Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO.

PET. Verona, for a while I take my leave,
To see my friends in Padua; but, of all,
My best beloved and approved friend,
Hortensio; and, I trow, this is his house:—
Here, firrah Grumio; knock, I say.

GRU. Knock, sir! whom should I knock? is
there any man has rebus'd your worship?⁶

PET. Villain, I say knock me here soundly.

GRU. Knock you here,⁷ sir? why, sir, what am I,
sir, that I should knock you here, sir?

PET. Villain, I say, knock me at this gate,
And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's pate.

GRU. My master is grown quarrelsome: I should
knock you first,

And then I know after who comes by the worst.

PET. Will it not be?

'Faith, firrah, an you'll not knock, I'll wring it;⁸
I'll try how you can *sol, fa*, and sing it.

[*He wrings GRUMIO by the ears.*

⁶ — has rebus'd your worship? What is the meaning of *rebus'd*? or is it a false print for *abus'd*? TYRWHITT.

⁷ *Knock you here,*] Grumio's pretensions to wit have a strong resemblance to those of Dromio in *The Comedy of Errors*; and this circumstance makes it the more probable that these two plays were written at no great distance of time from each other.

MALONE.

⁸ — wring it:] Here seems to be a quibble between *ringing* at a door, and *wringing* a man's ears. STEEVENS.

GRU. Help, masters,⁹ help! my master is mad.

PET. Now knock when I bid you: sirrah! villain!

Enter HORTENSIO.

HOR. How now? what's the matter?—My old friend Grumio! and my good friend Petruchio!—How do you all at Verona?

PET. Signior Hortensio, come you to part the fray?

Con tutto il core bene trovato, may I say.

HOR. *Alla nostra casa bene venuto, Molto honorato signor mio Petruchio.*

Rise, Grumio, rise; we will compound this quarrel.

GRU. Nay, 'tis no matter, what he 'leges in Latin.²—If this be not a lawful cause for me to

⁹ *Help*, masters.] The old copy reads—*here*; and in several other places in this play *mistress*, instead of *masters*. Corrected by Mr. Theobald. In the Mss. of our author's age M was the common abbreviation of *Master* and *Mistress*. Hence the mistake. See *The Merchant of Venice*, A & V. 1600, and 1623:

"What ho, M. [Master] Lorenzo, and M. [Mistress] Lorenzo." MALONE.

² ——— *what he 'leges in Latin.*] l. c. I suppose, what he *alleges* in Latin. Petruchio has been just speaking Italian to Hortensio, which Grumio mistakes for the other language. STEEVENS.

I cannot help suspecting that we should read—*Nay, 'tis no matter what he leges in Latin, if this be not a lawful cause for me to leave his service. Look you, sir.*—That is, " 'Tis no matter what is law, if this be not a lawful cause," &c. TYRWHITT.

Tyrwhitt's amendment and explanation of this passage is evidently right. Mr. Steevens appears to have been a little absent when he wrote his note on it. He forgot that Italian was Grumio's native language, and that therefore he could not possibly mistake it for Latin. M. MASON.

I am grateful to M. M. Mason for his hint, which may prove beneficial to me on some future occasion, though at the present

leave his service.—Look you, fir,—he bid me knock him, and rap him soundly, fir: Well, was it fit for a servant to use his master so; being, perhaps, (for aught I see,) two and thirty,—a pip out?³
Whom, 'would to God, I had well knock'd at first, Then had not Grumio come by the worst.

PET. A senseless villain!—Good Hortensio, I bade the rascal knock upon your gate, And could not get him for my heart to do it.

GRU. Knock at the gate?—O heavens! Spake you not these words plain,—*Sirrah, knock me here,*

*Rap me here, knock me well, and knock me soundly?*⁴ And come you now with—knocking at the gate?

PET. Sirrah, be gone, or talk not, I advise you.

HOR. Petruchio, patience; I am Grumio's pledge: Why, this is a heavy chance 'twixt him and you; Your ancient, trusty, pleasant servant Grumio.

moment it will not operate so forcibly as to change my opinion. I was well aware that Italian was Grumio's native language, but was not, nor am now, certain of our author's attention to this circumstance, because his Italians necessarily speak English throughout the play, with the exception of a few colloquial sentences. So little regard does our author pay to petty proprieties, that as often as *Signior*, the Italian appellation, does not occur to him, nor suit the measure of his verse, he gives us in its room, "*Sir Viucenio*," and "*Sir Lueentio*." STEVENS.

³ —a pip out?] The old copy has—*peeps*. Corrected by Mr. Pope. MALONE.

⁴ —knock me soundly?] Shakspeare seems to design a ridicule on this clipped and ungrammatical phraseology; which yet he has introduced in *Othello*:

"I pray tell me of Cassio."

It occurs again, and more improperly, in heroic translation:

"—upon advantage spide,

"Did wound me Molphey on the leg," &c.

Arthur Golding's *Ovid*, B. V. p. 66. b. STEVENS.

And tell me now, sweet friend,—what happy gale
Blows you to Padua here, from old Verona?

PET. Such wind as scatters young men through
the world,

To seek their fortunes further than at home,
Where small experience grows. But, in a few,⁵

Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me:—

Antonio, my father, is deceas'd;

And I have thrust myself into this maze,

Haply to wive, and thrive, as best I may:

Crowns in my purse I have, and goods at home,

And so am come abroad to see the world.

HOR. Petruchio, shall I then come roundly to
thee,

And wish thee to a shrewd ill-favour'd wife?

Thou'dst thank me but a little for my counsel:

And yet I'll promise thee she shall be rich,

And very rich:—but thou'rt too much my friend,

And I'll not wish thee to her.

PET. Signior Hortensio, 'twixt such friends as
we,

Few words suffice: and, therefore, if thou know

One rich enough to be Petruchio's wife,

(As wealth is burthen of my wooing dance,⁶)

Be she as foul as was Florentius' love.⁷

⁵ *Where small experience grows. But, in a few,]* In a few, means the same as in short, in few words. JOHNSON.

So, in *K. Henry IV. Part II.*

"In few;—his death, whose spirit lent a fire," &c.

STEEVENS.

⁶ *(As wealth is burthen of my wooing dance.)]* The burthen of a dance is an expression which I have never heard; the burthen of his wooing song had been more proper. JOHNSON.

⁷ *Be she as foul as was Florentius' love,]* I suppose this alludes to the story of a Florentine, which is met with in the eleventh Book of Thomas Lupton's *Thousand Notable Things*, and perhaps in other Collections.

As old as Sibyl, and as curst and shrewd
 As Socrates' Xantippe, or a worse,
 She moves me not, or not removes, at least,

"39. A Florentine young gentleman was so deceived by the lustre and orientness of her jewels, pearls, rings, lawns, scarves, laces, gold spangles, and other gaudy devices, that he was ravished overnight, and was mad till the marriage was solemnized. But next morning by light viewing of her before she was so gorgeously trim'd up, she was such a leane, yellow, riveled, deformed creature, that he oever lay with her, oor lived with her afterwards; and would say that he had married himself to a stinking house of office, painted over, and set out with fine garments: and so for grief consumed away to melancholy, and at last poysoned himself. *Gomphus, lib. 5. de Sal. Gen. cap. 22.*" FARMER.

The allusion is to a story told by Gower in the first book *De Confessione Amantis*. Florent is the name of a knight who had bound himself to marry a deformed hag, provided she taught him the solution of a riddle on which his life depended. The following is the description of her:

"Florent his wofull heed up lifte,
 "And saw this vecke, where that she sit,
 "Which was the lothest wighte
 "That ever man caste on his eye:
 "Hir oofe baas, hir browes hie,
 "Hir eyes small, and depe sette,
 "Hir chekes ben with teres wette,
 "And rivelyn as an empty skye,
 "Hangyng downe unto the chyn;
 "Hir lippes shronken ben for age,
 "There was no grace to hir visage.
 "Hir front was narowe, hir lockes hore,
 "She looketh soorth as doth a more;
 "Hir oecke is shorte, hir shulders courbe,
 "That might a mans luste distourbe:
 "Hir bodie great, and no thyng small,
 "And shortly to deserive hir all,
 "She hath no lith without a lacke,
 "But like unto the woll sacke:" &c. —
 "Though she be the foulest of all," &c.

This story might have been borrowed by Gower from an older narrative in the *Gesta Romanorum*. See the Introductory Discourse to *The Canterbury Tales of Chaucer*, Mr. Tyrwhitt's edition, Vol. IV. p. 153. STEEVENS.

Affection's edge in me; were she as rough^{*}
 As are the swelling Adriatick seas:
 I come to wive it wealthily in Padua;
 If wealthily, then happily in Padua.

GRU. Nay, look you, sir, he tells you flatly what his mind is: Why, give him gold enough, and marry him to a puppet, or an aglet-baby;[†] or an old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head, though she have as many diseases as two and fifty horses:[‡] why nothing comes amiss, so money comes withal.

HOR. Petruchio, since we have stepp'd thus far in, I will continue that I broach'd in jest. I can, Petruchio, help thee to a wife With wealth enough, and young, and beauteous: Brought up, as best becomes a gentlewoman: Her only fault (and that is faults enough,)[§]

* — were she as rough—] The old copy reads—were she is as rough. Corrected by the editor of the second folio.

MALONE.

† — aglet-baby;] i. e. a diminutive being, not exceeding in size the tag of a point.

So, in *Jerónimo*, 1605:

“And all those flars that gaze upon her face,

“Are aglets on her sleeve-pins and her train.”

STEEVENS.

An *aglet-baby* was a small image or head cut on the tag of a point, or lace. That such figures were sometimes appended to them, Dr. Waiburton has proved, by a passage in Mezeray, the French historian:—“portant même sur les aiguillettes [points] des petites têtes de mort.” MALONE.

‡ — as many diseases as two and fifty horses:] I suspect this passage to be corrupt, though I know not how to rectify it.—The fifty diseases of a horse seem to have been proverbial. So, in *The Yorkshire Tragedy*, 1608: “O stumbling jade! the spavin o’ertake thee! the fifty diseases stop thee!” MALONE.

§ — and that is faults enough,)] And that one is itself a host of faults. The editor of the second folio, who has been copied by all the subsequent editors, unnecessarily reads—*and that is fault enough*. MALONE.

Is,—that she is intolerably curst,
And shrewd,⁴ and froward; so beyond all measure,
That were, my state, far worser than it is,
I would not wed her for a mine of gold.

PET. Hortensio, peace; thou know'st not gold's
—effect:

Tell me her father's name, and 'tis enough;
For I will board her, though she clide as loud
As thunder, when the clouds in autumn crack.

HOR. Her father is Baptista Minola,
An affable and courteous gentleman:
Her name is, Katharina Minola,
Renown'd in Padua for her scolding tongue.

PET. I know her father, though I know not her;
And he knew my deceased father well:—
I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her;
And therefore let me be thus bold with you,
To give you over at this first encounter,
Unless you will accompany me thither.

GRU. I pray you, sir, let him go while the humour
lasts. O' my word, and she knew him as well as I
do, she would think scolding would do little good
upon him: She may, perhaps, call him half a score
knaves, or so: why; that's nothing; an he begin
once, he'll rail in his rope-tricks.⁵ I'll tell you

⁴ — *shrewd*,] here means, having the qualities of a *shrew*.
The adjective is now used only in the sense of *acute*, *intelligent*.

MALONE.

I believe *shrewd* only signifies *bitter*, *severe*. So, in *As you Like it*,
sc. ult:

“That have endur'd *shrewd* days and nights with us.”

STEEVENS.

⁵ — *an he begin once, he'll rail in his rope-tricks*.] This is obscure. Sir Thomas Hanmer reads—*he'll rail in his rhetoric*; *I'll tell you*, &c. Rhetoric agrees very well with *figure* in the succeeding part of the speech, yet I am inclined to believe that *rope-tricks* is the true word. JOHNSON.

what, fir,—an she stand him⁶ but a little, he will throw a figure in her face, and so disfigure her with it, that she shall have no more eyes to see withal than a cat :⁷ You know him not, fir.

In *Romeo and Juliet*, Shakspeare uses *ropery* for *reguery*, and therefore certainly wrote *rope-tricks*.

Rope-tricks we may suppose to mean tricks of which the cootriver would deserve the *rope*. STEEVENS.

Rope-tricks is certainly right. — *Ropery* or *rope-tricks* originally signified abusive language, without any determinate idea; such language as parrots are taught to speak. So, in *Hudibras*:

“ Could tell what subt’l’st parrots mean,

“ That speak, and think contrary clean;

“ What member ’tis of whom they talk,

“ When they cry *rope*, and walk, knave, walk.”

The following passage is Wilson’s *Arte of Rhetorique*, 1555, shews that this was the meaning of the term: “ Another good fellow in the countrey, being an officer and maiour of a towne, and desirous to speak like a fine learned man, having just occasion to rebuke a runnegate fellow, said after this wise in great heate: Thou yngram and vacation knave, If I take thee any more within the circumcision of my damocion, I will so corrupte thee that all vacatioo koaves shall take ill sample by thee. This the author in the margin calls “ *rope-ripe* chiding.” So, in *May-day*, a comedy by Chapman, 1611: “ Lord! how you roll in your *rope-ripe* terms. MALONE.

⁶ — stand him—] i. e. withstand, resist him.

STEEVENS.

⁷ — that she shall have no more eyes to see withal than a cat:]

The humour of this passage I do not understand. This animal is remarkable for the keenness of its sight. In the *Castell of Laboure*, however, printed by Wynkyn de Worde, 1506, is the following line: “ That was as *blereyed* as a cat.”

There are two proverbs which any reader who can, may apply to this allusion of Grumio:

“ Well might the *cat* wink when both her eyes were out.”

“ A *muffed* cat was never a good huoter.”

The first is in *Ray’s Collection*, the second in *Kelly’s*.

STEEVENS.

It may mean, that he shall swell up her eyes with blows, till she shall seem to peep with a contracted pupil, like a cat in the light. JOHNSON.

HOR. Tarry, Petruchio, I must go with thee ;
 For in Baptista's keep⁷ my treasure is :
 He hath the jewel of my life in hold,
 His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca ;
 And her withholds from me, and other more
 Suitors to her, and rivals in my love :⁸
 Supposing it a thing impossible,
 (For those defects I have before rehears'd,)
 That ever Katharina will be woo'd,
 Therefore this order hath Baptista ta'en ;⁹—
 That none shall have access unto Bianca,
 Till Katharine the curst have got a husband.

GRU. Katharine the curst !
 A title for a maid ; of all titles the worst.

HOR. Now shall my friend Petruchio do me grace ;
 And offer me, disguis'd in sober robes,
 To old Baptista as a school-master
 Well seen in musick,¹⁰ to instruct Bianca :
 That so I may by this device, at least,

⁷ — in *Baptista's keep*—] *Keep* is custody. The strongest part of an ancient castle was called the *keep*. STEEVENS.

⁸ *And her withholds, &c.*] It stood thus :

And her withholds from me.

Other more suitors to her, and rivals in my love, &c.

The regulation which I have given to the text, was dictated to me by the ingenious Dr. Thirlby. THEOBALD.

⁹ *Therefore this order hath Baptista ta'en ;*] To take order is to take measures. So, in *Othello* :

"Honest Iago hath ta'en order for it." STEEVENS.

¹⁰ *Well seen in musick.*] *Seen* is versed, practised. So, in a very ancient comedy called *The longer thou Livest the more Fool thou art* :

"Sum would have you *seen* in flories,

"Sum to feates of arms will you allure, &c.

"Sum will move you to reade Scripture.

"Marry, I would have you *seene* in cardes and dice."

Again, in Spenser's *Faery Queen*, B. IV. c. ii :

"When *seene* in every science that mote bee."

STEEVENS.

Have leave and leisure to make love to her,
And unsuspected, court her by herself.

*Enter GREMIO; with him LUCENTIO disguised, with
books under his arm.*

GRU. Here's no knavery! See; to beguile the
old folks, how the young folks lay their heads to-
gether! Master, master, look about you: Who goes
there? ha!

HOR. Peace, Grumio; 'tis the rival of my love:—
Petruchio, stand by a while.

GRU. A proper stripling, and an amorous!

[They retire.]

GRE. O very well; I have perus'd the note,
Hark you, sir; I'll have them very fairly bound:
All books of love, see that at any hand;
And see you read no other lectures to her:
You understand me:—Over and beside
Signor Baptista's liberality,
I'll mend it with a largess:—Take your papers too,
And let me have them very well perfum'd;
For she is sweeter than perfume itself,
To whom they go. What will you read to her?

LUC. Whate'er I read to her, I'll plead for you,
As for my patron, (stand you so assur'd,)
As firmly as yourself were still in place:
Yea, and (perhaps,) with more successful words
Than you, unless you were a scholar, sir.

GRE. O this learning! what a thing it is!

* — at any hand;] i. e. at all events. So, in *All's well that
ends well*:

" — let him fetch off his drum, in any hand." STEEVENS.

? *To whom they go.*] The old copy reads—*To whom they go to.*

STEEVENS.

GRU. O this woodcock! what an afs it is!

PET. Peace, firrah.

HOR. Grumio, mum?—God save you, signior Gremio!

GRE. And you're well met, signior Hortensio.

Trow you,

Whither I am going?—To Baptista Minola.

I promis'd to enquire carefully

About a schoolmaster for fair Bianca:*

And, by good fortune, I have lighted well

On this young man; for learning and behaviour,

Fit for her turn; well read in poetry,

And other books, good ones, I warrant you.

HOR. 'Tis well: and I have met a gentleman,

Hath promis'd me to help me² to another,

A fine musician to instruct our mistress;

So shall I no whit be behind in duty

To fair Bianca, so belov'd of me.

GRE. Belov'd of me,—and that my deeds shall prove.

GRU. And that his bags shall prove. [*Aside.*]

HOR. Gremio, 'tis now to time no vent our love:

Listen to me, and if you speak me fair,

I'll tell you news indifferent good for either:

Here is a gentleman, whom by chance I met,

Upon agreement from us to his liking,

Will undertake to woo curst Katharine;

Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please.

GRE. So said, so done, is well:—

Hortensio; have you told him all her faults?

* — for fair Bianca:] The old copy redundantly reads —
"for the fair Bianca." STEEVENS.

² — help me—] The old copy reads—help *me*. STEEVENS.
Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

PET. I know, she is an irksome brawling scold;
If that be all, masters, I hear no harm.

GRE. No, say'st me so, friend? What countryman?

PET. Born in Verona, old Antonio's son :⁴
My father dead, my fortune lives for me;
And I do hope good days, and long, to see.

GRE. O, fir, such a life, with such a wife, were
strange :

But, if you have a stomach, to't o'God's name;
You shall have me assisting you in all.
But will you woo this wild cat?

PET. Will I live?

GRU. Will he woo her? ay, or I'll hang her.

[*Aside.*

PET. Why came I hither, but to that intent?
Think you, a little din can daunt mine ears?
Have I not in my time heard lions roar?
Have I not heard the sea, puff'd up with winds,
Rage like an angry boar, chafed with sweat?
Have I not heard great ordnance in the field,
And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies?
Have I not in a pitched battle heard
Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpets'
clang?⁵

⁴ — old Antonio's son :] The copy reads—*Butenio's* son.

STEEVENS.

Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

⁵ — and trumpets' clang?] Probably the word *clang* is here used adjectively, as in the *Paradise Lost*, B. XI. v. 834, and not as a verb :

" — an island salt and bare,

" The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews *clang*."

T. WARTON.

I believe Mr. Warton is mistaken. *Clang* as a substantive, is used in *The Noble Gentleman* of Beaumont and Fletcher :

" I hear the *clang* of trumpets in this house."

And do you tell me of a woman's tongue ;
That gives not half so great a blow to the ear,*
As will a chefnut in a farmer's fire ?
Tush ! tush ! fear boys with bugs. †

GRU.

For he fears none.

[*Aside.*]

GRE. Hortensio, hark !

This gentleman is happily arriv'd,
My mind presumes, for his own good, and yours.

HOR. I promis'd, we would be contributors,
And bear his charge of wooing, whatsoe'er.

GRE. And so we will ; provided, that he win her.

GRU. I would, I were as sure of a good dinner.

[*Aside.*]Again, in *Tamburlaine*, &c. 1590 :" — hear you the *clang*

" Of Scythian trumpets ? "

Again, in *The Cobler's Prophecy*, 1594 :" The trumpets *clang*, and roaring noise of drums. "Again, in *Claudius Tiberius Nero*, 1607 :" Hath not the *clang* of harsh Armenian troops, " &c.Again, in Drant's translation of Horace's *Art of Poetry*, 1567 :

" Fit for a chorus, and as yet the boystus founde and shrill

" Of trumpetes *clang* the stalties was not accustomed to fill. "

The *Trumpets' clang* is certainly the *clang* of trumpets, and not an epithet bestowed on those instruments. STEEVENS.

* — *so great a blow to the ear,*] The old copy reads—to hear. STEEVENS.

This awkward phrase could never come from Shakspeare. He wrote, without question,

— *so great a blow to th' ear.* WARBURTON.

The emendation is Sir T. Hanmer's. MALONE.

So, in *K. John* :

" Our ears are cudgell'd ; not a word of his

" But *buffets* better than a fist of France. " STEEVENS.† — *with bugs,*] i. e. with *bug-bears*.So, in *Cymbeline* :

" — are become

" The moral *bugs* o' the field. " STEEVENS.

Enter TRANIO, *bravely apparell'd*; and BIONDELLO.

TRA. Gentlemen, God save you! If I may be bold,

Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest way
To the house of signior Baptista Minola?

GRE. He that has the two fair daughters:—is't
[*Aside to TRANIO.*] he you mean?^a

TRA. Even he. Biondello!

GRE. Hark you, sir; You mean not her to——

TRA. Perhaps, him, and her, sir; What have
you to do?

PET. Not her that chides, sir, at any hand, I
pray.

TRA. I love no chiders, sir:—Biondello, let's
away.

LUC. Well begun, Tranio. [*Aside.*]

^a *He that has the two fair daughters: &c.*] In the old copy, this speech is given to Biondello. STEVENS.

It should rather be given to Gremio; to whom with the others, Tranio has addressed himself. The following passages might be written thus:

TRA. *Even he. Biondello!*

GRE. *Hark you, sir; you mean not her too.* TYRWHITT.

I think the old copy, both here and in the preceding speech is right. Biondello adds to what his master had said the words—
“He that has the two fair daughters,” to ascertain more precisely the person for whom he had enquired; and then addresses Tranio;
“is't he you mean?”

— *You mean not her to—*] I believe, an abrupt sentence was intended; or perhaps Shakspeare might have written—*her do was*. Tranio, in his answer might mean, that he would *was* the father, to obtain his consent, and the daughter for herself. This, however, will not complete the metre. I incline therefore to my first supposition. MALONE.

I have followed Mr. Tyrwhitt's regulation. STEVENS.

HOR. Sir, a word ere you go;—

Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yea, or no?

TRA. An if I be, fir, is it any offence?

GRE. No; if without more words, you will get you hence.

TRA. Why, fir, I pray, are not the streets as free for me, as for you?

GRE. But so is not she.

TRA. For what reason, I beseech you?

GRE. For this reason, if you'll know,—
That she's the choice love of signior Gremio.

HOR. That she's the chosen of signior Hortensio.

TRA. Softly, my masters! if you be gentlemen,
Do me this right,—hear me with patience.

Baptista is a noble gentleman,
To whom my father it not all unknown;
And, were his daughter fairer than she is,
She may more suitors have, and me for one.
Fair Leda's daughter had a thousand wooers;
Then well one more may fair Bianca have:
An so she shall; Lucentio shall make one,
Though Paris came, in hope to speed alone.

GRE. What! this gentleman will out-talk us all.

LUC. Sir, give him head; I know he'll prove
a jade.

PET. Hortensio, to what end are all these words?

HOR. Sir, let me be so bold as to ask you,
Did you yet ever see Baptista's daughter?

TRA. No, fir; but hear I do, that he hath two,
The one as famous for a scolding tongue,
As is the other for beauteous modesty.

PET. Sir, fir, the first's for me; let her go by.

GRE. Yea, leave that labour to great Hercules;
And let it be more than Alcides' twelve.

PET. Sir, understand you this of me, insooth;—
The youngest daughter, whom you hearken for,
Her father keeps from all access of suitors;
And will not promise her to any man,
Until the elder sister first be wed:
The younger then is free, and not before.

TRA. It it be so, sir, that you are the man
Must stead us all, and me among the rest;
An if you break the ice, and do this feat,⁹—
Achieve the elder, set the younger free
For our access,—whose hap shall be to have her,
Will not so graceless be, to be ingrate.

HOR. Sir, you say well, and well you do conceive;
And since you do profess to be a suitor,
You must, as we do, gratify this gentleman,
To whom we all rest generally beholden.

TRA. Sir, I shall not be slack: in sign whereof,
Please ye we may contrive this afternoon,¹

⁹ ——— *this feat.*] The old copy reads—*this seek*. The emendation was made by Mr. Rowe.

¹ *Please ye we may contrive this afternoon.*] Mr. Theobald asks what they were to contrive? and then says, a foolish corruption possesses the place, and so alters it to *convive*; in which he is followed as he pretty constantly is, when wrong, by the Oxford editor. But the common reading is right, and the critic was only ignorant of the meaning of it. *Contrive* does not signify here to project but to spend, and wear out. As in this passage of Spenser:

"Three ages such as mortal men contrive."

Fairy Queen, B. XI. c. ix. WARBURTON.

The word is used in the same sense of *spending* or *wearing out*, in *Painter's Palace of Pleasure*. JOHNSON.

So, in *Damon and Pythias*, 157: 1

"In travelling countries, we three have contrived

"Full many a year, &c.

And quaff carouses to our mistress' health ;
And do as adversaries do in law ,²—

Strive mightily, but eat and drink as friends.

GRU. BION. O excellent motion ! Fellows, let's
begone.³

HOR. The motion's good indeed, and be it
so ;—

Petruchio, I shall be your *ben venuto*. [Exeunt.

Contrive, I suppose, is from *contrere*. So, in the *Hecyra* of Terence.
" Totum hunc contrivi diem." STEEVENS.

² — as adversaries do in law,] By *adversaries in law*, I believe, our author means not suitors, but *barristers*, who, however, warm in their opposition to each other in the courts of law, live in greater harmony and friendship in private, than perhaps those of any other of the liberal professions. Their *clients* seldom " eat and drink with their adversaries as friends." MALONE.

³ — Fellows, let's begone.] *Fellows* means *fellow-servants*. Grumio and Biondello address each other, and also the disguised Lucentio. MALONE.

A C T II. S C E N E I.

The same. A Room in Baptista's House.

Enter KATHARINA and BIANCA.

BIAN. Good sister, wrong me not, nor wrong yourself,⁴

To make a bondmaid and a slave of me;
That I disdain: but for these other gawds.⁵—
Unbind my hands, I'll pull them off myself,
Yea, all my raiment, to my petticoat;
Or, what, you will command me, will I do,
So well I know my duty to my elders.

KATH. Of all my suitors, here, I charge thee,⁶ tell
Whom thou lov'st best: see thou dissemble not.

BIAN. Believe me, sister, of all the men alive,
I never yet beheld that special face
Which I could fancy more than any other.

KATH. Minion, thou liest; Is't not Hortensio?

BIAN. If you affect him, sister, here I swear,
I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have him.

KATH. O then, belike, you fancy riches more;
You will have Gremio to keep you fair.⁷

⁴ — not wrong yourself,] Do not act in a manner unbecoming a woman and a sister. So, in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*: "Master Ford, this wrongs you." MALONE.

⁵ — but for these other gawds;] The old copy reads—*these other goods*. STEEVENS.

This is so trifling and unexpressive a word, that I am satisfied our author wrote *gawds*, (i. e. toys, trifling ornaments;) a term that he frequently uses and seems fond of. THEOBALD.

⁶ — I charge thee,] *There*, which was accidentally omitted in the old copy, was supplied by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

⁷ — to keep you fair.] I wish to read—to keep you fine. But either word may serve. JOHNSON.

Talk not to me; I will go sit and weep,
Till I can find occasion of revenge.

[Exit KATHARINA.]

BAP. Was ever gentleman thus griev'd as I?
But who comes here?

Enter GREMIO, with LUCENTIO in the habit of a mean man; PETRUCHIO, with HORTENSIO as a musician; and TRANIO, with BIONDELLO bearing a lute and books.

GRE. Good-morrow, neighbour Baptista.

BAP. Good-morrow, neighbour Gremio: God save you, gentlemen!

PET. And you, good sir! Pray, have you not a daughter

Call'd Katharina, fair, and virtuous?

BAP. I have, a daughter, sir, call'd Katharina.

GRE. You are to blunt, go to it orderly.

PET. You wrong me, signior Gremio; give me leave.—

I am a gentleman of Verona, sir,
That,—hearing of her beauty, and her wit,
Her affability, and bashful modesty,
Her wondrous qualities, and mild behaviour,—
Am bold to show myself a forward guest
Within your house, to make mine eye the witness
Of that report which I so oft have heard.
And, for an entrance to my entertainment,

to old maids. We meet with it again in *Much ado about Nothing*:
“Therefore (says Beatrice,) I will even take six pence in earnest of the *brar-herd*, and lead his *apes* to hell.” MALONE.

That women who refused to bear children, should, after death, be condemned to the care of apes in leading-strings, might have been considered as an act of posthumous retribution. STEVENS.

I do present you with a man of mine,

[*Presenting* HORTENSIO.

Cunning in musick, and the mathematicks,
To instruct her fully in those sciences,
Whereof, I know, she is not ignorant :
Accept of him, or else you do me wrong ;
His name is Licio, born in Mantua.

BAP. You're welcome, fir ; and he, for your good
sake :

But for my daughter Katharine,—this I know,
She is not for your turn, the more my grief.

PET. I see, you do not mean to part with her ;
Or else you like not of my company.

BAP. Mistake me not, I speak but as I find.
Whence are you, fir ? what may I call your name ?

PET. Petruchio is my name ; Antonio's son,
A man well known throughout all Italy.

BAP. I know him well : you are welcome for
his sake.

GRE. Saving your tale, Petruchio, I pray,
Let us, that are poor petitioners, speak too :
Baccare ! you are marvellous forward.³

³ Baccare ! you are marvellous forward.] We must read, *Baccalare* ; by which the Italians mean, thou arrogant, presumptuous man ! the word is used scornfully upon any one that would assume a port of grandeur. WARBURTON.

The word is neither wrong nor Italian : it was an old proverbial one, used by John Heywood ; who hath made, what he pleases to call, *Epigrams* upon it. Take two of them, such as they are :

" Baccare, quoth Mortimer to his son,

" Went that son *backe* at that bidding, trow you ? "

" Baccare, quoth Mortimer to his son : se,

" Mortimer's son speaketh as good Latin as he."

Howel takes this from Heywood, in his *Old Sawes and Adages* ; and Philpot introduces it into the proverbs collected by Camden :

FARMER.

PET. O, pardon me, signior Gremio; I would fain be doing.

GRE. I doubt it not, sir; but you will curse your wooing.—

Neighbour,⁴ this is a gift⁵ very grateful, I am sure of it. To express the like kindness myself, that have been more kindly beholden to you than any, I freely give unto you this young scholar,⁶ [*Presenting LUCENTIO,*] that hath been long studying at Rheims; as cunning in Greek, Latin, and other languages. as the other in musick and mathematicks: his name is Cambio; pray, accept his service.

Again, in the ancient Enterlude of *The Repentance of Mary Magdalene*, 1567:

"Nay, hoa there, *Backere*, you must stand apart:

"You love me best, I trow, mistress *Mary*."

Again, in John Lyly's *Midas*, 1592: "The masculine gender is more worthy than the feminine, and therefore, Lieio, *Backere*."

Again, in John Grange's *Golden Aphroditis*, 1577: "— yet wrestled he for his effeminate bande to the siege of *backward* affection, that both trumpe and drumme founded nothing for their larum, but *Baccare, Baccare*." STEEVENS.

⁴ *Neighbour*.] The old copy has — *neighbours*. Corrected by Mr. Theobald. MALONE.

⁵ *I doubt it not, sir; but you will curse your wooing*.—

Neighbour, this is a gift—] The old copy gives the passage as follows:

I doubt it not, sir. But you will curse

Your wooing neighbors: this is a gift—. STEEVENS.

This nonsense may be rectified by only pointing it thus: *I doubt it not, sir, but you will curse your wooing. Neighbour, this is a gift, &c.* addressing himself to Baptista. WARBURTON.

⁶ *I freely give unto you this young scholar*.] Our modern editors have been long content with the following sophistical reading: — *free leave give to this young scholar*.— STEEVENS.

This is an injudicious correction of the first folio, which reads— *freely give unto this young scholar*. We should read, I believe—

I freely give unto you this young scholar,

That hath been long studying at Rheims; as cunning

In Greek, &c. TYRWHITT.

If this emendation wanted any support, it might be had in the

BAP. A thousand thanks, signior Gremio : welcome, good Cambio.—But, gentle sir, [*To TRANIO.*] methinks, you walk like a stranger ; May I be so bold to know the cause of your coming ?

TRA. Pardon me, sir, the boldness is mine own ; That, being a stranger in this city here, Do make myself a suitor to your daughter, Unto Bianca, fair, and virtuous. Nor is your firm resolve unknown to me, In the preferment of the eldest sister : This liberty is all that I request — That, upon knowledge of my parentage, I may have welcome 'mongst the rest that woo, And free access and favour as the rest. And, toward the education of your daughters, I here bestow a simple instrument, And this small packet of Greek and Latin books :⁶ If you accept them, then their worth is great.

BAP. Lucentio is your name ?⁷ of whence, I pray ?

TRA. Of Pisa, sir ; son to Vincentio.

preceding part of this scene, where Petruchio, presenting Hortensio to Baptista, uses almost the same form of words :

“ And, for an entrance to my entertainment,

“ I do present you with a man of mine,

“ Cunning in music,” &c.

Free leave give, &c. was the absurd correction of the editor of the third folio. MALONE.

⁶ — *this small packet of Greek and Latin books :*] In Queen Elizabeth's time the young ladies of quality were usually instructed in the learned languages, if any pains were bestowed on their minds at all. Lady Jane Grey and her sisters, Queen Elizabeth, &c. are trite instances. PERCY.

⁷ *Lucentio is your name ?*] How should Baptista know this ? Perhaps a line is lost, or perhaps our author was negligent. Mr. Theobald supposes they converse privately, and that thus the name is learned ; but then the action must stand still ; for there is no speech interposed between that of Tranio and this of Baptista. Another editor imagines that Lucentio's name was written on the packet of books. MALONE.

BAP. A mighty man of Pisa; by report
 I know him well: * you are very welcome, sir.—
 Take you [*To HOR.*] the lute, and you [*To LUC.*
 the set of books,
 You shall go see your pupils presently.
 Holla, within !—

Enter a Servant.

Sirrah, lead
 These gentlemen to my daughters ; and tell them
 both,
 These are their tutors ; bid them use them well.
 [*Exit Servant, with HORTENSIO, LUCENTIO,*
 and BIONDELLO.

We will go walk a little in the orchard,
 And then to dinner : You are passing welcome,
 And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

PET. Signor Baptista, my business asketh haste,

* *I know him well* : It appears in a subsequent part of this play, that Baptista was not personally acquainted with Vincentio. The pedant indeed talks of Vincentio and Baptista having lodged together twenty years before at an inn in Genoa : but this appears to have been a fiction for the nonce ; for when the pretended Vincentio is introduced, Baptista expresses no surprise at his not being the same man with whom he had formerly been acquainted ; and, when the real Vincentio appears, he supposes him an impostor. The words therefore, *I know him well*, must mean, " I know well who he is." Baptista uses the same words before, speaking of Petruchio's father : " I know him well ; you are welcome for his sake"—where they must have the same meaning ; viz. *I know who he was* ; for Petruchio's father is supposed to have died before the commencement of this play.

Some of the modern editors point the passage before us thus :

A mighty man of Pisa ; by report

I know him well.—

but it is not so pointed in the old copy, and the regulation seems unnecessary, the very same words having been before used with equal licence concerning the father of Petruchio.

Again in *Timon of Athens* : " We know him for no less, though we are but strangers to him." MALONE.

And every day I cannot come to woo.⁹
 You knew my father well; and in him, me,
 Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,
 Which I have better'd rather than decreas'd :
 Then tell me,—if I get your daughter's love,
 What dowry shall I have with her to wife?

BAP. After my death, the one half of my lands ;
 And, in possession, twenty thousand crowns.

PET. And, for that dowry, I'll assure her of
 Her widowhood,⁹—be it that she survive me,—
 In all my lands and leases whatsoever :
 Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,
 That covenants may be kept on either hand.

BAP. Ay, when the special thing is well obtain'd,
 This is,—her love; for that is all in all.

PET. Why, that is nothing; for I tell you, father,
 I am as peremptory as she proud-minded;
 And where two raging fires meet together,
 They do consume the thing that feeds their fury :
 Though little fire grows great with little wind,
 Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all :
 So I to her, and so she yields to me;
 For I am rough, and woo not like a babe.

⁹ *And every day I cannot come to woo.* This is the burthen of part of an old ballad entitled *The Ingenious Braggadosio* :

"And I cannot come every day to woo."

It appears also from a quotation in Puttenham's *Arte of English Poesie*, 1589, that it was a line in his Interlude entitled *The Woer* :

"Iche pray you good mother tell our young dame

"Whence I am come, and what is my name;

"*I cannot come a woing every day.*" STEEVENS.

* ——— *I'll assure her of*

Her widowhood,] Sir T. Hanmer reads—*for her widowhood.* The reading of the copy is harsh to our ears, but it might have been the phraseology of the time. MALONE.

Perhaps we should read—*as her widowhood.* In the old copies *on* and *of* are not unfrequently confounded, through the printers' inattention. STEEVENS.

BAP. Well may'st thou woo, and happy be thy speed!

But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words.

PET. Ay, to the proof; as mountains are for winds,

That shake not, though they blow perpetually.

Re-enter HORTENSIO, with his head broken.

BAP. How now, my friend? why dost thou look so pale?

HOR. For fear, I promise you, if I look pale.

BAP. What, will my daughter prove a good musician?

HOR. I think, she'll sooner prove a soldier; Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.

BAP. Why then thou canst not break her to the lute?

HOR. Why no; for she hath broke the lute to me.

I did but tell her, she mistook her frets,³
And bow'd her hand to reach her fingering;
When, with a most impatient devilish spirit,
Frets call you these? quoth she: *I'll fume with them:*
And, with that word, she struck me on the head,
And through the instrument my pate made way;
And there I stood amazed for a while,
As on a pillory, looking through the lute:
While she did call me, — rascal fiddler,

³ — her frets.] A fret is that stop of a musical instrument which causes or regulates the vibration of the string. JOHNSON.

And twangling Jack ;³ with twenty such vile terms,
As she had⁴ studied to misuse me fo.

PET. Now, by the world, it is a lusty wench ;
I love her ten times more than e'er I did :
O, how I long to have some chat with her !

BAP. Well, go with me, and be not so discom-
fited :

Proceed in practise with my younger daughter ;
She's apt to learn, and thankful for good turns.—
Signor Petruchio, will you go with us ;
Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you ?

PET. I pray you do ; I will attend her here, —
[*Exeunt* BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO, and
HORTENSIO.

And woo her with some spirit when she comes.
Say, that she rail ; Why, then, I'll tell her plain,
She sings at sweetly as a nightingale :
Say, that she frown ; I'll say, she looks as clear
As morning roses newly wash'd with dew :⁵

³ — *And—twagling Jack ;*] Of this contemptuous appellation I know not the precise meaning. Something like it, however, occurs in *Magnificence*, an ancient folio interlude by Skelton, printed by Rastell :

" — ye wene I were some hafter,

" Or ellys some *jangleynge jacks* of the vale." STEEVENS.

To *twangle* is a provincial expression, and signifies to flourish capriciously on an instrument, as performers often do after having tuned it, previous to their beginning a regular composition.

HENLEY.

Twangling Jack is, mean, paltry lutanist. MALONE.

I do not see with Mr. Malone, that *twangling Jack* means " paltry lutanist," though it may " paltry musician." DOUGL.

⁴ — *she had—*] In the old copy these words are accidentally transposed. Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

⁵ *As morning roses newly wash'd with dew :*] Milton has honoured this image by adopting it in his *Allegro* :

" And fresh-blown roses wash'd in dew." STEEVENS.

Say, she be mute, and will not speak a word;
 Then I'll commend her volubility,
 And say—she uttereth piercing eloquence:
 If she do bid me pack, I'll give her thanks,
 As though she bid me stay by her a week;
 If she deny to bed, I'll crave the day
 When I shall ask the banns, and when be married:—
 But here she comes; and now, Petruchio, speak.

Enter KATHARINA.

Good morrow, Kate;⁶ for that's your name, I hear.

⁶ *Good morrow, Kate; &c.*] Thus in the original play:

⁶ *Feran.* Twenty good-morrows to my lovely *Kate* :

⁶ *Kate.* You jeaft I am fure; is the yours already?

⁶ *Feran.* I tel thee *Kate*, I know thou lov'ft me wel.

⁶ *Kate.* The divel you do; who told you fo?

⁶ *Feran.* My mind, sweet *Kate*, doth fay I am the man,

⁶ Muft wed, and bed, and marrie bonnie *Kate*.

⁶ *Kate.* Was ever feene fo groffe an affe as this?

⁶ *Feran.* I, to ftand fo long and never get a kiffe.

⁶ *Kate.* Hands off, I fay, and get you from this place;

⁶ Or I will fet my ten commandements in your face.

⁶ *Feran.* I prithy do, *Kate*, they fay thou art a shrew.

⁶ And I like thee better, for I would have thee fo.

⁶ *Kate.* Let go my hand, for feare it reach your eare;

⁶ *Feran.* No, *Kate*, this hand is mine, and I thy love.

⁶ *Kate.* Y faith, fir, no; the woodcokc wants his taile.

⁶ *Feran.* But yet his bil will ferve, if the other faile.

⁶ *Alfon.* How now, *Ferando*? what [fays] my daughter?

⁶ *Feran.* She's willing, fir, and loves me as her life.

⁶ *Kate.* 'Tis for your ikin then, but not to be your wife.

⁶ *Alfon.* Come hither, *Kate*, and let me give thy hand,

⁶ To him that I have chofen for thy love;

⁶ And thou to-morrow fhalt be wed to him.

⁶ *Kate.* Why, father, what do you mean to do with me,

⁶ To give me thus unto this brainficke man,

⁶ That in his mood cares not to murder me?

She turns afide and fpeaks.

⁶ But yet I will confent and marry him,

KATH. Well have you heard, but something hard
of hearing;⁷

They call me—Katharine, that do talk of me.

PET. You lie, in faith; for you are call'd plain
Kate,

And bonny Kate, and sometimes Kate the curst;
But Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom,
Kate of Kate-Hall, my super-dainty Kate,
For dainties are all cates: and therefore, Kate,
Take this of me, Kate of my consolation;—
Hearing thy mildness prais'd in every town,
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauty founded,]
(Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs,)
Myself am mov'd to woo thee for my wife.

KATH. Mov'd! in good time: let him that mov'd
you hither,

Remove you hence; I knew you at the first,
You were a moveable.

PET. Why, what's a moveable?

KATH. A joint-stool.⁸

" (For I methinks have liv'd too long a maide,)]

" And match him too, or else his manhood's good.

" *Alfon.* Give me thy hand: *Ferando* loves thee well,

" And will with wealth and ease maintaine thy state.

" Here *Ferando*, take her for thy wife,

" And Sunday next shall be our wedding-day.

" *Feran.* Why so, did I not tell I should be the man?

" Father, I leave my lovely *Kate* with you.

" Provide yourselves against our marriage day,

" For I must hie me to my country house

" In haste, to see provision may be made

To entertaine my *Kate* when she doth come," &c. STEEVENS.

? *Well have you heard, but something hard of hearing;*] A poor quibble was here intended. It appears from many old English books that *hard* was pronounced in our author's time, as if it were written *hard*. MALONE.

⁸ *A joint-stool.* This is a proverbial expression:

" Cry you mercy, I took you for a join'd stool."

PET. Thou hast hit it: come, sit on me.

KATH. Affes are made to bear, and so are you.

PET. Women are made to bear, and so are you.

KATH. No such jade, fir,⁹ as you, if me you mean.

PET. Alas, good Kate! I will not burden thee: For, knowing thee to be but young and light, —

KATH. Too light for such a swain as you to catch;

And yet as heavy as my weight should be.

PET. Should be? should buz.

KATH. Well ta'en, and like a buzzard.

PET. O, slow-wing'd turtle! shall a buzzard take thee?

KATH. Ay, for a turtle; as he takes a buzzard.*

PET. Come, come, you wasp; i'faith, you are too angry.

See Ray's *Collection*. It is likewise repeated as a proverb in *Mother Bombie*, a comedy by Lyly, 1594, and by the Fool in *King Lear*. STEEVENS.

⁹ *No such jade, fir,*] The latter word, which is not in the old copy, was supplied by the editor of the second folio.

MALONE.

Perhaps we should read — no such *jack*. However there is authority for *jade* in a male sense. So, in *Soliman and Perseda*, *Pisbon* says of *Basilisco*, "He *just* like a *knicht*! He'll *just* like a *jade*."

FARMER.

So, before, p. 258: "I know *he'll* prove a *jade*." MALONE.

⁹ *Ay, for a turtle; as he takes a buzzard.*] Perhaps we may read better —

Ay, for a turtle, and he takes a buzzard.

That is, he may take me for a turtle, and he shall find me a hawk.

JOHNSON.

This kind of expression likewise seems to have been proverbial. So, in *The Three Lords of London*, 1590:

"—hast no more skill,

"Than take a *falcon* for a *butterd*?" STEEVENS.

KATH. If I be waspish, best beware my sting.

PET. My remedy is then, to pluck it out.

KATH. Ay, if the fool could find it where it lies.

PET. Who knows not where a wasp doth wear
his sting?

In his tail.

KATH. In his tongue.

PET. Whose tongue?

KATH. Yours, if you talk of tails;³ and so fare-
well.

PET. What, with my tongue in your tail? nay,
come again,

Good Kate; I am a gentleman.

KATH. That I'll try.

[Striking him.

PET. I swear I'll cuff you, if you strike again.

KATH. So may you lose your arms:

If you strike me, you are no gentleman;

And if no gentleman, why, then no arms.

PET. A herald, Kate? O, put me in thy books.

KATH. What is your crest? a coxcomb?

PET. A comble's cock, so Kate will be my hen.

KATH. No cock of mine, you crow too like a
craven.⁴

³ *Yours, if you talk of tails;*] The old copy reads—*tales*, and it may perhaps be right.—“Yours, if your talk be no better than an idle tale.” Our author is very fond of using words of similar sounds in different senses.—I have, however, followed the emendation made by Mr. Pope, which all the modern editors have adopted.

MALONE.

⁴ —a craven.] A craven is a degenerate, dispirited cock. So, in *Rhodon and Iris*, 1631:

“That he will pull the craven from his nest.”

STEEVENS.

PET. Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not look
so frow.

KATH. It is my fashion, when I see a crab.

PET. Why, here's no crab; and therefore look
not frow;

KATH. There is, there is.

PET. Then show it me.

KATH. Had I a glass, I would.

PET. What, you mean my face?

KATH. Well aim'd of such a young one.

PET. Now, by faint George, I am too young for
you.

KATH. Yet you are wither'd.

PET. 'Tis with cares.

KATH. I care not.

PET. Nay, hear you, Kate: in sooth, you 'scape
not so.

KATH. I chafe you, if I tarry; let me go.

PET. No, not a whit; I find you passing gentle.
'Twas told me, you were rough, and coy, and full-
len,

And now I find report a very liar;
For thou art pleasant, gamefome, passing courteous;
But slow in speech, yet sweet as spring-time flowers;
'Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look askance,
Nor bite the lip, as angry wenches will;

Craven was a term also applied to those who in appeals of
battle became recreant, and by pronouncing this word, called for
quarter from their opponents; the consequence of which was, that
they for ever after were deemed infamous.

See note on *'Tis Pity she's a Whore*. *Doddley's Collection of Old
Plays*, Vol. VIII. p. 10. edit. 1780. REED.

Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk;
 But thou with mildness entertain'st thy wooers,
 With gentle conference, soft and affable.
 Why does the world report, that Kate doth limp?
 O slanderous world! Kate, like the hazle-twig,
 Is straight, and slender; and as brown in hue
 As hazle nuts, and sweeter than the kernels.
 O, let me see thee walk: thou dost not halt.

KATH. Go, fool, and whom thou keep'st com-
 mand.⁵

PET. Did ever Dian so become a grove,
 As Kate this chamber with her princely gait?
 O, be thou Dian, and let her be Kate;
 And then let Kate be chaste, and Dian sportful!

KATH. Wheredid you study all this goodly speech?

PET. It is extempore, from my mother-wit.

KATH. A witty mother! witless else her son.

PET. Am I not wise?

KATH. Yes; keep you warm.⁶

PET. Marry, so I mean, sweet Katharine, in thy
 bed:

And therefore, setting all this chat aside,
 Thus in plain terms:—Your father hath consented
 That you shall be my wife; your dowry 'greed on;

⁵ *Go, fool; and whom thou keep'st command.*] This is exactly the *Παράμειπε ἐπιταγή* of Theocritus, Eid. xv. v. 90. and yet I would not be positive that Shakspeare had ever read even a translation of Theocritus. TYRWHITT.

⁶ *Pet. Am I not wise?*

Kath. Yes; keep you warm.] So, in Beaumont and Fletcher's *Scornful Lady*:

"—your house has been kept warm, Sir.

"I am glad to hear it; pray God, you are wise too."

Again, in our poet's *Much Ado about Nothing*:

"—that if he has wit enough to keep himself warm."

STEVENS.

And, will you, nill you,⁷ I will marry you.
 Now, Kate, I am a husband for your turn;
 For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty,
 (Thy beauty, that doth make me like thee well,)
 Thou must be married to no man but me:
 For I am he am born to tame you, Kate;
 And bring you from a wild Cat to a Kate⁸
 Conformable, as other household Kates.
 Here comes your father; never make denial,
 I must and will have Katharine to my wife.

Re-enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, and TRANIO.

BAP. Now,
 Signior Petruchio: How speed you with
 My daughter?

PET. How but well, sir? how but well?
 It were impossible, I should speed amiss.

BAP. Why, how now, daughter Katharine? in
 your dumps?

KATH. Call you me, daughter? now, I promise
 you,
 You have show'd a tender fatherly regard,
 To wish me wed to one half lunatick;

⁷ —nill you,] So, in *The Death of Robert Earl of Huntington*, 1601:

"Will you or nill you, you must yet go in."

Again, in *Damon and Pythias*, 1591:

"Neede hath no law; will I, or nill I, it must be done."

STEEVENS.

⁸ —a wild cat to a Kate—] The first folio reads—

—a wild Kate to a Kate, &c.

The second folio —

"—a wild Kat to a Kate, &c. STEEVENS.

The editor of the second folio with some probability reads —
 from a wild Kat (meaning certainly cat.) So before: "But will
 you woo this wild cat?" MALONE.

A mad-cap ruffian, and a swearing Jack,
That thinks with oaths to face the matter out.

PET. Father, 'tis thus,—yourself and all the
world,

That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her;
If she be curst, it is for policy;

For she's not froward, but modest as the dove;
She is not hot, but temperate as the morn;

For patience she will prove a second Grissel;^a

And Roman Lucrece for her chastity:

And to conclude,—we have 'greed so well to-
gether,

That upon Sunday is the wedding-day.

KATH. I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first.

GRE. Hark, Petruchio! she says, she'll see thee
hang'd first.

TRA. Is this your speeding? nay, then, good night
our part!

PET. Be patient, gentlemen; I choose her for
myself;

If she and I be pleas'd, what's that to you?

'Tis bargain'd 'twixt us twain, being alone,

That she shall still be curst in company.

I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe

How much she loves me: O, the kindest Kate!—

^a — [a second Grissel; &c.] So, in *The Fair Maid of Brisslow*,
1605. bl. i:

“ I will become as mild and dutiful

“ As ever Grissel was unto her lord,

“ And for my constancy as Lucrece was.”

There is a play entered at Stationers' Hall, May 28, 1599, called
“ The plaie of Patient Grissel.” Boccaccio was the first known
writer of the story, and Chaucer copied it in his *Clerke of Oxen-*
ford's Tale. STEVENS.

The story of *Grisel* is older than Boccaccio, and is to be found
among the compositions of the French Fabliers. DOUGL.

She hung about my neck; and kifs on kifs
 She vied so fast,² protesting oath on oath,
 That in a twink she won me to her love.
 O, you are novices! 'tis a world to see,³
 How tame, when men and women are alone,
 A meacock wretch⁴ can make the curstest shrew.—
 Give me thy hand, Kate: I will unto Venice,

* — kifs on kifs

She vied so fast,] *Vye and reuye* were terms at cards, oow superseded by the more modern word, *brag*. Our author has in another place, "time *reuyes* us," which has been unnecessarily altered. The words were frequently used in a sense somewhat remote from their original one. In the famous trial of the seven bishops, the chief justice says, "We must oot permit *vyng and reuyng* upoo ooe another." FARMER.

It appears from a passage in Green's *Tu Quoque*, that to *vie* was one of the terms used at the game of *Gleeck*—"I *vie* it."—"I'll none of it;—nor I,"

The same expression occurs in Randolph's *Jealous Lover*, 1632:

"All that I have is thine, though I could *vie*,

"For every silver hair upon my head,

"A piece of gold." STEEVENS.

Vie and *Revie* were terms at *Primero*, the fashionable game in our author's time. See Florio's *Second Frutes*, quarto, 1591: S. "Let us play at *Primero* theu. A. What shall we play for? S. One shilling stake and three rest.—I *vye* it; will you hould it? A. Yea, fir, I hould it, and *reuye* it."

To *out-vie* Howel explains in his Dictionary, 1660, thus: "Faire peur ou intimider avec un vray ou feint *envy*, & faire quitter le jeu à la partie contraire." MALONE.

³ — 'tis a world to see,] i. e. it is wonderful to see. This expression is often met with in old historians as well as dramatic writers. So, in *Holinshed*, Vol. I. p. 209: "It is a world to see how many strange heartes," &c. STEEVENS.

⁴ A meacock wretch—] i. e. a timorous dastardly creature So, in Decker's *Honest Whore*, 1604:

"A woman's well help up with such a meacock."

Again, in Glapthorne's *Hollander*, 1640:

"They are like my husband; mere meacocks verily."

Again, to *Apian and Virginia*, 1575:

"As stout as a stockfish, as meek as a meacock."

STEEVENS.

To buy apparel 'gainst the wedding-day:—
Provide the feast, father, and bid the guests;
I will be sure, my Katharine shall be fine.

BAP. I know not what to say: but give me your hands:

God send you joy, Petruchio! 'tis a match.

GRE. TRA. Amen, say we; we will be witnesses.

PET. Father, and wife, and gentlemen, adieu;
I will to Venice, Sunday comes apace:—
We will have rings, and things, and fine array;
And kiss me, Kate, we will be married o' Sunday.

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO and KATHARINE, severally.*]

GRE. Was ever match clap'd up so suddenly?

BAP. Faith, gentlemen, now I play a merchant's part,

And venture madly on a desperate mart.

TRA. 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you:

'Twill bring you gain, or perish on the seas.

BAP. The gain I seek is—quiet in the match.⁵

GRE. No doubt, but he hath got a quiet catch.
But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter;—
Now is the day we long have looked for;
I am your neighbour, and was suitor first.

TRA. And I am one, that love Bianca more
Than words can witness, or your thoughts can
guess.

GRE. Youngling! thou canst not love so dear as I.

TRA. Grey-beard! thy love doth freeze.

GRE. But thine doth fry.⁶

⁵ — in the match.] Old copy—me the match. Corrected by Mr. Pope. MALONE.

⁶ But thine doth fry.] Old Gremio's notions are confirmed by Shadwell.

Skipper, stand back ; 'tis age, that nourisheth.

TRA. But youth, in ladies' eyes that flourisheth.

BAP. Content you, gentlemen; I'll compound
this strife:

'Tis deeds, must win the prize; and he, of both,
That can assure my daughter greatest dower,
Shall have Bianca's love. —

Say, signior Gremio, what can you assure her?

GRE. First, as you know, my house within the
city

Is richly furnished with plate and gold;
Basons, and ewers, to lave her dainty hands;
My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry:
In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns;
In cypress chests my arras, counterpoints,

“ The fire of love in youthful blood,

“ Like what is kindled in brush-wood,

“ But for the moment burns: —

“ But when crept into aged veins,

“ It slowly burns, and long remains;

“ It glows, and with a fuller heat,

“ Like fire in logs, it burns, and warms us long;

“ And though the flame be not so great,

“ Yet is the heat as strong.” JOHNSON.

So also, in *A Wonder, a Woman never Fears'd*, a comedy by
Rowley, 1632:

“ My old dry wood shall make a lusty bonfire, when thy green
chips lie hissing in the chimney-corner.”

The thought, however, might originate from Sidney's *Arcadia*,
Book II:

“ Let not old age disgrace my high desire,

“ O heavenly soule, in humane -shape contain'd!

“ Old wood inflam'd doth veild the bravest fire,

“ When yonger doth in smoke his vertue spend.”

STEEVENS.

? — counterpoints,] Sn, in *A Knack to know a Knave*, 1594:

“ Then I will have rich counterpoints and musk.”

These coverings for beds are at present called *counterpanes*; but
either mode of spelling is proper.

Costly apparel, tents, and canopies,^a
 Fine linen, Turkey cushions boss'd with pearl,
 Valance of Venice gold in needle-work,
 Pewter^b and brass, and all things that belong
 To house, or housekeeping: then, at my farm,
 I have a hundred milch-kine to the pail,
 Sixscore fat oxen standing in my stalls,
 And all things answerable to this portion.
 Myself am struck in years, I must confess;
 And, if I die to-morrow, this is hers,
 If, whilst I live, she will be only mine.

TRA. That, only, came well in——Sir, list to me,
 I am my father's heir, and only son;

Counterpoint is the monkish term for a particular species of music, in which notes of equal duration, but of different harmony, are set in opposition to each other.

In like manner *counterpanes* were anciently composed of patch-work, and so contrived that every *pane* or partition in them, was contrasted with one of a different colour, though of the same dimensions. STEEVENS.

Counterpoints were in ancient times extremely costly. In Wat Tyler's rebellion, Stowe informs us, when the insurgents broke into the wardrobe in the Savoy, they destroyed a coverlet, worth a thousand marks. MALONE.

^a — tents, and canopies,] I suppose by *tents* old Gremio means work of that kind which the ladies call *tent-stitch*. He would hardly enumerate *tents* (in their common acceptation) among his domestick riches. STEEVENS.

I suspect, the furniture of some kind of bed, in the form of a pavillion, was known by this name in our author's time.

MALONE.

I conceive, the *pavillon*, or tent-bed, to have been an article of furniture unknown in the age of Shakspeare. STEEVENS.

^b *Pewter* —] We may suppose that *pewter* was, even in the time of Queen Elizabeth, too costly to be used in common. It appears from "The regulations and establishment of the household of Henry Algernon Percy, the fifth earl of Northumberland," &c. that vessels of *pewter* were hired by the year. *This household-book* was begun in the year 1512. See Holinshed's *Description of England*, p. 188, and 189. STEEVENS.

If I may have your daughter to my wife,
 I'll leave her houses three or four as good,
 Within rich Pisa walls, as any one
 Old signior Gremio has in Padua;
 Besides two thousand ducats by the year,
 Of fruitful land, all which shall be her jointure.—
 What, have I pinch'd you, signior Gremio?

GRE. Two thousand ducats by the year, of land!
 My land amounts not to so much in all:
 That she shall have; besides 'an argosy,'³
 That now is lying in Marseilles' road:—
 What, have I chok'd you with an argosy?

TRA. Gremio, 'tis known, my father hath no less
 Than three great argosies; besides two galliasses,⁴

* Gre. *Two thousand ducats by the year, of land!*

My land amounts not to so much in all:

That she shall have; besides—] Though all copies concur in this reading, surely, if we examine the reasoning, something will be found wrong. Gremio is startled at the high settlement Tranio proposes: says, his whole estate in land can't match it, yet he'll settle so much a year upon her, &c. This is playing at cross purposes. The change of the *negative* in the second line saves the absurdity, and sets the passage right. Gremio and Tranio vying in their offers to carry Bianca, the latter boldly proposes to settle land to the amount of two thousand ducats per annum. My whole estate, says the other, in land, amounts *but* to that value; yet she shall have *that*: I'll endow her with the *whole*; and consign a rich vessel to her use over and above. Thus all is intelligible, and he goes on to out-bid his rival. WARBURTON.

Gremio only says, his whole estate in land doth not indeed amount to two thousand ducats a year, but she shall have that, whatever be its value, and an argosy over and above; which argosy must be understood to be of very great value from his sub-joining:

What, have I chok'd you with an argosy? HEATH.

³ *That she shall have; besides an argosy,*] She shall have that, whatever be its value, and an argosy over and above. HEATH.

⁴ — *two galliasses,*] A *ga'ras* or *galliass*, is a heavy low-built vessel of burthen, with both sails and oars, partaking at once of

And twelve tight gallies: these I will assure her,
And twice as much, whate'er thou offer'st next.

GRE. Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more;
And she can have no more than all I have; —
If you like me, she shall have me and mine.

IRA. Why, then the maid is mine from all the
world,

By your firm promise; Gremio is out-vied.⁵

BAP. I must confess, your offer is the best;
And, let your father make her the assurance,
She is your own; else, you must pardon me:
If you should die before him, where's her dower?

TRA. That's but a cavil; he is old, I young.

GRE. And may not young men die, as well as
old?

BAP. Well, gentlemen,

I am thus resolv'd:—On Sunday next you know,
My daughter Katharine is to be married:
Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca
Be bride to you, if you make this assurance;
If not, to signior Gremio:
And so I take my leave, and thank you both.

[Exit.

GRE. Adieu, good neighbour.—Now I fear thee
not;

the nature of a ship and a galley. So, in *The Noble Soldier*, 1634:

"— to have rich gulls come aboard their pinnaces, for then they are sure to build *galliaffes*." STEEVENS.

⁵ — *out-vied*.] This is a term at the old game of *gleek*. When one man was *vied* upon another, he was said to be *out-vied*. So, in Greene's *Art of Cony-catching*, 1592: "They draw a card, and the barnacle *vies*, and the countryman *vies* upon him," &c.

Again, in *The Jealous Lovers*, by Randolph, 1632:

"Thou canst not finde out wayes enow to spend it;
"They will *out-vie* thy pleasures." STEEVENS.

Sirrah, young gamester,⁶ your father were a fool
 To give thee all, and, in his waning age,
 Set foot under thy table: Tut! a toy!
 An old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy. [*Exit.*
 TRA. A vengeance on your crafty wither'd hide!
 Yet I have faced it with a card of ten.⁷

⁶ *Sirrah, young gamester,*] Perhaps alluding to the pretended Lucentio's having before talk'd of out-vying him. See the last note.
 MALONE.

Gamester, in the present instance, has no reference to gaming, and only signifies—a wag, a frolicksome character. So, in *King Henry VIII*:

“You are a merry gamester, my lord Sands.” STEEVENS.

⁷ *Yet I have faced it with a card of ten.*] That is, with the highest card, in the old simple games of our ancestors. So that this became a proverbial expression. So, Skeltoo:

“Fyriste pycke a quarrel, and fall out with him then,

“And so outface him with a card of ten.

And, Ben Jonson, in his *Sad Shepherd*:

“— a Hart of ten

“I trow he be.”

i. e. an extraordinary good one. WARBURTON.

A hart of ten has no reference to cards, but is an expression taken from *The Laws of the Forest*, and relates to the age of the deer. When a hart is past six years old, he is generally called a *hart of ten*. See *Forest Laws*, 4to. 1598.

Again, in the sixth scene of *The Sad Shepherd*:

“— a great large deer!”

“Rob. What head?”

“John. Forked. A hart of ten.”

The former expression is very common. So, in *Law-Tricks*, &c. 1608;

“I may be out-fac'd with a card of ten.”

Mr. Malone is of opinion that the phrase was “applied to those persons who gained their ends by impudence, and bold confident assertion.”

As we are on the subject of cards, it may not be amiss to take notice of a common blunder relative to their names. We call the *king, queen*, and *knave*, *court-cards*, whereas they were anciently denominated *coats*, or *coat-cards*, from their coats or dresses. So, Ben Jonson, in his *New Inn*:

“When she is pleas'd to trick or trump mankind,

“Some may be coats, as in the cards.”

'Tis in my head to do my master good:—
 I see no reason, but suppos'd Lucentio
 Must get a father, call'd—suppos'd Vincentio;
 And that's a wonder: fathers, commonly,
 Do get their children; but, in this case of wooing,
 A child shall get a fire, if I fail not of my cunning.
 [Exit.]

Again, in *May-Jay*, a comedy by Chapman, 1611:

"She had in her hand the ace of hearts and a *coat-card*. She led the board with her *coat*; I plaid the varlet, and took up her *coat*; and meaning to lay my finger on her ace of hearts, upflarted a quite contrary card."

Again, in Rowley's *When you see me you know me*, 1621:

"You have been at *noddy*, I see.

"Ay, and the first *card* comes to my hand is a *knave*.

"I am a *coat-card*, indeed.

"Then thou must needs be a *knave*, for thou art neither *queen* nor *king*." STEEVENS.

* —[if I fail not of my cunning.] As this is the conclusion of an act, I suspect that the poet design'd a rhyming couplet. Instead of *cunning* we might read—*doing*, which is often used by Shakspeare in the sense here wanted, and agrees perfectly well with the beginning of the line—"a child shall get a fire."

After this, the former editors add,

"Sly. Sim, when will the fool come again?"

"Sim. Anon, my lord.

"Sly. Give us some more drink here; where's the tapster?"

"Here, Sim, eat some of these things.

"Sim. I do, my lord.

"Sly. Here, Sim, I drink to thee."

These speeches of the presenters, (as they are called,) are not in the folio. Mr. Pope, as in some former instances, introduced them from the old spurious play of the same name; and therefore we may easily account for their want of connexion with the present comedy. I have degraded them as usual into the note. By the *fool* in the original piece, might be meant *Sander* the servant to *Ferando* (who is the *Petruchio* of Shakspeare) or *Ferando* himself.

* —[when will the fool come again?] The character of the *fool* has not been introduced in this drama, therefore I believe that the word *again* should be omitted, and that Sly asks, *When will the fool come?* the fool being the favourite of the vulgar, or, as we now phrase it, of the upper gallery, was naturally expected in every interlude. JOHNSON.

A C T III. S C E N E I.

*A Room in Baptista's House.**Enter LUCENTIO, HORTENSIO, and BIANCA.*

LUC. Fidler, forbear; you grow too forward, fir:
Have you so soon forgot the entertainment
Her sister Katharine welcom'd you withal?

HOR. But, wrangling pedant, this is *
The patroness of heavenly harmony:
Then give me leave to have prerogative;
And when in musick we have spent an hour,
Your lecture shall have leisure for as much.

LUC. Preposterous afs! that never read so far
To know the cause why musick was ordain'd!
Was it not, to refresh the mind of man,
After his studies, or his usual pain?
Then give me leave to read philosophy,
And, while I pause, serve in your harmony.

It appears however from the following passage in the eleventh Book of Thomas Lupton's *Notable Things*, edit. 1660, that it was the constant office of the Fool to preserve the stage from vacancy:

" 79. When Stage-plays were in use, there was in every place one that was called the *Foole*; as the Proverb saies, *like a Fool in a Play*. At the Red Bull Play-house it did chance that the *Clown* or the *Fool*, being in the attiring house, was suddenly called upon the stage, for it was empty. He suddenly going, forgot his *Foolscap*. One of the players bad his boy take it, and put it on his head as he was speaking. No such matter (saies the Boy) there's no manners nor wit in that, nor wisdom neither; and my master needs no cap; for he is known to be a Fool without it, as well as with it." STEVENS.

* — *this is* — } Probably our author wrote — *this lady is*, which completes the metre, *wrangling* being used as a trisyllable.

MALONE.

We should read, with Sir T. Hanmer:

But, wrangling pedant, know this lady is. RITSON.

HOR. Sirrah, I will not bear these braves of thine.

BIAN. Why, gentlemen, you do me double wrong.
To strive for that which resteth in my choice:
I am no breeching scholar^a in the schools;
I'll not be tied to hours, nor 'pointed times,
But learn my lessons as I please myself.
And, to cut off all strife, here sit we down:—
Take you your instrument, play you the whiles;
His lecture will be done, ere you have tun'd.

HOR. You'll leave his lecture when I am in tune?

[To BIANCA.—HORTENSIO retires.

LUC. That will be never;—tune your instrument.

BIAN. Where left we last?

LUC. Here, madam:—

Hic ibat Simois; hic est Sigeia tellus;

Hic steterat Priami regia celsa senis.

BIAN. Construe them.

LUC. *Hic ibat*, as I told you before,—*Simois*, I am Lucentio,—*hic est*, son unto Vicentio of Pisa,—*Sigeia tellus*, disguised thus to get your love;—*Hic steterat*, and that Lucentio that comes a wooing,—*Priami*, is my man Tranio,—*regia*, bearing my port,—*celsa senis*, that we might beguile the old pantaloon.^a

HOR. Madam, my instrument's in tune.

[Returning.

^a — no breeching scholar —] i. e. no school-boy liable to corporal correction. So, in *King Edward the Second*, by Marlow, 1598:

“ Whose looks were as a breeching to a boy.”
Again, in *The Hog has lost his Pearl*, 1614:

“ — he went to fetch whips, I think, and, not respecting my honour, he would have breech'd me.

Again, in *Amends for Ladies*, 1618:

“ If I had had a son of fourteen that had served me so, I would have breech'd him.” STEEVENS.

^a — pantaloon.] The old cully is Italian farces, JOHNSON.

BIAN, Let's hear;—

[HORTENSIO plays.

O, fie! the treble jars,

LUC. Spit in the hole, man, and tune again.

BIAN. Now let me see if I can construe it: *Hic ibat Simois*, I know you not; *hic est Sigieia tellus*, I trust you not;—*Hic steterat Priami*, take heed he hear us not;—*regia*, presume not;—*celsa senis*, despair not;

HOR. Madam, 'tis now in tune.

LUC. All but the base.

HOR. The base is right; 'tis the base knave that jars.

How fiery and forward our pedant is!

Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love:

Pedascule,³ I'll watch you better yet.

BIAN. In time I may believe, yet I mistrust.⁴

LUC. Mistrust it not; for, sure, *Æacides*

Was Ajax.⁵—call'd so from his grandfather.

BIAN. I must believe my master; else, I promise you,

³ *Pedascule*,] He should have said, *Didascule*, but thinking this too honourable, he coins the word *Pedascule*, in imitation of it, from *pedant*. WARBURTON.

I believe it is no coinage of Shakspeare's, it is more probable that it lay in his way, and he found it. STEEVENS.

⁴ *In time I may believe, yet I mistrust*.] This and the seven verses that follow, have in all the editions been stupidly shuffled and misplaced to wrong speakers; so that every word said was glaringly out of character. THEOBALD.

⁵ — *for, sure, Æacides, &c.*] This is only said to deceive Hortensio who is supposed to listen. The pedigree of *Ajax*, however, is properly made out, and might have been taken from Golding's Version of Ovid's *Metamorphosis*, Book XIII:

" — The highest Jove of all

" Acknowledgeth this *Æacus*, and dooth his sonne him call.

" Thus am I *Ajax* third from Jove." STEEVENS.

I should be arguing still upon that doubt:
But let it rest.—Now, Licio, to you:—
Good masters,⁵ take it not unkindly, pray,
That I have been thus pleasant with you both.

HOR. You may go walk, [*To LUCENTIO.*] and
give me leave awhile;

My lessons make no musick in three parts.

LUC. Are you so formal, sir? well, I must wait,
And watch withal; for, but I be deceiv'd,⁶
Our fine musician groweth amorous. [*Aside.*]

HOR. Madam, before you touch the instrument,
To learn the order of my fingering,
I must begin with rudiments of art;
To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,
More pleasant, pithy, and effectual,
Than hath been taught by any of my trade:
And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.

BIAN. Why, I am past my gamut long ago.

HOR. Yet read the gamut of Hortensio.

BIAN. [*Reads.*] Gamut I am, the ground of all
accord,

A re, to plead Hortensio's passion;

B mi. Bianca, take him for thy lord,

C faut, that loves with all affection:

D sol re, one cliff, two notes have I;

E la mi, show pity, or I die.

Call you this—gamut? tut! I like it not:
Old fashions please me best; I am not so nice,
To change true rules for odd inventions.⁷

⁵ Good masters,] Old copy—*master*. Corrected by Mr. Pope.

⁶ —but I be deceiv'd,] But has here the signification of *unless*.
MALONE.

⁷ To change true rules for odd inventions.] The old copy reads—
To charge true rules for odd inventions: The former emendation was

*Enter a Servant.**

SERV. Mistress, your father prays you leave your books,

And help to dress your sister's chamber up;
You know, to morrow is the wedding-day.

BIAN. Farewell, sweet masters, both; I must be gone. *Exeunt BIANCA and Servant.*

LUC. Faith, mistress, then I have no cause to stay. *[Exit.]*

HOR. But I have cause to pry into this pedant;
Methinks, he looks as though he were in love:—
Yet if thy thoughts, Bianca, be so humble,
To cast thy wand'ring eyes on every tale,
Seize thee, that list: if once I find thee ranging,
Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing. *[Exit.]*

made by the editor of the second folio; the latter by Mr. Theobald. *Old*, however may be right. I believe, an opposition was intended. As *change* was corrupted into *charge*, why might not *true* have been put instead of *new*? Perhaps the author wrote

To change new rules for old inventions.

i. e. to accept of new rules in exchange for old inventions.

MALONE.

* *Enter a Servant.*] The old copy reads—*Enter a Messenger*—who, at the beginning of his speech is called—*Nicke*. RITSON. Meaning, I suppose, *Nicholas Tooley*. See Mr. Malone's *Historical Account of the English Stage*. STEEVENS.

S C E N E II.

The same. Before Baptista's House.

Enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA, LUCENTIO, and Attendants.

BAP. Signior Lucentio, [*To TRANIO.*] this is the
'pointed day
That Katharine and Petruchio should be married,
And yet we hear not of our son-in-law:
What will be said? what mockery will it be,
To want the bridegroom, when the priest attends
To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage?
What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?

KATH. No shame but mine: I must, forsooth,
be forc'd
To give my hand, oppos'd against my heart,
Unto a mad-brain rudesby, full of spleen;⁸
Who woo'd in haste, and means to wed at leisure.
I told you, I, he was a frantick fool,
Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour:
And, to be noted for a merry man,
He'll woo a thousand, 'point the day of marriage,
Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim the banns;⁹

⁸ —full of spleen:] That is, full of humour, caprice, and inconstancy. JOHNSON.

So, in the First Part of Henry IV:

"A hare brain'd Hotspur, govern'd by a spleen."

M. MASON.

⁹ Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim the banns:] Mr. Malone reads:

Make friends, invite them, &c. STEEVENS.

There is none in the old copy. For this emendation I am answerable. The editor of the second folio, to supply the defect in the metre, reads, with less probability in my opinion —

Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim, &c. MALONE.

Yet never means to wed where he hath woo'd.
 Now must the world point at poor Katharine,
 And say,—*Lo, there is mad Petruchio's wife,*
If it would please him come and marry her.

TRA. Patience, good Katharine, and Baptista
 too;

Upon my life, Petruchio means but well,
 Whatever fortune slays him from his word:
 Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise;
 Though he be merry, yet withal he's honest.

KATH. 'Would, Katharine had never seen him
 though!

[*Exit, weeping, followed by BIANCA, and Others.*]

BAP. Go, girl; I cannot blame thee now to weep;
 For such an injury would vex a saint,²
 Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour.³

Enter BIONDELLO.

BION. Master, master! news, old news,⁴ and such
 news as you never heard of!

BAP. Is it new and old too? how may that be?

BION. Why, is it not news, to hear of Petruchio's
 coming?

BAP. Is he come?

BION. Why, no, sir.

² — *vex a saint,*] The old copy redundantly reads — *vex a
 very saint.* STEEVENS.

³ — *of thy impatient humour.*] *Thy*, which is not in the old
 copy, was inserted by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

⁴ — *old news,*] These words were added by Mr. Rowe, and
 necessarily, for the reply of Baptista supposes them to have been
 already spoken, *old laughing* — *old utis*, &c. are expressions of that
 time merely hyperbolic, and have been more than once used by
 Shakspeare. See note on *Henry IV.* Part II. Act II. sc. iv.

STEEVENS.

BAP. What then?

BION. He is coming.

BAP. When will he be here?

BION. When he stands where I am, and sees you there.

TRA. But, say, what:—To thine old news.

BION. Why, Petruchio is coming, in a new hat, and an old jerkin; a pair of old breeches, thrice turn'd; a pair of boots that have been candle-cases, one buckled, another laced; an old rusty sword taken out of the town armory, with a broken hilt, and chapellets; with two broken points: ⁴ His horse hip'd with an old moth-y saddle, the stirrups of no kindred: besides, possess'd with the glanders, and like to mose in the chine; troubled with the

⁴ —a pair of boots—one buckled, another laced,* an old rusty sword taken out of the town-armory, with a broken hilt, and chapellets; with two broken points;] How a sword should have two broken points. I cannot tell. There is, I think, a transposition caused by the seeming .c sion of point to sword. I read, a pair of boots, one buckled, another laced with two broken points; an old rusty sword—with a broken hilt, and chapellets. JOHNSON.

I suspect that several words giving an account of Petruchio's belt are wanting. The belt was then broad and rich, and worn on the outside of the doublet.—Two broken points might therefore have concluded the description of its ostentatious meanness.

STEEVENS.

The broken points might be the two broken tags to the laces.

TOLLET.

—that have been candle-cases,] That is, I suppose, boots long left off, and after having been converted into cases to hold the ends of candles, returning to their hilt office. I do not know that I have ever met with the word *candle-case* in any other places, except the following preface to a dramatic dialogue, 1604, entitled, *The Case is Altered, How?*—"I write upon cases, neither knife-cases, pin-cases, nor candle-cases."

And again, in *How to choose a Good Wife from a Bad*, 1602:

"A bow-case, a cap-case, a comb-case, a lute-case, a huddle-case, and a candle-case." STEEVENS.

lampas, infected with the fashions, full of wind-galls, sped with spavins, raied with the yellows, past cure of the fives,⁶ stark spoiled with the staggers, beguawn with the bots; sway'd in the back,⁷ and shoullder-shotten; ne'er-legg'd before,⁸ and with a half-check'd bit, and a head-stall of sheep's leather; which, being restrain'd to keep him from stumbling, hath been often burst, and now repair'd with knots: one girt six times pieced, and a woman's crupper of velure,⁹ which hath two letters for her name, fairly set down in studs, and here and there pieced with packthread.

⁶ —infected with the fashions, —past cure of the fives,] *Fashions*. So called in the West of England, but by the best writers on farriery, *farrens*, or *farcy*.

Fives. So called in the West: *vives* elsewhere, and *avives* by the French; a disemper in horses, little differing from the strangles.

GREY.

Shakspeare is not the only writer who uses *fashions* for *farcy*. So, in Decker's comedy of *Old Fortunatus*, 1600:

"Shad. What shall we learn by travel?

"Andel. *Fashions*.

"Shad. That's a beastly disease."

Again, in *The New Ordinary*, by Bromet:

"My old beast is intedged with the *fashions*, fashion-sick."

Again, in Decker's *Guls Hornbool*, 1609: "*Fashions* was then counted a disease, and *horses* died of it." STEEVENS.

⁷ —sway'd in the back,] The old copy has —*waid*. Corrected by Sir T. Hanmer. MALONE.

⁸ —ne'er legg'd before,] i. e. founder'd in his fore-feet; having, as the jockies term it, *never a fore leg* to stand on. The subsequent words —"which, being restrain'd, to keep him from *stumbling*," —seem to countenance this interpretation. The modern editors read —*near-legg'd* before; but to go near before is not reckoned a defect, but a perfection, in a horse. MALONE.

⁹ —crupper of velure,] *Velure* is velvet. *Velours*, Fr. So, in *The World turned at Tennis*, by Middleton and Rowley:

"Come, my well-lined soldier (with valour,

"Not a *crupper* keep me warm."

Again, in *The Noble Gentleman*, by Beaumont and Fletcher:

"—an old hat,

"Lined with *velours*." STEEVENS.

BAP. Who comes with him?

BION. O, fir, his lackey, for all the world carparifon'd like the hofte; with a linen flock^o on one leg, and a kerley boot hofe on the other, garter'd with a red and blue lift; an old hat and *The humour of forty fancies* prick'd in't for a feather:^o a

^o — flock —] i. e. flocking. So, in *Twelfth Night*: "— it [his leg] does indifferent well in a flame-coloured flock."

STEVENS.

^o — an old hat, and *The humour of forty fancies* prick'd in't for a feather:] This was some ballad or drollery at that time, which the poet here ridicules, by making Petruchio prick it up in his foot boy's hat for a leather. His speakers are perpetually quoting scraps and stanzas of old ballads, and often verbatim; for, so well are they adapted to the occasion, that they seem of a piece with the rest. In Shakspeare's time, the kingdom was overrun with these doggerel compositions, and he seems to have borne them a very particular grudge. He frequently ridicules both them and their makers, with excellent humour. In *Much ado about Nothing*, he makes Benedick say, "Prove that ever I lose more blood with love than I get again with drinking, prick out my eyes with a ballad-maker's pen." As the bluntness of it would make the execution of it extremely painful. And again, in *Troilus and Cressida*, Pandarus in his distress having repeated a very stupid stanza from an old ballad, says, with the highest humour, "There never was a truer rhyme; let's cast away nothing, for we may live to have need of such a verse. We see it, we see it."

WARRINGTON.

I have some doubts concerning this interpretation. A *fancy* appears to have been some ornament worn formerly in the hat. So Peacham, in his *Worth of a Penny*, describing "an indigent and discontented soldier," says, "he walks with his arms folded, his belt without a sword or rapier, that perhaps being somewhere in trouble; a hat without a band, hanging over his eyes; only it wears a weather-beaten *fancy* for fashion-sake." This lackey therefore did not wear a common *fancy* in his hat, but some fantastical ornament, comprizing the humour of forty different fancies. Such, I believe is the meaning. A couplet in one of Sir John Davies's Epigrams, 1598, may also add support to my interpretation:

"Nor for thy love will I once gnath a bricke,

"Or some *pie'd colours* in my bonnet *ficke*."

A *fancy*, however, meant also a love-song or sonnet, or other poem. So, in *Seppo and Páao*, 1591: "I must now fall from

monster, a very monster in apparel; and not like a christian footboy, or a gentleman's lackey.

IRA. 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to this fashion;—

Yet often times he goes but mean apparell'd.

BAP. I am glad he is come, howsoe'er he comes.

BION. Why, sir, he comes not,

BAP. Didst thou not say, he comes?

BION. Who? that Petruchio came?

BAP. Ay, that Petruchio came.

BION. No, sir; I say, his horse comes with him on his back.

BAP. Why, that's all one.

BION. Nay, by faint jamy, I hold you a penny,
A horse and a man is more than one, and yet not many.

love to labour, and endeavour with mine ear to get a fare, not with my pen to write a *farce*." If the word was used here in this sense, the meaning is, that the lackey had stuck forty ballads together, and made something like a feather out of them.

MALONE.

Dr. Warburton might have strengthened his supposition by observing, that the *Humour of Forty Fancies* was probably a collection of those short poems which are called *Fancies*, by Falstaff, in the Second Part of *K. Henry IV*: "—sung those tunes which he heard the carmen whistle, and swore they were his *Fancies*, his good-nights." Nor is the *Humour of Forty Fancies* a more extraordinary title to a collection of poems, than the well-known *Hundred sundrie Flowers bounde up in one small paffe*.—*A Paradise of dainty Devices*.—*The Arbor of amorous Conceits*.—*The Gorgeous Gallery of gallant Inventions*.—*The Forest of Histories*.—*The Ordinary of Humors*, &c. Chance, at some future period, may establish as a certainty what is now offered as a conjecture. A penny book, containing forty short poems, would, properly managed, furnish no unapt imitation of a plume of feathers for the hat of a humourist's servant. STREVENS.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO.*³

PET. Come, where be these gallants? who is at home?

BAP.³ You are welcome, sir.

PET. And yet I come not well.

BAP. And yet you halt not.

TRA. Not so well apparell'd

As I wish you were.

PET. Were it better I should rush in thus.

³ *Enter Petruchio and Grumio.*] Thus, is the original play:

" *Enter Ferando, basely attired, and ayed up on his head.*

" *Feran.* Good morrow, father: *Polidor* well met,

" You wonder, I know, that I have staide so long.

" *Alfon.* Yea, marry sonne: we were almost perswaded.

" That we should scarce have had our bridegroome heere:

" But say, why art thou thus basely attired?

" *Feran.* Thus richly, father, you should have staide;

" For when my wife and I are married once,

" Shee's such a shrew, if we should once fall out,

" Sheele pull my costly futes over mine ears,

" And therefore I am thus attir'd a while:

" For many things I tell you's in my head,

" And none must know thereof but *Kate* and I;

" For we shall live like lambes and lions sure:

" Nor lambes to lions never were so tame,

" If once they lie withio the lions pawes,

" As *Kate* to me, if we were married once,

" And therefore, come, let's to church presently.

" *Pol.* Fie, *Ferando*! not thus attired: for shame,

" Come, to my chamber, and there suite thyselfe,

" Of twenty futes that I did never weare.

" *Feran.* Tush, *Polidor*, I have as many futes

" Fantastlike made to fit my humour so,

" As any in *Athens*; and as richly wrought

" As was the massie robe that late adorn'd,

" The stately legat of the *Persian* king,

" And this from them I made choise to weare.

" *Alfon.* I prethee, *Ferando*, let me intreat,

" Before thou go'st unto the church with us,

" To put some other fute upon thy backe.

" *Feran.* Not for the world," &c. STEEVENS.

But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride?—
How does my father?—Gentles, methinks you
frown:

And wherefore gaze this goodly company;
As if they saw some wondrous monument,
Some comet, or unusual prodigy?

BAP. Why, fir, you know, this is your wedding-
day:

First were we sad, fearing you would not come;
Now sadder, that you come so unprovided.
Fie! doff this habit, shame to your estate,
An eyefore to our solemn festival.

TRA. And tell us, what occasion of import
Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife,
And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

PET. Tedious it were to tell, and harsh to hear:
Sufficeth, I am come to keep my word,
Though in some part enforced to digress;⁴
Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse
As you shall well be satisfied withal.
But, where is Kate? I stay too long from her;
The morning wears, 'tis time we were at church.

TRA. See not your bride in these unreverent robes;
Go to my chamber, put on clothes of mine.

PET. Not I, believe me; thus I'll visit her.

BAP. But thus, I trust, you will not marry her.

PET. Good sooth, even thus; therefore have done
with words;

To me she's married, not unto my clothes:
Could I repair what she will wear in me,
As I can change these poor accoutrements,
'I were well for Kate, and better for myself.
But what a fool am I, to chat with you,

⁴ — *to digress*] To deviate from my promise. JOHNSON.

When I should bid good-morrow to my bride,
And seal the title with a lovely kiss?

[*Exeunt* PETRUCHIO, GRUMIO, and BIONDELLO.

TRA. He hath some meaning in his mad attire :
We will persuade him, be it possible,
To put on better ere he go to church.

BAP. I'll after him, and see the event of this. [*Exit.*

TRA. But, fir, to her love⁵ concerneth us to add
Her father's liking : which to bring to pass,
As I before imparted⁶ to your worship,
I am to get a man. —whate'er he be,
It skills not much ; we'll fit him to our turn,—

* Tra. But, fir, to her love—] Mr. Theobald reads—our love.

STEEVENS.

Our is an injudicious interpolation. The first folio reads—But
fir, love concerneth us to add, Her father's liking—which, I think,
should be thus corrected :

But fir, to her love concerneth us to add
Her father's liking.—

We must suppose, that Lucentio had before informed Traio in
private of his having obtained Bianca's love ; and Tranio here
resumes the conversation, by observing, that to her love it concerns
them to add her father's consent ; and then goes on to propose a
scheme for obtaining the latter. TYRWHITT.

The nominative case to the verb concerneth⁷ is here understood.
A similar licence may be found in *Coriolanus* :

" Remains that in the official marks invested,

" You'anoo do meet the senate."

Again, in *Timonius and Cressida* :

" The beauty that is borne here is the face

" The bearer knows not, but commends itself

" To others' eyes." MALONE.

* As I before imparted,—] I, which was inadvertently omitted
in the old copy, was added by the editor of the second folio ; but
with his usual inaccuracy was inserted in the wrong place.

MALONE.

The second folio reads :

" As before I imparted, &c.

As this passage is now pointed, where is the inaccuracy of it? or,
if there be any, might it not have happened through the care-
lessness of the compositor? STEEVENS.

And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa;
 And make assurance, here in Padua,
 Of greater fums than I have promised.
 So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,
 And marry sweet Bianca with consent.

LUC. Were it not that my fellow schoolmaster
 Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly,
 'Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage;
 Which once perform'd, let all the world say—no,
 I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world.

TRA. That by degrees we mean to look into,
 And watch our vantage in this business:
 We'll overreach the greybeard, Gremio;
 The narrow-prying father, Minola;
 The quaint musician, amorous Licio;
 All for my master's sake, Lucentio.—

Re-enter GREMIO.

Signior Gremio! came you from the church?

GRE. As willingly as e'er I came from school.⁷

TRA. And is the bride and bridegroom coming home?

GRE. A bridegroom, say you? 'tis a groom, indeed,

A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find.

TRA. Curster than she? why, 'tis impossible.

GRE. Why, he's a devil, a devil, a very fiend.

TRA. Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's dam.

⁷ *As willingly, &c.*] This is a proverbial saying. See Ray's *Collection*. STEEVENS.

GRE. But! she's a lamb, a dove, a fool to him.
 I'll tell you, fir Lucentio; When the priest
 Should ask — if Katherine should be his wife,
Ay, by gogs-wouns, quoth he; and swore so loud,
 That, all amaz'd, the priest let fall the book:
 And, as he stoop'd again to take it up,
 The mad-brain'd bridegroom took him such a cuff,
 That down fell priest and book, and book and
 priest;

Now take them up, quoth he, *if any list*.

T'RA. What said the wench, when he arose again?

GRE. Trembled and shook; for why, he stamp'd,
 and swore,

As if the vicar meant to cozen him.

But after many ceremonies done,

He calls for wine: — *A health*, quoth he; as if

He had been aboard, carousing to his mates

After a storm: — Quaff'd off the muscadel,*

* — *Quaff'd off the muscadel*.] It appears from this passage, and the following one in *The History of the two Maids of More-clacker*, a comedy by Robert Armin, 1609, that it was the custom to drink wine immediately after the marriage ceremony. Armin's play begins thus:

"Enter a Maid *throwing flowers*, and a serving-man *perfuming the door*.

"Maid. Strew, strew.

"Man. The muscadine lays for the bride at church.

"The priests and Hymen's ceremonies 'tend

"To make them man and wife"

Again, in Decker's *Satirimagist*, 1602:

"— and when we are at church, bring the wine and cakes."

In Ben Jonson's *Magnetic Lady*, the wine drank on this occasion is called a "kissing cup."

Again, in *No Wit like a Woman's*, by Middleton:

"Even when my lip touch'd the *centrating cup*."

There was likewise a flower that borrowed its name from this ceremony:

"Bring sweet carnations, and *seps* in wine,

"Worne of paramours."

Hobbinol's Dittie, &c. by Spenser.

And threw the sops all in the sexton's face ;
Having no other reason, —

Again, in Beaumont and Fletcher's *Scornful Lady* :

" Wete the rosemary branches dipp'd, and all
" The *hippocras* and cakes eat and drunk off ;
" Were these two arms encompass'd with the hands
" Of bachelors to lead me to the church," &c.

Again, in the *Articles ordained by K. Henry VII. for the Regulation of his Household* : Article — " For the Marriage of a Princefs." —
" Then pottes of *Ipocrice* to bee ready, and to bee putt into the cupps with *seppes*, and to bee borne to the estates ; and to take a *seppes*, and drinke," &c. STEVENS.

So, in an old canzonet on a wedding, set to musick by Morley, 1606 :

" *Sops in wine, spice-cakes are a dealing.*" FARMER.

The fashion of introducing a bowl of wine into the church at a wedding to be drank by the bride and bridegroom and persons present, was very anciently a constant ceremony ; and, as appears from this passage, not abolished in our author's age. We find it practised at the magnificent marriage of Queen Mary and Philip, in Winchester cathedral, 1554 : " The trumpetts sounded, and they both returned to their traverses in the quire, and there remained untill masse was done : at which tyme, *wyne* and *sops* were hallowed and delyvered to them both." *Collected Append.* Vol. IV. p. 400, edit. 1770. T. WARREN.

I insert the following quotation merely to show that the custom remained in Shakspere's time. At the marriage of the Eleodor Palatine to King James's daughter, the day of February, 1612, we are told by one who assisted at the ceremonial : " — in conclusion, a joy pronounced by the king and queen, and seconded with congratulation of the lords there present, which crowned with draughts of *Ippocras* out of a great golden bowle, as an health to the prosperity of the marriage, (began by the prince Palatine and answered by the princefs.) After which were served-up by fix or seven barons so many bowles filled with wafers, so much of that work was consummate." *Finet's Philoxenis*, 1656, p. 11.

REED.

This custom is of very high antiquity ; for it subsisted among our Gothick ancestors. — "*Ingressus domum convivalem sponsus cum pronubo suo, sumpto poculo, quod maritalis vocant, ac paucis a pronubo de mutato vita genere presatis, in signum constantis, virtutis, libenssonis & tute, propinat sponsa & simul mergennaticam* [dotalitium

But that his beard grew thin and hungerly
 And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking.
 This done, he took the bride about the neck;
 And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack,
 That, at the parting, all the church did echo.²
 I seeing this, " came thence for very shame;
 And after me, I know, the rout is coming:
 Such a mad marriage never was before:
 Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play. [*Musick.*]

Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA, BAPTISTA, HORTENSIO, GRUMIO, and Train.

PET. Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for your
 pains :
 I know, you think to dine with me to-day,
 And have prepar'd great store of wedding cheer ;
 But so it is, my haste doth call me hence,
 And therefore here I mean to take my leave.

*ob virginitatem] promittit, quod ipsa grato animo recolens, pari ratione
 & modo, paulo post mutato in uxorum habitum operculo capitis, ingressa,
 poculum, uti nosstrates vocant, uxorium leviter delibans, amorem,
 fidem, diligentiam, & subjectionem promittit." Stiernhook de Jure
 Saxonum & Gothorum vetusto, p. 163, quarto, 1672. MALONE.*

² *And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack.*

*That, at the parting, all the church did echo.] It appears from
 the following passage in Marston's Infatiate Countess, that this was
 also part of the marriage ceremonial:*

" The kisse thou gav'st me in the church, here take."

STEEVENS.

This also is a very ancient custom, as appears from the following
 rubrick, with which I was furnished by the late Reverend Mr.
 Bowle. " Surgent ambo, sponsus & sponsa, & accipiat sponsus
 pacem a sacerdote, & terat sponsa, osculans eam, & nectareum alium,
 nec iple, nec ipsa." *Manuale Sarum*, Paris, 1533, 4to. fol. 69

MALONE.

² *I, seeing this.] The old copy has,—And I seeing.— And was
 probably caught from the beginning of the next line. The
 emendation is Sir T. Hanmer's. MALONE.*

BAP. Is't possible, you will away to-night?

PET. I must away to-day, before night come:—
Make it no wonder; if you knew my business,
You would entreat me rather go than stay.
And, honest company, I thank you all,
That have beheld me give away myself
To this most patient, sweet, and virtuous wife:
Dine with my father, drink a health to me;
For I must hence, and farewell to you all.

TRA. Let us entreat you stay 'till after dinner.

PET. It may not be.

GRE. Let me entreat you.³

PET. It cannot be.

KATH. Let me entreat you.

PET. I am content.

KATH. Are you content to stay?

PET. I am content you shall entreat me stay;
But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.

KATH. Now, if you love me, stay.

PET. Grumio, my horses.⁴

GRU. Ay, sir, they be ready; the oats have eaten
the horses.⁵

³ *Let me entreat you.*] At the end of this speech, as well as of the next but one, a syllable is wanting to complete the measure. I have no doubt of our poet's having written—in both instances—

Let me entreat you stay. STEEVENS.

⁴ — my horses.] Old copy—*horses*. STEEVENS.

⁵ — *the oats have eaten the horses.*] There is still a ludicrous expression used when horses have staid so long in a place as to have eaten more than they are worth—viz. that *their heads are too big for the stable-door*. I suppose Grumio has some such meaning, though it is more openly expressed, as follows, in the original play:

" *Enter Ferando and Kate, and Alfonso and Polidor, and Emilia, and Aurelius and Phylema.*

" *Feran. Father, farewell; my Kate and I must home:*

KATH. Nay, then,
Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day;
No, nor to-morrow, nor till ⁴ I please myself.
The door is open, sir, there lies your way,

- "Sirrha, go make ready my horse presently.
"Alfon. Your horse! what son, I hope you do but jest;
"I am sure you will not go so suddainely.
"Kate. Let him go or tarry, I am resolv'd to stay;
"And not to travel on my wedding day.
"Feran. Tut, Kate, I tel thee we must needes go-home:
"Vilaine, hast thou saddled my horse?
"San. Which horse? your curtall?
"Feran. Souns you slave, stand you prating here?
"Saddle the bay gelding for your mistress.
"Kate. Not for me, for I will not go.
"San. *The ostler will not let me have him: you owe ten pence*
"For his meate, and 6 pence for stuffing my mistress saddle.
"Feran. Here, villaine; goe pay him strait.
"San. Shall I give them another peeke of lavender?
"Feran. Out slave, and bring them presently to the dore.
"Alfon. Why son, I hope at least youle dine with us.
"San. I pray you, master, lets stay til dinner be done.
"Feran. Sounes villaine, art thou here yet? [Exit Sander.
"Come, Kate, our dinner is provided at home.
"Kate. But not for me, for here I meane to dine:
"He have my wil in this as wel as you;
"Though you in madding mood would leave your frinds,
"Despise of you he tarry with them still.
"Feran. I Kate so thou shalt, but at some other time:
"When as thy sisters here shall be espousd,
"Then thou and I wil keepe our wedding-day,
"In better sort then now we can provide;
"For heere I promise thee before them all,
"We will ere longe returne to them againe:
"Come, Kate, stand not on termes; we will away;
"This is my day, to-morrow thou shalt rule,
"And I will doe whatever thou commandes.
"Gentlemen, farewell, wee'l take our leaves;
"It will be late before that we come home.
[Exit Ferando and Kate.
"Pol. Farewell Ferando, since you will be gone.
"Alfon. So mad a couple did I never see," &c. STEEVENS.
⁴ — not till —] Old copy — not till. Corrected by Mr. Rowe.
MALONE.

You may be jogging, whiles your boots are green ;
 For me, I'll not be gone, 'till I please myself :—
 'Tis like, you'll prove a jolly furly groom,
 That take it on you at the first so roundly.

PET. O, Kate, content thee ; pr'ythee, be not
 angry.

KATH. I will be angry ; What hast thou to do ?—
 Father, be quiet ; he shall stay my leisure.

GRE. Ay, marry, sir : now it begins to work.

KATH. Gentlemen, forward to the bridal dinner :—
 I see, a woman may be made a fool,
 If she had not a spirit to resist.

PET. They shall go forward, Kate, at thy com-
 mand : —

Obeys the bride, you that attend on her :
 Go to the feast, revel and domineer,
 Carouse full measure to her maidenhead,
 Be mad and merry, — or go hang yourselves ;
 But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.
 Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor fret ;
 I will be master of what is mine own :
 She is my goods, my chattels ; she is my house,
 My household-stuff, my field, my barn,⁵
 My horse, my ox, my ass,⁶ my any thing ;
 And here she stands, touch her whoever dare ;
 I'll bring mine action on the proudest he
 That stops my way in Padua. — Grumio,
 Draw forth thy weapon, we're beset with thieves ;

⁵ *My household-stuff, my field, my barn,*] This defective verse
 might be completed by reading, with Hammer—

She is *my household-stuff, my field, my barn ;*

or,

My household-stuff, my field, my barn, my stable.— STEEVENS.

⁶ — *my house, — my ox, my ass,*] Alluding to the tenth
 commandment : “ — thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, —
 nor his ox, nor his ass, — ” . RITSON.

308 TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man: —
 Fear not, sweet wench, they shall not touch thee, Kate;
 I'll buckler thee against a million.

[*Exeunt* PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and GRUMIO.

BAP. Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet ones.

GRE. Went they not quickly, I should die with
 laughing.

TRA. Of all mad matches, never was the like!

LUC. Mistress, what's your opinion of your sister?

BIAN. That, being mad herself, she's madly
 mated.

GRE. I warrant him, Petruchio is Kated.

BAP. Neighbours and friends, though bride and
 bridegroom wants

For to supply the places at the table,
 You know, there wants no junkets at the feast;—
 Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's place;
 And let Bianca take her sister's room.

TRA. Shall sweet Bianca practise how to bride it?

BAP. She shall, Lucentio.—Come, gentlemen
 let's go. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

A Hall in Petruchio's Country House.

Enter GRUMIO.

GRU. Fie, fie, on all tired jades! on all mad
 masters! and all foul ways! Was ever man so
 beaten? was ever man so ray'd? ⁵ was ever man so

⁵ ——— was ever man so ray'd?] That is, was ever man so mark'd
 with lathes. JOHNSON.

weary? I am sent before to make a fire, and they are coming after to warm them. Now, were not I a little pot, and soon hot, ⁶ my very lips might freeze to my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth, my heart in my belly, ere I should come by a fire to thaw me:—But, I, with blowing the fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the weather, a taller man than I will take cold. Holla, ho! Curtis!

Enter CURTIS.

CURT. Who is that, calls so coldly?

GRU. A piece of ice: If thou doubt it, thou may'st slide from my shoulder to my heel, with no greater a run but my head and my neck. A fire, good Curtis.

CURT. Is my master and his wife coming, Grumio?

GRU. O, ay, Curtis, ay: and therefore fire, fire; cast on no water. ⁷

It rather means *besoy'd*, i. e. made dirty. So, Spenser speaking of a fountain:

"Which she increased with her bleeding heart,

"And the clean waves with purple gore did *roy*."

Again, B. III. c. viii. st. 32:

"Who whiles the piteous lady up did rise,

"Ruffled and foully *roy'd* with filthy soil." TOLLET.

So, in *Summer's last Will and Testament*, 1600: "Let there be a few rushes laid in the place where Backwinter shall tumble, for fear of *roying* his clothes." STEEVENS.

⁶ — a little pot, and soon hot,] This is a proverbial expression. It is introduced in *The Isle of Gulls*, 1606:

"— Though I be but a little pot, I shall be as soon hot as another." STEEVENS.

⁷ — fire, fire; cast on no water.] There is an old popular catch of three parts in these words:

"Scotland burneth, Scotland burneth.

"Fire, fire; — Fire, fire;

"Cast on some more water." BLACKSTONE.

CURT. Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?

GRU. She was, good Curtis, before this frost: but, thou know'st, winter tames man, woman, and beast; for it hath tam'd my old master, and my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.⁸

CURT. Away, you three-inch fool!⁹ I am no beast.

GRU. Am I but three inches? why, thy horn is

* — winter tames man, woman, and beast; for it hath tam'd my old master, and my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis. &c.] "Winter, says Grumio, tames man, woman, and beast; for it has tamed my old master, my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.—Away, you three-inch fool, replies Curtis I am no beast." Why, asks Dr. Warburton, had Grumio called him one? he alters therefore myself to thyself, and all the editors follow him. But there is no necessity; if Grumio calls himself a beast, and Curtis, fellow; surely he calls Curtis a beast likewise. Malvolio takes this sense of the word, "let this fellow be look'd to! — Fellow! not Malvolio, after my degree, but fellow!"

In Ben Jonson's *Case is Altered*, "What says my Fellow Onion?" quoth *Christophero*. — "All of a house, replies *Onion*, but not fellows."

In the old play, called *The Return from Parnassus*, we have a curious passage, which shows the opinion of contemporaries concerning the learning of Shakspeare; this use of the word fellow brings it to my remembrance. Burbage and Kempe are introduced to teach the university-men the art of acting, and are represented (particularly Kempe) as *traden sports—very illiterate*. "Few of the university [says Kempe] pen plays well; they smell too much of that writer *Ovid*, and that writer *Metamorphosis*: — why here's our Fellow Shakspeare puts them all down." FARMER.

The sentence delivered by Grumio, is proverbial:

"Wedding, and ill-wintering, tame both man and beast."

See Ray's *Collection*. STEEVENS.

⁸ *Away, you three-inch fool!*] i. e. with a skull three inches thick; a phrase taken from the thicker sort of planks.

WARBURTON.

This contemptuous expression alludes to Grumio's diminutive size. He has already mentioned it himself: — "Now, were not I a little pot—" His answer likewise, "—and so long am I, at the least,"—shows that this is the meaning, and that Dr. Warburton was mistaken in supposing that these words allude to the thickness of Grumio's skull. MALONE.

a foot ; and so long am I, at the least. ² But wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on thee to our mistress, whose hand (she being now at hand,) thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold comfort, for being slow in thy hot office.

CURT. I pr'ythee, good Grumio, tell me, How goes the world?

GRU. A cold world, Curtis, in every office but thine; and, therefore, fire: Do thy duty, and have thy duty; for my master and mistress are almost frozen to death.

CURT. There's fire ready; And therefore, good Grumio, the news?

GRU. Why, *Jack boy! ho boy!* ³ and as much news as thou wilt. ⁴

² — *why, thy horn is a foot; and so long am I, at the least.*] Though all the copies agree in this reading, Mr. Theobald says, yet he cannot find what horn Curtis had; therefore he alters it to *my horn*. But the common reading is right, and the meaning is, that he had made Curtis a cuckold. WARBURTON.

³ — *Jack boy! ho boy!*] is the beginning of an old round in three parts.



SIR J. HAWKINS.

⁴ — *as thou wilt.*] Old copy—*wilt thou.* Corrected by the editor of the second folio. NALONE.

CURT. Come, you are so full of conyatching:—

GRU. Why therefore, fire; for I have caught extreme cold. Where's the cook? is supper ready, the house trimm'd, rushes strew'd, cobwebs sweep'd; the servingmen in their new fustian, their white stockings,⁵ and every officer his wedding-garment on? Be the jacks fair within, the jills fair without,⁶ the carpets laid,⁷ and every thing in order?

CURT. All ready; And therefore, I pray thee, news?⁸

⁵ — their white stockings,] The old copy reads — the white—. Corrected by the editor of the third folio. MALONE.

⁶ — Be the jacks fair within, the jills fair without,] i. e. are the drinking vessels clean, and the maid servants dress'd? But the Oxford editor alters it thus:

Are the jacks fair without, the jills fair within?

What his conceit is in this, I confess I know not. WARBURTON.

Sir T. Hamner's meaning seems to be this: "Are the men who are waiting without the house to receive my master, dress'd; and the maids, who are waiting within, dress'd too?"

I believe the poet meant to play upon the words *jack* and *jill*, which signify *two drinking measures*, as well as *men* and *maid servants*. The distinction made in the questions concerning them, was owing to this: The *jacks* being of leather, could not be made to appear beautiful on the outside, but were very apt to contract foulness within; whereas, the *jills*, being of metal, were expected to be kept bright externally, and were not liable to dirt on the inside, like the leather.

The quibble on the former of these words I find in *The Atheist's Tragedy*, by C. Tourner, 1611:

" — have you drunk yourselves mad?

" s. *Ser.* My lord, the *jacks* abus'd me.

" *D'Am.* I think they are *jacks* indeed that have abus'd thee."

Again, in *The Puritan*, 1607: "I owe money to several hostesses, and you know such *jills* will quickly be upon a man's *jack*." In this last instance, the allusion to drinking measures is evident.

STEEVENS.

⁷ — the carpets laid,] In our author's time it was customary to cover tables with carpets. Floors, as appears from the present passage and others, were strewed with rushes. MALONE.

⁸ — I pray thee, news?] I believe the author wrote — *I pray thy news*. MALONE.

GRU. First, know, my horse is tired; my master and mistress fallen out.

CURT. How?

GRU. Out of their saddles into the dirt; And thereby hangs a tale.

CURT. Let's ha't, good Grumio.

GRU. Lend thine ear.

CURT. Here.

GRU. There. [Striking him.]

CURT. This is ³ to feel a tale, not to hear a tale.

GRU. And therefore 'tis called, a sensible tale: and this cuff was but to knock at your ear, and beseech listening. Now I begin: *Imprimis*, we came down a foul hill, my master riding behind my mistress:—

CURT. Both on one horse?¹

GRU. What's that to thee?

CURT. Why, a horse.

GRU. Tell thou the tale:—But hadst thou not cross'd me, thou should'st have heard how her horse fell, and she under her horse; thou should'st have heard, in how miry a place: how she was bemoil'd;² how he left her with the horse upon her; how he beat me because her horse stumbled; how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me; how he swore; how she pray'd—that never pray'd before;⁴

¹ This is —] Old copy — This 'tis — Corrected by Mr. Pope.
MALONE.

² — on one horse?] The old copy reads — of one horse?
STEEVENS.

³ — bemoil'd;] i. e. be-draggled; bemired. STEEVENS.

⁴ — how he swore; how she pray'd — that never pray'd before;] These lines, with little variation, are found in the old copy of *King Lear*, published before that of Shakspeare. STEEVENS.

how I cried; how the horses ran away; how her bridle was burst;⁴ how I lost my crupper; — with many things of worthy memory; which now shall die in oblivion, and thou return unexperienced to thy grave.

CURT. By this reckoning, he is more shrew than she.

GRU. Ay; and that thou and the proudest of you all shall find, when he comes home. But what talk I of this? — call forth Nathaniel, Joseph, Nicholas, Philip, Walter, Sugarlop, and the rest: let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed,⁵ and their garters of an indifferent knit:⁶

⁴ — was burst; } i. e. broken. So, in the first scene of this play: "You will not pay for the glasses you have burst?"

STEEVENS.

⁵ — their blue coats brush'd, } The dress of servants at the time. So, in Decker's *Belman's Night Walkes*, sig. E. 3: "— the other as their paris in blew coats, as they were their serving men, though indeed they be all fellows." Again, in *The Curtain Drawer of the World*, 1612, p. 21: "Not a serving man dare appeare in a blew coat, not because it is the livery of charity, but lest he should be thought a retainer to their enemy." REED.

⁶ — garters of an indifferent knit: } What is the sense of this I know not, unless it means, that their garters should be fellows: indifferent, or not different, one from the other. JOHNSON.

This is rightly explained. So, in *Hamlet*:

"As the indifferent children of the earth."

Again, in *King Richard II*:

"Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye."

i. e. an impartial one. STEEVENS.

Perhaps by "garters of an indifferent knit," the author meant parti-coloured garters: garters of a different knit. In Shakspeare's time indifferent was sometimes used for different. Thus Speed, (*Hist. of Gr. Brit.* p. 770.) describing the French and English armies at the battle of Agincourt, says, "— the face of these hoasts were diverse and indifferent."

That garters of a different knit were formerly worn, appears from *TEXNOFAMIA, or the Marriages of the Arts*, by Barton Holyday, 1630, where the following stage direction occurs. "Phaantastes in

let them curt'sy with their left legs; and not presume to touch a hair of my master's horse-tail, till they kiss their hands. Are they all ready?

CURT. They are.

GRU. Call them forth.

CURT. Do you hear, ho? you must meet my master, to countenance my mistress.

GRU. Why, she hath a face of her own.

CURT. Who knows not that?

GRU. Thou, it seems; that call'st for company to countenance her.

CURT. I call them forth to credit her.

GRU. Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them.

Enter several Servants.

NATH. Welcome home, Grumio.

PHIL. How now, Grumio?

JOS. What, Grumio!

NICH. Fellow Grumio!

NATH. How now, old lad?

GRU. Welcome, you;—how now, you;—what, you;—fellow, you;—and thus much for greeting. Now, my spruce companions, is all ready, and all things neat?

NATH. All things is ready: How near is our master?

a branched velvet jerkin, — red silk-sockings, and parti-coloured garters." MALONE.

⁷ *All things is ready:*] Though in general it is proper to correct the false concords that are found in almost every page of the old copy, here it would be improper; because the language suits the character. MALONE.

316. TAMING OF THE SHREW.

GRU. E'en at hand, alighted by this; and therefore be not,——Cock's passion, silence!——I hear my master.

Enter PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA. *

PET. Where be these knaves? What, no man at door; †

* *Enter Petruchio, &c.] Thus the original play:*

" Enter Ferando and Kate.

" Ferand. Now welcome Kate. Wheres these villaines,

" Heere? what, not supper yet upon the board!

" Nor table spread, nor nothing done at all!

" Wheres that villaine that I sent before?

" San. Now, adsum, sir.

" Feran. Come hither you villaine; Ile cut your nose

" You rogue: help me off with my bootes: wil't please

" You to lay the cloth? Sowns the villaine

" Hurts my foote: pull easily I say: yet againe?

[He beats them all. They cover the board, and fetch in the meate.

" Sowns, burnt and scorch't! who dreft this meate?

" Will. Forsooth, John Cooke.

[He throws downe the table and meate, and all, and beats them all.

" Feran. Goe, you villaines; bring me such meate?

" Out of my fight, I say, and bear it hence.

" Come, Kate, wee'l have other meate provided:

" Is there a fire in my chamber, sir?

" San. I, sirfooth.

[Exit Ferando and Kate.

" Manent serving men, and eat up all the meate.

" Tom. Sownes, I thinke of my conscience my master's madde since he was married.

" Will. I last what a box he gave Sander

" For pulling off his bootes.

" Enter Ferando again.

" San. I hurt his foot for the nounce, man.

" Feran. Did you so, you damned villaine?

[He beats them all out again.

" This humour must I hold me to a while,

" To bridle and hulse back my head-strong wife,

" With curbes of hunger, ease, and want of sleepe;

" Nor sleep nor meate shall she enjoy to-night;

" Ile mew her up as men do mew their hawkes,

" And make her gently come unto the lewre;

To hold my stirrup, nor to take my horse!
Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip? —

ALL SERV. Here, here, fir; here fir.

PET. Here, fir! here, fir! here, fir! here, fir! —
You loggerheaded and unpolish'd grooms!
What, no attendance? no regard? no duty? —
Where is the foolish knave I sent before?

GRU. Here, fir; as foolish as I was before.

PET. You peasant swain! you whoreson malt-
horse drudge!

Did I not bid thee meet me in the park,
And bring along these rascal knaves with thee?

GRU. Nathaniel's coat, fir, was not fully made,
And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i' the heel;
There was no link to colour Peter's hat,^a
And Walter's dagger was not come from sheath-
ing:

There were none fine, but Adam, Ralph, and Gre-
gory;

The rest were ragged, old,^b and beggarly;
Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet you.

PET. Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper in. —
[*Exeunt some of the Servants.*]

^a Were she as stubborn, or as full of strength

^b As was the Thracian horse Aleides tame,

^c That king Egeus fed with flesh of men,

^d Yet would I pull her downe and make her come,

^e As hungry hawkes do flie unto their lewre."

[*Exit.*

STEEVENS,

^f — at door.] *Door* is here, and in other places, used as a dissyllable. MALONE.

^g — no link to colour Peter's hat.] A link is a torch of pitch. Greene, in his *Mischance*, says — "This cozenage is used likewise in selling old hats found upon duog-hills, instead of newe, blackt over with the *smoke* of an old link." STEEVENS.

318 TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Where is the life that late I led³ — [Sings.
Where are those — Sit down, Kate, and wel-
come.
Soud, foud, foud, foud!⁴

Re-enter Servants, with supper.

Why, when, I say? — Nay, good sweet Kate, be merry.

Off with my boots, you rogues, you villains; When?
*It was the friar of orders grey,*⁵ [Sings.
As he forth walked on his way: —

³ *Where, &c.*] A scrap of some old ballad. Ancient Pistol elsewhere quotes the same line. In an old black letter book intituled, "*A gorgeous Gallery of Gallant Inventions*, London, 1578, 4to. is a song to the tune of *Where is the life that late I led.*" RITSON.

This ballad was peculiarly suited to Petruchio's present situation: for it appears to have been descriptive of the state of a lover who had newly resigned his freedom. In an old collection of Sonnets, entitled *A handfull of pleasant delites, containing sundrie new sonets*, &c. by Clement Robinson, 1584, is "Dame Beautie's replie to the lover late at libertie, and now complaineth himselfe to be her captive, intituled, *Where is the life that late I led*:"

"The life that erst thou led'st, my friend,

"Was pleasant to thine eyes," &c. MALONE.

⁴ *Soud, foud, &c.*] That is, *sweet, sweet. Soot*, and sometimes *sooth*, is *sweet*. So, in Milton, *to sing soothly*, is to sing sweetly.

JOHNSON.

So, in *Promos and Cassandra*, 1578:

"He'll hang handsome young men for the soote sinne of love."

STEEVENS.

These words seem merely intended to denote the humming of a tune, or some kind of ejaculation, for which it is not necessary to find out a meaning. M. MASON.

This, I believe, is a word coined by our poet, to express the noise made by a person heated and fatigued. MALONE.

⁵ *It was the friar of orders grey.*] Dispersed through Shakspeare's plays are many little fragments of ancient ballads, the entire copies of which cannot now be recovered. Many of these being of the

Out, out, you rogue! ⁶ you pluck my foot awry :
Take that, and mend the plucking off the other.—

[*Strikes him.*

Be merry, Kate:—Some water, here; what ho!—
Where's my spaniel Troilus? — Sirrah, get you
hence,

And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither: ⁷ —

[*Exit Servant.*

One, Kate, that you must kifs, and be acquainted
with. —

Where are my slippers? — Shall I have some
water? [*A basin is presented to him.*

Come, Kate, and wash, ⁸ and welcome heartily:—
[*Servant lets the cwer fall.*

most beautiful and pathetic simplicity, Dr. Percy has selected some of them, and connected them together with a few supplemental stanzas; a work, which at once demonstrates his own poetical abilities, as well as his respect to the truly venerable remains of our most ancient bards. STEEVENS.

⁶ *Out, out, you rogue!*] The second word was inserted by Mr. Pope, to complete the metre. When a word occurs twice in the same line, the compositor very frequently omits one of them.

MALONE.

⁷ *And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither:*] This cousin Ferdinand, who does not make his personal appearance on the scene, is mentioned, I suppose, for no other reason than to give Katharine a hint, that he could keep even his own relations in order, and make them obedient as his spaniel Troilus. STEEVENS.

⁸ *Come, Kate, and wash,*] It was the custom in our author's time, (and long before,) to wash the hands immediately before dinner and supper, as well as afterwards. So, in Ives's *Selected Papers*, p. 139: "And after that the Queen [Elizabeth, the wife of K. Henry VII.] was returned and washed, the Archbishop said grace." Again, in Florio's *Second Frutes*, 1591: C. "The meate is coming, let us sit downe. S. I would wash first —. What ho, bring us some water to wash our hands. — Give me a faire, cleane and white towel." From the same dialogue it appears that it was customary to wash after meals likewise, and that setting the water on the table was then (as at present) peculiar to Great Britain and Ireland. "Bring some water (says one of the company) when dinner is

520 TAMING OF THE SHREW.

You whorison villain! will you let it fall?

[*Strikes him.*]

KATH. Patience, I pray you; 'twas a fault unwilling.

PET. A whorison, beetleheaded, flapear'd knave! Come, Kate, sit down; I know you have a stomach.

Will you give thanks, sweet Kate; or else shall I?—What is this? mutton?

I SERV.

Ay.

PET.

Who brought it?

I SERV.

I.

PET. 'Tis burnt; and so is all the meat: What dogs are these?—Where is the rascal cook? How durst you, villains, bring it from the dresser, And serve it thus to me that love it not?

There, take it to you, trenchers, cups, and all:

[*Throws the meat, &c. about the stage.*]

You heedless joltheads, and unmanner'd slaves! What, do you grumble? I'll be with you straight.

KATH. I pray you, husband, be not so disquiet; The meat was well; if you were so contented.

ended,) to wash our hands, and set the basin upon the board, *after the English fashion*, that all may wash."

That it was the practice to wash the hands immediately before supper, as well as before dinner, is ascertained by the following passage in *The Fountayne of Fame, crested in an Orchard of amorous adventures*, by Anthony Munday, 1580: "Then was our supper brought up very orderly, and she brought me water to waſhe my handes. And after I had waſhed, I ſat downe, and ſhe alſo; but concerning what good cheere we had, I need not make good report." MALONE.

As our ancestors eat with their fingers, which might not be over-clean before meals, and after them must be greasy, we cannot wonder at such repeated ablutions. STARKENS.

PET. I tell thee, Kate, 'twas burnt, and dried away ;

And I expressly am forbid to touch it,
For it engenders choler, planteth anger;
And better 'twere, that both of us did fast,—
Since, of ourselves, ourselves are choleric,—
Than feed it with such over-roasted flesh.
Be patient; to-morrow it shall be mended,
And, for this night, we'll fast for company:—
Come, I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber.

[*Exeunt* PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and CURTIS.

NATH. [*Advancing.*] Peter, didst ever see the like ?

PETER. He kills her in her own humour.

Re-enter CURTIS.

GRU. Where is he ?

CURT. In her chamber,

Making a sermon of continency to her :
And rails, and swears, and rates ; that she, poor soul,
Knows not which way to stand, to look, to speak ;
And sits as one new-risen from a dream.
Away, away ! for he is coming hither. [*Exeunt.*

Re-enter PETRUCHIO.

PET. Thus have I politicly begun my reign,
And 'tis my hope to end successfully:
My falcon now is sharp, and passing empty ;
And, till she stoop, she must not be full-gorg'd,*

* — *full-gorg'd*, &c.] A hawk too much fed was never traſſable. So, in the *Tragedy of Crafus*, 1604 :

“ And like a hooded hawk, *gorg'd* with vain pleasures,

“ At random flies, and wots not where he is.”

For then she never looks upon her lure.
 Another way I have to man my haggard,²
 To make her come, and know her keeper's call;
 That is, to watch her, as we watch these kites,³
 That bate,⁴ and beat, and will not be obedient.
 She eat no meat to-day, nor none shall eat;
 Last night she slept not, nor to night she shall not;
 As with the meat, some undeserved fault
 I'll find about the making of the bed;
 And here I'll fling the pillow, there the bolster,
 This way the coverlet, another way the sheets:—
 Ay, and amid this hurly, I intend,⁵
 That all is done in reverend care of her;
 And, in conclusion, she shall watch all night.
 And, if she chance to nod, I'll rail, and brawl,

Again, in *The Booke of Hawkyng*, bl. l. no date:

"— ye shall say our hauke is full-gorg'd, and not cropped."

The *lure* was, only a thing stuffed like that kind of bird which the hawk was designed to pursue. The use of the *lure* was to tempt him back after he had flown. STEEVENS.

² ——— to man my haggard,] A haggard is a wild hawk; to man a hawk is to tame her. JOHNSON.

³ ——— watch her, as we watch these kites,] Thus in the same book of *Hawkyng*, &c. bl. l. commonly called, *The Book of St. Albans*: "And then the same night after the teding, wake her all night, and on the morrowe all day."

Again, in *The Lady Errant*, by Cartwright: "We'll keep you as they do hawks; watching you until you leave your wildness."

STEEVENS.

⁴ That bate,] i. e. flutter. So in *King Henry IV.* P. I:

"Bated like eagles having lately bath'd." STEEVENS.

To *bate* is to flutter as a hawk does when it swoops upon its prey. Minshew supposes it to be derived either from *battere*, Fr. to beat, or from *s'abatre*, to descend: MALONE.

⁵ ——— amid this hurly, I intend,] *Intend* is sometimes used by our author for *pretend*, and is, I believe, so used here. So, in *King Richard III*:

"Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,

"Intending deep suspicion." MALONE.

And with the clamour keep her still awake,
This is a way to kill a wife with kindness;
And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong humour:—

He that knows better how to tame a shrew,
Now let him speak; 'tis charity, to show. [Exit.

S C E N E II.

Padua. Before Baptista's House.

Enter TRANIO and HORTENSIO.

TRA. Is't possible, friend Licio, that Bianca⁷
Doth fancy any other but Lucentio?
I tell you, sir, she bears me fair in hand.

⁶ *Scene II. Padua, &c.*] This scene, Mr. Pope, upon what authority I cannot pretend to guess, has in his editions made the first of the fifth act: in doing which, he has shown the very power and force of criticism. The consequence of this judicious regulation is, that two unpardonable absurdities are fixed upon the author, which he could not possibly have committed. For, in the first place, by this shuffling the scenes out of their true position, we find Hortensio, in the fourth Act, already gone from Baptista's to Petruchio's country-house; and afterwards in the beginning of the fifth Act we find him first forming the resolution of quitting Bianca; and Tranio immediately informs us, he is gone to the Taming-school to Petruchio. There is a figure, indeed, in rhetoric called *ὕψος ἀπὸ τέρους*; but this is an abuse of it, which the rhetoricians will never adopt upon Mr. Pope's authority. Again, by this mis-placing, the Pedant makes his first entrance, and quits the stage with Tranio in order to go and dress himself like Vincentio, whom he was to personate: but his second entrance is upon the very heels of his exit; and without any interval of an act, or one word intervening, he comes out again equipped like Vincentio. If such a critic be fit to publish a stage writer, I shall not envy Mr. Pope's admirers, if they should think fit to applaud his sagacity. I have replaced the scenes in that order, in which I found them in the old books. THEOBALD.

⁷ ——— *that Bianca*—] The old copy redundantly reads—that mistress Bianca. STEEVENS.

HOR. Sir, to satisfy you in what I have said,
Stand by, and mark the manner of his teaching.
[*They stand aside.*]

Enter BIANCA and LUCENTIO.

LUC. Now, mistress, profit you in what you read?

BIAN. What, master, read you? first, resolve me that.

LUC. I read that I profess, the art to love.

BIAN. And may you prove sir, master of your art?

LUC. While you, sweet dear, prove mistress of my heart. [*They retire.*]

HOR. Quick, proceeders, marry! Now, tell me, I pray,

You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca
Lov'd none^{*} in the world so well as Lucentio.

TRA. O despiteful love! unconstant woman-kind!—

I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful.

HOR. Mistake no more: I am not Licio:

Nor a musician, as I seem to be;
But one that scorn to live in this disguise,
For such a one as leaves a gentleman,
And makes a god of such a cullion:
Know, sir, that I am call'd—Hortensio.

TRA. Signior Hortensio, I have often heard
Of your entire affection to Bianca;

^{*} *Quick proceeders, marry!*] Perhaps here an equivoque was intended. To *proceed* Master of Arts, &c. is the academical term.

MALONE.

^{*} *Lov'd none—*] Old copy—*Lov'd me—*. Mr. Rowe made this necessary correction. MALONE.

And since mine eyes are witnesses of her lightness,
I will with you,—if you be so contented,—
Forswear Bianca and her love for ever.

HOR. See, how they kiss and court! — Signior
Lucentio,

Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow—
Never to woo her more; but do forswear her,
As one unworthy all the former favours
That I have fondly flatter'd her withal.*

TRA. And here I take the like unfeigned oath,—
Ne'er to marry with her though she would entreat:
Fie on her! see, how beastly she doth court him.

HOR. 'Would, all the world, but he, had quite
forsworn!

For me,—that I may surely keep mine oath,
I will be married to a wealthy widow,
Ere three days pass; which hath as long lov'd me,
As I have lov'd this proud disdainful haggard:
And so farewell, signior Lucentio.—
Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,
Shall win my love:—and so I take my leave,
In resolution as I swore before.

[Exit HORTENSIO.—LUCENTIO and BIANCA
advance.]

TRA. Mistress Bianca, bless you with such grace
As 'longeth to a lover's blessed case!
Nay, I have ta'en you napping, gentle love;
And have forsworn you, with Hortensio.

BIAN. Tranio, you jest; But have you both for-
sworn me?

TRA. Mistress, we have.

LUC. Then we are rid of Licio.

* That I have fondly flatter'd her withal.] The old copy reads—
firm withal. The emendation was made by the editor of the
third folio. MALONE.

TRA. I'faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day.

BIAN. God give him joy!

TRA. Ay, and he'll tame her.⁹

BIAN. He says so, Tranio.

TRA. 'Faith, he is gone unto the taming-school.

BIAN. The taming-school! what, is there such
a place?

TRA. Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the master;
That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,—
To tame a shrew, and charm her chattering tongue.*

Enter BIONDELLO, running.

BION. O master, master, I have watch'd so long
That I'm dog-weary; but at last I spied
An ancient angel³ coming down the hill,
Will serve the turn.

⁹ *Ay, and he'll tame her, &c.*] Thus in the original play:

" — he means to tame his wife ere long.

" *Val.* Hee saies so.

" *Aurel.* Faith he's gon unto the taming-school.

" *Val.* The taming-school! why is there such a place?

" *Aurel.* I; and *Ferando* is the maister of the schoole."

STEEVENS.

* — charm *her chattering tongue.*] So, in *King Henry VI.*
P. III:

" Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm your tongue."

STEEVENS.

³ *An ancient angel—*] For *angel* Mr. Theobald, and after him
Sir T. Hanmer and Dr. Warburton, read *engle*. JOHNSON.

It is true that the word *engle*, which Sir T. Hanmer calls a
gull, (deriving it from *engler*, Fr. to catch with bird-lime,) is
sometimes used by Ben Jonson. It cannot, however, bear that
meaning at present, as Biondello confesses his ignorance of the
quality of the person who is afterwards persuaded to represent the
father of Lucentio. The precise meaning of it is not ascertained
in Jonson, neither is the word to be found in any of the original

TRA. What is he, Biondello?

BION. Master, a mercatantè, or a pedant,⁴
I know not what; but formal in apparel,
In gait and countenance surely like a father.⁵

copies of Shakspeare. I have also reason to suppose that the true import of the word *engle* is such as can have no connection with this passage, and will not bear explanation.

Angel primitively signifies a messenger, but perhaps this sense is inapplicable to the passage before us. So, Ben Jonson in *The Sad Shepherd*:

" — the dear good angel of the spring.

" The nightingale —."

And Chapman, in his translation of *Homer*, always calls a messenger an *angel*. See particularly B. xxiv.

In *The Scurful Lady* of Beaumont and Fletcher, an old usurer is indeed called

" — old angel of gold."

It is possible, however, that instead of *ancient angel*, our author might have written—*angel-merchant*, one whose business it was to negotiate money. He is afterwards called a *mercatantè*, and professes himself to be one who has bills of exchange about him.

STEEVENS.

⁴ *Master, a mercatantè, or a pedant,*] The old editions read *mercantantè*. The Italian word *mercatantè* is frequently used in the old plays for a merchant, and therefore I have made no scruple of placing it here. The modern editors, who printed the word as they found it spelt in the folio, were obliged to supply a syllable to make out the verse, which the Italian pronunciation renders unnecessary. A *pedant* was the common name for a teacher of languages. See, in *Cynthia's Revels*, by Ben Jonson: "He loves to have a fencer, a *pedant*, and a musician, seen to his lodgings."

STEEVENS.

Mercatantè,] So, Spenser, in the third book of his *Fairy Queen*:

" Sleeves dependant Albanesè wife."

And our author has *Veronesè* in his *Othello*. FARMER.

— *pedant,*] *Charron*, the sage *Charron*, as Pope calls him, describes a *pedant*, a synonymous to a household schoolmaster, and adds a general character of the fraternity by no means to their advantage. See *Charron on Wisdom*, 4to. 1640. Lennard's *Translation*, p. 158. READ.

⁵ — *surely like a father.*] I know not what he is, says the speaker, however this is certain, he has the gait and countenance of a fatherly man. WARBURTON.

328 TAMING OF THE SHREW.

LUC. And what of him, Tranio?

TRA. If he be credulous, and trust my tale,
I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio;
And give assurance to Baptista Minola,
As if he were the right Vincentio.
Take in your love, and then let me alone.⁶

[*Exeunt* LUCENTIO and BIANCA.

Enter a Pedant.

PED. God save you, sir!

TRA. And you, sir! you are welcome.
Travel you far on, or are you at the furthest?

PED. Sir, at the furthest for a week or two:
But then up further; and as far as Rome;
And so to Tripoly, if God lend me life.

TRA. What countryman, I pray?

PED. Of Mantua,

TRA. Of Mantua, sir?—marry, God forbid!
And come to Padua, careless of your life?

PED. My life, sir! how I pray? for that goes hard.

TRA. 'Tis death, for any one in Mantua
To come to Padua; ' Know you not the cause?
Your ships are staid at Venice; and the duke

The editor of the Second folio reads—*farly*, which Mr. Theobald adopted, and has quoted the following lines, addressed by Tranio to the pedant, in support of the emendation:

" 'Tis well; and hold your own in any case

" With such *austerity* as longeth to a father." MALONE.

⁶ *Take in your love, and then let me alone.*] The old copies exhibit this line as follows, disjoining it from its predecessors.

Far. Take me your love, and then let me alone. STEEVENS.

Corrected by Mr. Theobald. MALONE.

⁷ *'Tis death for any one in Mantua, &c.*] So, in *The Comedy of Errors*:

" — if any Syracusan born

" Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies." STEEVENS.

(For private quarrel 'twixt your duke and him,) Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly:
'Tis marvel; but that you're but newly come,
You might have heard it else proclaim'd about.

PED. Alas, fir, it is worse for me than so;
For I have bills for money by exchange
From Florence, and must here deliver them.

TRA. Well, fir, to do you courtesy,
This will I do, and this will I advise you;—
First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

PED. Ay, fir, in Pisa have I often been;
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens.*

TRA. Among them, know you one Vincentio?

PED. I know him not, but I have heard of him;
A merchant of incomparable wealth.

TRA. He is my father, fir; and, sooth to say,
In countenance somewhat doth resemble you.

BION. As much as an apple doth an oyster, and
all one. [Aside.

TRA. To save your life in this extremity,
This favour will I do you for his sake;
And think it not the worst of all your fortunes,
That you are like to fir Vincentio.
His name and credit shall you undertake,
And in my house you shall be friendly lodg'd;—
Look, that you take upon you as you should;
You understand me, fir;—so shall you stay
Till you have done your business in the city:
If this be courtesy, fir, accept of it.

PED. O, fir, I do; and will repute you ever
The patron of my life and liberty.

TRA. Then go with me, to make the matter good.
This, by the way, I let you understand;—

* *Pisa, renowned for grave citizens.*] This line has been already
used by Larentio. See Act I. sc. i. RITSON.

My father is here look'd for every day,
 To pass assurance^a of a dower in marriage
 'Twixt me and one Baptista's daughter here :
 In all these circumstances I'll instruct you :
 Go with me, sir, to clothe you as becomes you.^b
[Exit.

S C E N E III.

A Room in Petruchio's House.

Enter KATHARINA and GRUMIO.^a

GRU. No, no, forsooth ; I dare not, for my life.

KATH. The more my wrong, the more his spite
 appears :

^a *To pass assurance* —] *To pass assurance* means to make a conveyance or deed. Deeds are by law-writers called, "The common assurances of the realm," because thereby each man's property is assured to him. So, in a subsequent scene of this ad, "they are bused about a counterfeit assurance." MALONE.

^b *Go with me, sir, &c.*] Thus the second folio. The first omits the word — *sir*. STEEVENS.

Go with me, &c.] There is an old comedy called *Sapphoes*, translated from Ariosto, by George Gascoigne. Thence Shakspeare borrowed this part of the plot, (as well as some of the phraseology) though Theobald pronounces it his own invention. There likewise he found the quaint name of Petruchio. My young master and his man exchange habits, and persuade a *Scenesse*, as he is called, to personate the father, exactly as in this play, by the pretended danger of his coming from *Sienna* to *Ferrara*, contrary to the order of the government. FARMER.

In the same play our author likewise found the name of *Licio*.
MALONE.

^a *Enter Katharina and Grumio.*] Thus the original play :

Enter Sander and his mistress.

"*Saa. Come, mistress,*

"*Kate. Sander, I prethee helpe me to some meat ;*

"*I am so faint that I can scarcely stand.*

"*Saa. I marry mistress : but you know my maister*

"*Has given me a charge that you must eat nothing.*

"*But that which he himself giveth you.*

What, did he marry me to famish me?
Beggars, that come unto my father's door,

" *Kate*. Why man, thy master needs never know it.

" *San*. You say true, indeed. Why looke you, mistress;

" What say you to a pece of bieffe and mustard now?

" *Kate*. Why, I say, 'tis excellent meat; caost thou helpe me to some?

" *San*. I, I could helpe you to some, but that I doubt

" The mustard is too chollerick for you.

" But what say you to a sheepes head and garlicke?

" *Kate*. Why any thing; I care not what it be.

" *San*. I, but the garlicke I doubt will make your breath sincke; and then my master will course me for letting you eate it. But what say you to a fat capoo?

" *Kate*. That's meat for a king; sweete *Sander* help me to some of it.

" *San*. Nay, berlady, then 'tis too deere for us; we must not meddle with the king's meate.

" *Kate*. Out villaine! dost thou mocke me?

" Take that for thy fawnesse. [*She beates him.*

" *San*. Sounes are you so light-fogred, with a murrin;

" He keepe you fasting for it these two daies.

" *Kate*. I tell thee villaine, He tear the flesh off

" Thy face and eate it, and thou prate to me thus.

" *San*. Here comes my master now: heele course you.

" *Enter Ferando with a piece of meate upon his dagger point, and Polidor with him.*

" *Feran*. See here, *Kate*, I have provided meate for thee:

" Here, take it: what, is't not worthy thanks?

" Go, sirha, take it away againe, you shall be

" Thankful for the next you have.

" *Kate*. Why, I thanke you for it.

" *Feran*. Nay, now 'tis not worth a pint: go, sirha, and take it hence, I say.

" *San*. Yes, sir, He carrie it hence: Master, let hir

" Have oone; for she can fight, as hungry as she is.

" *Pol*. I pray you, sir, let it stand; for ile eat

" Some with her myselfe.

" *Feran*. Wel, sirha, set it downe againe.

" *Kate*. Nay, nay, I pray you, let him take it hence,

" And keepe it for your own diet, for ile none;

" He oere be beholding to you for your meate:

" I tel thee flatly here unto thy teeth.

" Thou shalt not keepe me nor feed me as thou list,

" For I will home againe unto my father's house.

" *Feran*. I, when y are meeke and gentle, but not before:

Upon entreaty, have a present alms;
 If not, elsewhere they meet with charity:
 But I,—who never knew how to entreat,
 Nor never needed that I should entreat,—
 Am starv'd for meat giddy for lack of sleep;
 With oaths kept waking, and with brawling fed:
 And that which spites me more than all these wants,
 He does it under name of perfect love;
 As who should say,—if I should sleep, or eat,
 'Twere deadly sickness, or else present death.—
 I pr'ythee go, and get me some repast;
 I care not what, so it be wholesome food.

GRU. What say you to a neat's foot?

KATH. 'Tis passing good; I pr'ythee let me have it.

GRU. I fear, it is too cholerick a meat:³

How say you to a fat tripe, finely broil'd?

KATH. I like it well; good Grumio, fetch it me.

GRU. I cannot tell; I fear, 'tis cholerick.

What say you to a piece of beef, and mustard?

"I know your stomacke is not yet come downe,

"Therefore no marvel thou canst not eat:

"And I will go unto your father's house.

"Come Polidor, let us go in againe;

"And Kate come in with us: I know, ere long,

"That thou and I shall lovingly agree."

The circumstance of *Ferando* bringing meat to *Katharine* on the point of his dagger, is a ridicule on Marlowe's *Tamburlaine*, who treats *Bejart* in the same manner. STEEVENS.

³ *I fear, it is too cholerick a meat:*] So before:

"And I expressly am forbid to touch it;

"For it engenders choler."

The editor of the second folio arbitrarily reads—too *phlegmatick* a meat; which has been adopted by all the subsequent editors.

MALONE.

Though I have not displaced the oldest reading, that of the second folio may be right. It prevents the repetition of *cholerick*, and preserves its meaning; for *phlegmatick*, irregularly derived from *φλεγματινὴ*, might aciently have been a word in physical use, signifying *inflammatory*, as *phlegmonous* is at present. STEEVENS.

KATH. A dish that I do love to feed upon.

GRU. Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.⁴

KATH. Why, then the beef, and let the mustard rest.

GRU. Nay, then I will not; you shall have the mustard,

Or else you get no beef of Grumio.

KATH. Then both, or one, or any thing thou wilt.

GRU. Why, then the mustard without the beef.

KATH. Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave, [Beats him.

That feed'st me with the very name of meat:

Sorrow on thee, and all the pack of you,

'That triumph thus upon my misery!

Go, get thee gone, I say.

Enter PETRUCHIO, with a dish of meat; and
HORTENSIO.

PET. How fares my Kate? What, sweeting, all amorr?⁵

HOR. Mistress, what cheer?

KATH. 'Faith, as cold as can be.

⁴ *Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.* } This is agreeable to the doctrine of the times. In *The Glass of Humors*, no date, p. 60, it is said, "But note here, that the first diet is not only in avoiding superfluity of meats, and surfeits of drinks, but also in eschewing such as are most obnoxious, and least agreeable with our happy temperate state; as for a choleric man to abstain from all salt, scorched, dry meats, from mustard, and such like things as will aggravate his malignant humours," &c.

So Petruchio before objects to the over-roasted mutton. REED.

⁵ ——"What, sweeting, all amorr?" } This Gallicism is common to many of the old plays. So, in *Wily Beguiled*:

"Why how now, Sophos, all amorr?"

Again, in *Ram Alley, or Merry Tricks*, 1611:

"What all amorr! What's the matter?" STEVENS.

That is, all sunk and dispirited. MALONE.

PET. Pluck up thy spirits, look cheerfully upon me.

Here, love; thou see'st how diligent I am,
To dress thy meat myself, and bring it thee:

[Sets the dish on a table.

I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks.
What, not a word? Nay then, thou lov'st it not;
And all my pains is sorted to no proof:⁶—
Here, take away this dish.

KATH. 'Pray you, let it stand.

PET. The poorest service is repaid with thanks;
And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

KATH. I thank you, sir.

HOR. Signior Petruchio, fie! you are to blame:
Come, mistress Kate, I'll bear you company.

PET. Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou lov'st me.—

[Aside.

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart!
Kate, eat apace:—And now, my honey love,
Will we return unto thy father's house;
And revel it as bravely as the best,
With silken coats, and caps, and golden rings,
With ruffs, and cuffs, and farthingales, and things;⁷

⁶ *And all my pains is sorted to no proof:*] And all my labour has ended in nothing, or proved nothing. "We tried an experiment, but it sorted not." Bacon. JOHNSON.

⁷ —*farthingales, and things;*] Though *things* is a poor word, yet I have no better, and perhaps the author had not another that would rhyme. I once thought to transpose the words *rings* and *things*, but it would make little improvement. JOHNSON.

However poor the word, the poet must be answerable for it, as he had used it before, *Ad II. sc. v.* when the rhyme did not force it upon him:

We will have rings and things, and fine array.

Again, in *The Tragedy of Hoffman*, 1632:

"Tis true that I am poor, and yet have things,

"And golden rings," &c.

With scarfs, and fans, and double change of bravery,
 With amber bracelets, beads, and all this knavery.
 What, hast thou din'd? The tailor stays thy lei-
 sure,
 To deck thy body with his ruffling treasure.*—

A *thing* is a trifle too inconsiderable to deserve particular discrimination. STEEVENS.

* ———with his ruffling *treasure*.] This is the reading of the old copy, which Mr. Pope changed to *ruffling*, I think, without necessity. Our author has indeed in another play,—“*Prouder than ruffling* in unpaid for silk;” but *ruffling* is sometimes used in nearly the same sense. Thus, in *K. Lear*:

“ ———the high woods

“ Do forely *ruffle*.”

There clearly the idea of noise as well as turbulence is annexed to the word. A *ruffler* in our author's time signified a noisy and turbulent swaggerer; and the word *ruffling* may here be applied in a kindred sense to dress. So, in *K. Henry VI.* P. II:

“ And his proud wife, high-minded Eleanor,

“ That *ruffles* it with such a troop of ladies,

“ As strangers in the court take her for queen.”

Again, more appositely, in Camden's *Remains*, 1605: “There was a noblemao merry conceited and riotously given, that having lately sold a manor of a hundred tenements, came *ruffling* into the court in a new sute, saying, Am not I a mightie man that heare an hundred houses on my backe?”

Boyle speaks of the *ruffling* of silk, and *ruffled* is used by so late an author as Addison in the sense of *plaited*; in which last signification perhaps the word *ruffling* should be understood here. Petruchio has just before told Catharine that she “should revel it with *ruffs* and cuffs;” from the former of which words, *ruffled*, in the sense of *plaited*, seems to be derived. As *ruffling* therefore may be understood either in this sense, or that first suggested, (which I incline to think the true one,) I have adhered to the reading of the old copy.

To the examples already given in support of the reading of the old copy, may be added this very apposite one from Lyly's *Euphues*, and his *England*, 1580: “Shall I *ruffle* in new devices, with chaiois, with *bracelets*, with *rings*, with *roabes*?”

Again, in Drayton's *Battle of Agincourt*, 1627:

“ With *ruffling* banners, that do have the sky.” MALONE.

Enter Tailor.

Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments;*

*Enter Haberdasher.*²

Lay forth the gown.—What news with you, sir?

HAB. Here is the cap your worship did bespeak.

* *Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments;*] In our poet's time, women's gowns were usually made by men. So, in the Epistle to the Ladies, prefixed to *Euphues and his England*, by John Lyly, 1580: "If a tailor make your gown too little, you cover his fault with a broad stomacher; if too great, with a number of pleights; if too short, with a fair guard; if too long, with a false gathering." MALONE.

Enter Haberdasher.] Thus in the original play:

"San. Master, the haberdasher has brought my mistress home his cap here.

"Feran. Come hither, sirha: what have you there?

"Haber. A velvet cap, sir, and it please you.

"Feran. Who spoke for it? Didst thou, Kate?

"Kate. What if I did? Come hither, sirha, give me the cap; she see if it will fit me. [*She sets it on her head.*

"Feran. O monstrous! why it becomes thee not.

"Let me see it, Kate: here, sirha, take it hence;

"This cap is out of fashion quite.

"Kate. The fashion is good enough: helike you mean to make a fool of me.

"Feran. Why true, he means to make a' fool of thee,

"To have thee put on such a curtaild cap:

"Sirha, begone with it.

Enter the Taylor, with a gowne.

"San. Here is the Taylor too with my mistress gowne.

"Feran. Let me see it, Taylor: What, with cuts and jags?

"Sounes, thou villain, thou hast spoil'd the gowne.

"Taylor. Why, sir, I made it as your man gave me direction;

"You may read the note here.

"Feran. Come hither sirha: Taylor, read the note.

"Taylor. Item, a faire round compass'd cape.

"San. I, that's true.

"Taylor. And a large truncke sleeve.

"San. That's a lie maister; I said two truncke sleeves.

"Feran. Well, sir, go forward.

"Taylor. Item, a loose-bodied gowne.

"San. Maister, if ever I said loose bodied gowne,

PET. Why, this was moulded on a porringer;⁴

"Sew me in a feame, and beat me to death

"With a bottom of browne thred.

"*Taylor.* I made it as the note bade me.

"*San.* I fay the note lies in his throate, and thou too, an thou fayest it.

"*Tay.* Nay, oay, ne'er be so hot, sirha, for I feare you not.

"*San.* Dooft thou heare, *Taylor*? thou hast braved many men:

"Brave not me. Th'ast fac'd many men.

"*Taylor.* Wel, sir.

"*San.* Face not me: I'll neither be fac'd, nor braved, at thy haods, I can tell thee.

"*Kate.* Come, come, I like the fashion of it wel inough;

"Heere's more adoe than needes; I'll have it, I;

"And if you doe oot like it, hide your eyes:

"I thinke I shall have nothing, by your will.

"*Feran.* Go, I fay, and take it up for your maister's use!

"*San.* Souns villaine, not for thy life; touch it not:

"Souos, take up my mistress gowne to his maister's use!

"*Feran.* Well, sir, what's your conceit of it?

"*San.* I have a deeper conceit in it than you thinke for. Take up my mistress gowne to his maister's use!

"*Feran.* *Taylor*, come hither; for this time make it:

"Hence againe, and lie content thee for thy paines.

"*Taylor.* I thanke you, sir.

[*Exit Taylor.*]

"*Feran.* Come, *Kate*, wee now will go see thy father's house,

"Even in these honest meane habiliments;

"Our purfes shall be rich, our garments plaine,

"To shrowd our bodies from the winter rage;

"And that's inough, what should we care for more?

"Thy sisters, *Kate*, to-morrow must be wed,

"And I have promised them thou should'st be there:

"The morning is well up; let's haste away;

"It will be nine a clocke ere we come there.

"*Kate.* Nine a clocke! why 'tis already past two in the afternoon, by al the clockes in the towne.

"*Feran.* I fay 'tis but nine a clocke in the morning.

"*Kate.* I fay 'tis two a clocke in the afternoone.

"*Feran.* It shall be nine thes ere you go to your fathers:

"Come backe againe; we will not goe to day:

"Nothing but crosseing me stil?

"He have you say as I doe, ere I goe. [*Exeunt omnes.*] STEEVENS.

⁴ — on a porringer;] The same thought occurs in *King Henry VIII*: "—, said upon me till her pink'd porringer fell off her head." STEEVENS.

A velvet dish; — fie, fie! 'tis lewd and filthy:
 Why, 'tis a cockle, or a walnutshell,
 A knack, a toy, a trick, a baby's cap;
 Away with it, come, let me have a bigger.

KATH. I'll have no bigger; this doth fit the time,
 And gentlewomen wear such caps as these.

PET. When you are gentle, you shall have one too,
 And not till then.

HOR. That will not be in haste. [*Aside.*]

KATH. Why, sir, I trust, I may have leave to speak;⁵
 And speak I will; I am no child, no babe;
 Your betters have endur'd me say my mind;
 And, if you cannot, best you stop your ears.
 My tongue will tell the anger of my heart;
 Or else my heart, concealing it, will break:
 And, rather than it shall, I will be free
 Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words.

PET. Why, thou say'st true; it is a paltry cap,
 A custard-coffin,⁶ a bauble, a filken pie:
 I love thee well, in that thou lik'st it not.

⁵ *Why, sir, I trust, I may have leave to speak, &c.*] Shakspeare has here copied nature with great skill. Petruchio, by frightening, starving, and overwatching his wife, had tamed her into gentleness and submission: And the audience expects to hear no more of the shrew: when on her being crossed, in the article of fashion and finery, the most inveterate folly of the sex, she flies out again, though for the last time, into all the intemperate rage of her nature. WARBURTON.

⁶ *A custard-coffin.*] A *coffin* was the ancient culinary term for the raised crust of a pie or custard. So, in Ben Jonson's *Staple of News*:

" — if you spend

" The red-deer pies in your house, or sell them forth, sir,

" Call so, that I may have their *coffins* all

" Return'd," &c.

Again, in Ben Jonson's *Masque of Cyphus Metamorphosed*:

" And *coffin'd* in crust 'till now she was hoary."

STEVENS.

KATH. Love me, or love me not, I like the cap;
And it I will have, or I will have none.

PET. Thy gown? why, ay: — Come, tailor, let
us see't.

O mercy, God! what masking stuff is here?
What's this? a sleeve? 'tis like a demicaunon:
What! up and down, carv'd like an appletart;
Here's snip, and nip, and cut, and slish, and flash,
Like to a censer? in a barber's shop: —
Why, what, o'devil's name, tailor, call'st thou
this?

HOR. I see, she's like to have neither cap nor
gown. [Aside.]

TAL. You bid me make it orderly and well,
According to the fashion, and the time.

PET. Marry, and did; but if you be remember'd,
I did not bid you mar it to the time.

Go, hop me over every kennel home,
For you shall hop without my custom, sir:
I'll none of it; hence, make your best of it.

Again, in a receipt to 'bake lampreys.' MS. *Book of Cookery*.
Temp. Hen. 6:

" — and then cover the *coffyn*, but save a litell hole to blow
into the *coffyn*. with thy mouth, a gode blast; and sodenly stoppe,
that the wynde abyde withynne to ryse up the *coffyn* that it falle nout
down." DOUGL.

7 — *censers* —] *Censers* in barber's shops are now disused, but
they may easily be imagined to have been vessels which, for the
evacuation of the smoke, were cut with great number and varieties of
interstices. JOHNSON.

In *K. Henry VI.* Part II. Doll calls the beadle "thou thin man
in a *censer*." MALONE.

I learn from an ancient print, that these *censers* resembled in shape
our modern *bragiettes*. They had pierced convex covers, and stood
on feet. They not only served to sweeten a barber's shop, but
to keep his water warm, and dry his cloths on. See note on *King
Henry IV.* Part II. Act V. sc. iv. STEEVENS.

KATH. I never saw a better-fashion'd gown;
More quaint, more pleasing, nor more commendable:
Belike, you mean to make a puppet of me.

PET. Why, true; he means to make a puppet of thee.

TAI. She says, your worship means to make a puppet of her.

PET. O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest, thou thread,

Thou thimble,⁸

Thou yard, three-quarters, half-yard, quarter, nail,
Thou flea, thou nit, thou winter cricket thou:—
Brav'd in mine own house with a skein of thread!
Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant;
Or I shall so be-mete⁹ thee with thy yard,
As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou liv'st!
I tell thee, I, that thou hast marr'd her gown.

TAI. Your worship is deceiv'd; the gown is made
Just as my master had direction:

Grumio gave order how it should be done.

GRU. I gave him no order, I gave him the stuff.

TAI. But how did you desire it should be made?

GRU. Marry, sir, with needle and thread.

TAI. But did you not request to have it cut?

GRU. Thou hast faced many things.²

⁸ ———— *thou thread,*

Thou thimble,] We should only read:

O monstrous arrogance! thou liest, thou thimble.

He calls him afterwards — a skein of thread. RITSON.

The tailor's trade, having an appearance of effeminacy, has always been, among the rugged English, liable to sarcasms and contempt. JOHNSON.

⁹ — *be-mete* —] i. e. be-measure thee. STEEVENS.

² — *faced many things.*] i. e. turned up many gowns, &c. with facings, &c.] So, in *K. Henry IV*:

"To face the garment of rebellion

"With some fine colour." STEEVENS.

TAI. I have.

GRU. Face not me: thou hast braved many men;³ brave not me; I will neither be faced nor braved. I say unto thee,—I bid thy master cut out the gown; but I did not bid him cut it to pieces:⁴ *ergo*, thou liest.

TAI. Why, here is the note of the fashion to testify.

PET. Read it.

GRU. The note lies in his throat, if he say I said so.

TAI. *Imprimis, a loose-bodied gown:*

GRU. Master, if ever I said loose-bodied gown,⁵ sew me in the skirts of it, and beat me to death with a bottom of brown thread: I said, a gown.

PET. Proceed.

TAI. *With a small compass'd cape;*⁶

³ — braved many men;] i. e. made many men *fine*. *Bravery* was the ancient term for elegance of dress. STEEVENS.

⁴ — but I did not bid him cut it to pieces:] This scene appears to have been borrowed from a story of Sir Philip Caultrop, and John Drake, a silly shoemaker of Norwich, which is related in Leigh's *Accidence of Armorie*, and in Camden's *Remaines*. DOUCE.

⁵ — loose-bodied gown,] I think the joke is impair'd, unless we read with the original play already quoted — a *loose body's* gown. It appears, however, that *loose-bodied* gowns were the dress of harlots. Thus, in *The Michaelmas Term*, by Middleton, 1607: "Dost dream of virginity now? remember a *loose-bodied* gown, wench, and let it go." STEEVENS.

See Dodsley's *Old Plays*, Vol. III. p. 479. edit. 1780. REED.

⁶ — a *small compass'd cape*:] A *compass'd cape* is a round cape. To *compass* is to come round. JOHNSON.

Thus, in *Troilus and Cressida*, a circular bow window is called a — *compass'd* window.

Stubbs, in his *Anatomy of Abuse*, 1565, gives a most elaborate description of the gowns of women; and adds, "Some have *capes* reaching down to the middle of their backs, faced with velvet, or

GRU. I confels the cape,

TAI. *With a trunk sleeve; —*

GRU. I confels two sleeves.

TAI. *The sleeves curiously cut.*

PET. Ay, there's the villainy.

GRU. Error i'the bill, fir; error i'the bill. I commanded the sleeves should be cut out, and sewed up again; and that I'll prove upon thee, though thy little finger be armed in a thimble.

TAI. This is true, that I say; and I had thee in place where, thou should'st know it.

GRU. I am for thee straight: take thou the bill,⁷ give me thy mete-yard,⁸ and spare not me.

HOR. God-a-mercy, Grumio! then he shall have no odds.

PET. Well, fir, in brief, the gown is not for me.

GRU. You are i'the right, fir; 'tis for my mistress.

PET. Go, take it up unto thy master's use.

GRU. Villain, not for thy life: Take up my mistress' gown for thy master's use!

PET. Why, fir, what's your conceit in that?

else with some fine wrought taffata, at the least, fringed about, very bravely." STEEVENS.

So, in the Register of Mr. Henflowe, proprietor of the Rose theatre, (a manuscript of which an account has been given in Vol. III: "3 of June 1594. Lent, upon a womanes gowne of villet in grayne, with a velvet cape imbroidered with bugelles, for xxxvi s." MALONE.

⁷ — *take thou the bill,*] The same quibble between the written *bill*, and *bill* the ancient weapon carried by foot-soldiers, is to be met with in *Timon of Athens*. STEEVENS.

⁸ — *thy mete-yard,*] i. e. thy measuring-yard. So, in *The Miseries of Inforc'd Marriage*, 1607:

"Be not a bar between us, or my sword

"Shall *mete* thy grave out." STEEVENS.

GRU. O, fir, the conceit is deeper than you think for :
Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use !
O, fie, fie, fie !

PET. Hortensio, say thou wilt see the tailor
paid : — [*Aside.*
Go take it hence ; be gone, and say no more.

HOR. Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-morrow.
Take no unkindness of his hasty words :
Away, I say ; commend me to thy master.
[*Exit Tailor.*

PET. Well, come, my Kate ; we will unto your
father's,

Ever in these honest mean habiliments ;
Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor :
For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich ;
And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds,
So honour peereth in the meanest habit.

What, is the jay more precious than the lark,
Because his feathers are more beautiful ?
Or is the adder better than the eel,
Because his painted skin contents the eye ?
O, no, good Kate ; neither art thou the worse
For this poor furniture, and mean array.

If thou account'st it shame, lay it on me :
And therefore, frolick ; we will hence forthwith,
To feast and sport us at thy father's house. —

Go, call my men, and let us straight to him ;
And bring our horses unto Long-lane end,
There will we mount, and thither walk on foot. —

Let's see ; I think, 'tis now some seven o'clock,
And well we may come there by dinner time.

KATH. I dare assure you, fir, 'tis almost two ;
And 'twill be supper time, ere you come there.

PET. It shall be seven, ere I go to horse :

344 TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,
You are still crossing it. — Sirs, let't alone:
I will not go to-day; and ere I do,
It shall be what o'clock I say it is.

HOR. Why, so! this gallant will command the fun.

[*Exeunt.*]²

SCENE IV.³

Padua. *Before Baptista's House.*

Enter TRANIO, *and the Pedant dressed like*
VINCENTIO.

TRA. Sir, this is the house; ² Please it you, that I
call?

PED. Ay, what else? and, but I be deceived, ³
Signior Baptista may remember me,
Near twenty years ago, in Genoa, where
We were lodgers at the Pegasus. ⁴

² *Exeunt.*] After this *exeunt*, the characters before whom the
play is supposed to be exhibited, have been hitherto introduced
from the original so often mentioned in the former notes.

³ *Lord.* Who's within there?

⁴ *Enter Servants.*

⁵ *Asleep again!* go take him easily up, and put him in his own
apparel again. But see you wake him not in any case.

⁶ *Serv.* It shall be done, my lord; come help to bear him
hence. ⁷ *[They bear off Sly.* STEEVENS.

⁸ I cannot but think that the direction about the Tinker, who
is always introduced at the end of the acts, together with the
change of the scene, and the proportion of each act to the rest,
make it probable that the fifth act begins here. JOHNSON.

⁹ *Sir, this is the house;*] The old copy has — *Sirs.* Corrected by
Mr. Theobald. MALONE.

¹⁰ — *but I be deceived.*] *But*, in the present instance, signifies,
without, unless. So, in *Antony and Cleopatra*:

"But being charg'd, we will be still by land." STEEVENS.

¹¹ *We were lodgers at the Pegasus.*] This line has in all the editions
hitherto been given to Tranio. But Tranio could with no pro-

TRA. 'Tis well;
And hold your own, in any case, with such
Austerity as 'longeth to a father.

Enter BIONDELLO.

PED. I warrant you: But, sir, here comes your boy:
'Twere good, he were school'd.

TRA. Fear you not him. Sirrah, Biondello,
Now do your duty thoroughly, I advise you;
Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.

BION. Tut! fear not me.

TRA. But hast thou done thy errand to Baptista?

BION. I told him, that your father was at Venice;
And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.

TRA. Thou'rt a tall fellow; hold thee that to drink.
Here comes Baptista:—set your countenance, sir.—

*Enter BAPTISTA and LUCENTIO.*⁵

Signior Baptista, you are happily met:—

Sir, [*To the Pedant.*]

This is the gentleman I told you of;

priety speak this, either in his assumed or real character. Lucentio was too young to know any thing of lodging with his father, twenty years before at Genoa: and Tranio must be as much too young, or very unfit to represent and personate Lucentio. I have ventured to place the line to the Pedant, to whom it must certainly belong, and is a sequel of what he was before saying. THROBOLD.

Shakspeare has taken a sign out of London, and hung it up in Padua:

"Meet me an hour hence at the sign of the *Pegasus* in Cheap-side." *Return from Parnassus*, 1606.

Again, in *The Jealous Lovers*, by Randolph, 1632:

"A pottle of elixir at the *Pegasus*,

"Bravely carous'd, is more restorative."

The *Pegasus* is the arms of the Middle-Temple; and, from that circumstance, became a popular sign. STEVENS.

⁵ *Enter Baptista and Lucentio.*] and [according to the old copy] *Pedant, booted and bareheaded.* RITSON.

I pray you, stand good father to me now,
Give me Bianca for my patrimony.

PED. Soft, son!—

Sir, by your leave; having come to Padua
To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio
Made me acquainted with a weighty cause
Of love between your daughter and himself:
And,—for the good report I hear of you;
And for the love he beareth to your daughter,
And she to him,—to stay him not too long,
I am content, in a good father's care,
'To have him match'd; and,—if you please to like
No worse than I, sir,—upon some agreement,
Me shall you find most ready and most willing⁴
With one consent to have her so bestow'd:
For curious I cannot be with you,⁵
Signior Baptista, of whom I hear so well.

BAP. Sir, pardon me in what I have to say;—
Your plainness, and your shortness, please me well.
Right true it is, your son Lucentio here
Doth love my daughter, and she loveth him,
Or both dissemble deeply their affections:
And, therefore, if you say no more than this,—
That like a father you will deal with him,
And pass my daughter a sufficient dower,⁶

⁴ *Me shall you find most ready and most willing*—] The repeated word *me*, is not in the old copy, but was supplied by Sir T. Hanmer, to complete the measure. STEEVENS.

⁵ *For curious I cannot be with you,*] *Curious* is scrupulous. So, in Holinshed, p. 888: "The emperor obeying more compassion than the reason of things, was not *curious* to condescend to performe so good an office." Again, p. 890: "—and was not *curious* to call him to eat with him at his table." STEEVENS.

⁶ *And pass my daughter a sufficient dower,*] *To pass* is, in this place, synonymous to *affure* or *convey*; as it sometimes occurs in the covenant of a purchase deed, that the granter has power to bargain, sell, &c. "and thereby to *pass* and *convey*" the premises to the grantee. RITSON.

The match is fully made, and all is done:⁸

Your son shall have my daughter with consent.

TRA. I thank you, sir. Where then do you know
best,

We be affied;⁹ and such assurance ta'en,
As shall with either part's agreement stand?

BAP. Not in my house, Lucentio; for, you know,
Pitchers have ears, and I have many servants:
Besides, old Gremio is heark'ning still;
And, happily, we might be interrupted.¹⁰

TRA. Then at my lodging, an it like you, sir:¹¹
There doth my father lie; and there, this night,
We'll pass the business privately and well:
Send for your daughter by your servant here,
My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently.
The worst is this, — that, at so slender warning,
You're like to have a thin and slender pittance.

BAP. It likes me well; — Cambio, hie you home,
And bid Bianca make her ready straight:
And, if you will, tell what hath happened: —

⁸ *The match is fully made, and all is done:*] The word — *fully* (to complete the verse) was inserted by Sir Thomas Hanmer, who might have justified his emendation by a foregoing passage in this comedy:

"Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not *fully* made." STEEVENS.

⁹ *We be affied;* i. e. betrothed. So, in *K. Henry VI. P. II.*:

"For daring to *affy* a mighty lord

"Unto the daughter of a worthless king." STEEVENS.

¹⁰ *And, happily, we might be interrupted.*] Thus the old copy. Mr. Pope reads:

And haply then we might be interrupted. STEEVENS.

Happily, in Shakspeare's time, signified *accidentally*, as well as *fortunately*. It is rather surprising, that an editor should be guilty of so gross a corruption of his author's language, for the sake of modernising his orthography. TYRWHITT.

¹¹ — *an it like you, sir*] The latter word, which is not in the old copy, was added by the editor of the second folio.

Lucentio's father is arriv'd in Padua,
And how she's like to be Lucentio's wife.

LUC. I pray the gods she may, with all my heart!²

TRA. Dally not with the gods, but get thee gone.*

Signior Baptista, shall I lead the way?

Welcome! one mess is like to be your cheer:

Come, sir; we'll better it in Pisa.

BAP. I follow you.

[*Exeunt TRANIO, Pedant, and BAPTISTA.*]

BION. Cambio.—

LUC. What say'st thou, Biondello?

BION. You saw my master wink and laugh upon you?

LUC. Biondello, what of that?

BION. 'Faith nothing; but he has left me here behind, to expound the meaning or moral³ of his signs and tokens.

LUC. I pray thee, moralize them.

BION. Then thus. Baptista is safe, talking with the deceiving father of a deceitful son.

LUC. And what of him?

BION. His daughter is to be brought by you to the supper.

LUC. And then?—

* Luc. *I pray, &c.*] In the old copy this line is by mistake given to Biondello. Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

* *Dally not with the gods, but get thee gone.*] Here the old copy adds—*Enter Peter.* RITSON.

— *get thee gone.*] It seems odd management to make Lucentio go out here for nothing that appears, but that he may return again five lines lower. It would be better, I think, to suppose that he lingers upon the stage, till the rest are gone, in order to talk with Biondello in private. TYRWHITT.

I have availed myself of the regulation proposed by Mr. Tyrwhitt. STEEVENS.

³ — *or moral.*] i. e. the secret purpose. See Vol. VI. p. 317. MALONE.

BION. The old priest at saint Luke's church is at your command at all hours.

LUC. And what of all this?

BION. I cannot tell; except ⁴ they are busied about a counterfeit assurance: Take you assurance of her, *cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum*:⁵ to the church; ⁶—take the priest, clerk, and some sufficient honest witnesses:

If this be not that you look for, I have no more to say;

But, bid Bianca farewell for ever and a day.

[*Going.*

LUC. Hear'st thou, Biondello?

BION. I cannot tarry: I knew a wench married in an afternoon as she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so may you, sir; and so adieu, sir. My master hath appointed me to go to saint Luke's, to bid the priest be ready to come against you come with your appendix. [*Exit.*

LUC. I may, and will, if she be so contented: She will be pleas'd, then wherefore should I doubt? Hap what hap may, I'll roundly go about her; It shall go hard, if Cambio go without her.

[*Exit.*']

⁴ *I cannot tell; except—*] The first folio reads *except*.

MALONE.

Except is the reading of the second folio. *Expect*, says Mr. Malone, means—wait the event. STEEVENS.

⁵ — *cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum*:] It is scarce necessary to observe that these are the words which commonly were put on books where an exclusive right had been granted for printing them. REED.

⁶ — *to the church*;] i. e. go to the church, &c.

TYRWHITT.

⁷ *Exit.*] Here, in the original play, the *Tinker* speaks again, and the scene continues thus:

S C E N E V.

*A publick Road.**Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and HORTENSIO.*

PET. Come on, o'God's name; once more toward
our father's.

"*Slie.* Sim, must they be married oow?

"*Lord.* I, my lord.

"*Enter Ferando, and Kate, and Sander.*

"*Slie.* Look, Sim, the foole is come againe oow.

"*Feran.* Sirha, go fetch our horses soith, and bring them to
the backe-gate presently.

"*San.* I will, sir, I warrant you.

[*Exit Sander.*

"*Feran.* Come, *Kate*: the moone shies cleere to-ight, one-
thiookes.

"*Kate.* The moone; why husband you are deceiv'd; it is the
sun.

"*Feran.* Yet againe? come backe againe; it shal be the moone
ere we come at your fathers.

"*Kate.* Why lie say as you say; it is the moone.

"*Feran.* *Iesus*, save the glorious moone!

"*Kate.* *Iesus*, save the glorious moone!

"*Feran.* I am glad, *Kate*, your stomacke is come dowee;

"I know it well thou knowst it is the sun,

"But I did trie to see if thou wouldst speake,

"And crosse me now as thou hast dooe before:

"And trust me, *Kate*, hadst thou not oamde the moone,

"We had gone backe againe as sure as death.

"But soth, who's this that's comming here?

"*Enter the Duke of Cellus alone.*

"*Duke.* Thus al alone from Cellus am I come,

"And left my priocely court, and noble traine,

"To come to *Athens*, and in this disguise

"To see what course my son *Aurelius* takes.

"But stay: here's some it may be travels thither:

"Good sir, can you direct me the way to *Athens*?

[*Ferando speaks to the old man.*

His speech is very partially and incorrecly quoted by Mr. Pope
in page 332. STEEVENS.

Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the moon!

KATH. The moon! the sun; it is not moonlight now.

PET. I say, it is the moon that shines so bright.

KATH. I know, it is the sun that shines so bright.

PET. Now, by my mother's son, and that's myself,

It shall be moon, or star, or what I list,

Or ere I journey to your father's house:—

Go on, and fetch our horses back again.—

Evermore crost, and crost; nothing but crost!

HOR. Say as he says, or we shall never go.

KATH. Forward, I pray, since we have come so far,

And be it moon, or sun, or what you please:

And if you please to call it a rush candle,

Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

PET. I say, it is the moon.

KATH. I know it is.⁸

PET. Nay, then you lie; it is the blessed sun.⁹

KATH. Then, God be blest'd, it is the blessed sun:—

But sun it is not, when you say it is not;

And the moon changes, even as your mind.

⁸ *I know it is.*] The old copy redundantly reads—I know it is the moon. STEEVENS.

The humour of this scene bears a very striking resemblance to what Mons. Bernier tells us of the Mogul Omrahs, who continually bear in mind the Persian proverb, "If the King saith at noon-day it is night, you are to behold the moon and the stars." *History of the Mogul Empire*, Vol. IV. p. 45. DOUCE.

⁹ — *it is the blessed sun:*] For is the old copy has is. Corrected in the second folio. MALONE.

What you will have it nam'd, even that it is;
And so it shall be so, ² for Katharine.

HOR. Petruchio, go thy ways; the field is won.

PET. Well, forward, forward: thus the bowl
should run,

And not unluckily against the bias.—
But soft; what company is coming here? ³

Enter VINCENTIO, in a travelling dress.

Good-morrow, gentle mistress: Where away?—

[*To VINCENTIO.*

Tell me, sweet Kate, ³ and tell me truly too,

² *And so it shall be so,]* A modern editor very plausibly reads—
And so it shall be, Sir. MALONE.

Read:

And so it shall be still, for Katharine. RITSON.

³ *But soft; what company is coming here?]* The pronoun—*what*, which is wanting in the old copy, I have inserted by the advice of Mr. Ritson, whose punctuation and supplement are countenanced by the corresponding passage in the elder play:

"But soft; who's this that's coming here?"

See p. 350. STEEVENS.

³ *Tell me, sweet Kate,]* In the first sketch of this play, printed in 1607, we find two speeches in this place worth preserving, and seeming to be of the hand of Shakspeare, though the rest of that play is far inferior:

"Fair lovely maiden, young and affable,
"More clear of hue, and far more beautiful
"Than precious sardonyx, or purple rocks
"Of amethysts, or glistening hyacinth—
"—— Sweet Katharine, this lovely woman—
"Kath. Fair lovely lady, bright and crystalline,
"Beauteous and stately as the eye-train'd bird;
"As glorious as the morning walk'd with dew,
"Within whose eyes she takes her dawning beams,
"And golden summer sleeps upon thy cheeks.
"Wrap up thy radiations in some cloud,
"Lest that thy beauty make this stately town
"Unhabitable as the burning zone,
"With sweet reflections of thy lovely face." POPE.

Haft thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman?
 Such war of white and red within her cheeks!
 What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,
 As those two eyes become that heavenly face?—
 Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee:—
 Sweet Kate, embrace her for her beauty's sake.

HOR. 'A will make the man mad, to make a woman⁴ of him.

KATH. Young budding virgin, fair, and fresh,
 and sweet,

Whither away; or where is thy abode?⁵
 Happy the parents of so fair a child;
 Happier the man, whom favourable stars
 Allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow!⁶

An attentive reader will perceive in this speech several words which are employed in some of the legitimate plays of Shakspeare. Such, I believe, are, *pardons*, *hyacinth*, *eye-train'd*, *radiations*, and especially *unhabitable*; our poet generally using *inhabitable* in its room, as in *Richard II.*

"Or any other ground *inhabitable*."

These instances may serve as some slight proofs, that the former piece was not the work of Shakspeare; but I have since observed that Mr. Pope had changed *inhabitable* into *unhabitable*.

STEEVENS.

⁴ —[to make a woman—] The old copy reads—the woman. Corrected by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

⁵ —[where is thy abode?] Instead of *where*, the printer of the old copy inadvertently repeated *whither*. Corrected in the second folio. MALONE.

⁶ *Happy the parents of so fair a child;
 Happier the man, whom favourable stars
 Allot thee for his lovely bed fellow!*] This is borrowed from Golding's Translation of *Ovid's Metamorphosis*, Book IV. edit. 1537, p. 56:

"——right happie folke are they

"By whome thou comest into this world; right happie is
 (I say)

PET. Why, how now, Kate! I hope, thou art not mad:

This is a man, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd;
And not a maiden, as thou say'st he is.

KATH. Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes,
That have been so bedazzled with the sun,
That every thing I look on seemeth green:⁶
Now I perceive, thou art a reverend father;
Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

PET. Do, good old grandfire; and, withal, make known

Which way thou travellest: if along with us,
We shall be joyful of thy company.

VIN. Fair sir,—and you my merry mistress,⁷ —
That with your strange encounter much amaz'd me;

My name is call'd—Vincenzio; my dwelling—Pisa;
And bound I am to Padua; there to visit
A son of mine, which long I have not seen.

“Thy mother and thy sister too (if alive be:) good hap
“That woman had that was thy nurse, and gave thy mouth
 hir pap.

“But far above all other far, more bliss than these is
 thee

“Whome thou thy wife and bed-fellow vouchsafest for to
 bee.”

I should add, however, that Ovid borrowed his ideas from the sixth Book of the *Odyssey*, 154, &c.

Τρισημάκῃς μὲν σοὶ γὰρ πατὴρ καὶ πότνια μήτηρ,

Τρισημάκῃς δ' ἐκασίγυντοι, μάλα τέ δ' ἐσ.

Κείνος δ' αὖ περὶ κρηττάτος ἔσχον ἄλλον,

ὅς κ' ἐξέδρουσι βρισηας οἶκόνδ' ἀγάγῃται. STEEVENS.

⁶ That every thing I look on seemeth green:] Shakspeare's observations on the phenomena of nature are very accurate. When one has sat long in the sunshine, the surrounding objects will often appear tinged with green. The reason is assigned by many of the writers on optics. BLACKSTONE.

⁷ — mistress,] is here used as a trisyllable. STEEVENS.

PET. What is his name?

VIN. Lucentio, gentle fir.

PET. Happily met; the happier for thy son.
And now by law, as well as reverend age,
I may entitle thee—my loving father;
The sister to my wife, this gentlewoman,
Thy son by this hath married: Wonder not;
Nor be not griev'd; she is of good esteem,
Her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth;
Beside, so qualified as may beseem
The spouse of any noble gentleman.
Let me embrace with old Vincentio:

And wander we to see thy honest son,
Who will of thy arrival be full joyous.

VIN. But is this true? or is it else your pleasure,
Like pleasant travellers, to break a jest
Upon the company you overtake?

HOR. I do assure thee, father, so it is.

PET. Come, go along, and see the truth hereof;
For our first merriment hath made thee jealous.

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and VINCENTIO.*]

HOR. Well, Petruchio, this hath put me in heart.
Have to my widow; and if she be froward,
Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be untoward.

[*Exit.*]

A C T V. S C E N E I.

Padua. Before Lucentio's House.

*Enter on one side BIONDELLO, LUCENTIO, and BIANCA;
GREMIO walking on the other side.*

BION. Softly and swiftly, sir; for the priest is ready.

LUC. I fly, Biondello: but they may chance to need thee at home, therefore leave us.

BION. Nay, faith, I'll see the church o' your back, and then come back to my master as soon as I can.*

[*Exeunt LUCENTIO, BIANCA, and BIONDELLO.*]

GRE. I marvel, Cambio comes not all this while.

Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, VINCENTIO, and Attendants.

PET. Sir, here's the door, this is Lucentio's house, My father's bears more toward the marketplace; Thither must I, and here I leave you, sir.

VIN. You shall not choose but drink before you go; I think, I shall command your welcome here, And, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward. [*Knocks.*]

* ——— and then come back to my master as soon as I can.] The editions all agree in reading *mistress*; but what mistress was Biondello to come back to? he must certainly mean — "Nay, faith, sir, I must see you in the church; and then for fear I should be wanted, I'll run back to wait on Tranio, who at present personates you, and whom therefore I at present acknowledge for my master."

THEOBALD.

Probably an M was only written in the MS. See p. 245.

The same mistake has happened again in this scene: "Didst thou never see thy *mistress*' father, Vincentio?" The present emendation was made by Mr. Theobald, who observes rightly, that by "master" Biondello means his pretended master, Tranio. MALONE.

GRE. They're busy within, you were best knock louder.

Enter Pedant above, at a window.

PED. What's he, that knocks as he would beat down the gate?

VIN. Is signior Lucentio within, sir?

PED. He's within, sir, but not to be spoken withal.

VIN. What if a man bring him a hundred pound or two, to make merry withal.

PED. Keep your hundred pounds to yourself; he shall need none, so long as I live.

PET. Nay, I told you, your son was belov'd in Padua.—Do you hear, sir?—to leave frivolous circumstances,—I pray you, tell signior Lucentio, that his father is come from Pisa, and is here at the door to speak with him.

PED. Thou liest; his father is come from Pisa,^a and here looking out at the window.

VIN. Art thou his father?

PED. Ay, sir; so his mother says, if I may believe her.

PET. Why, how now, gentleman! [*To VINCENT.*] why, this is flat knavery, to take upon you another man's name.

^a —from Pisa,] The reading of the old copies is *from Padua*, which is certainly wrong. The editors have made it *to Padua*; but it should rather be *from Pisa*. Both parties agree that Lucentio's father is *come from Pisa*, as indeed they necessarily must; the point in dispute is, whether he be *at the door*, or *looking out of the window*. TYRWHITT.

I suspect we should read —from *Mantua*, from whence the Pedant himself came, and which he would naturally name, supposing he forgot, as might well happen, that the real Vincentio was of Pisa. In *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, *Padua* and *Verona* occur in two different scenes, instead of *Milan*. MALONE.

PED. Lay hands on the villain; I believe, 'a means to cozen somebody in this city under my countenance.

Re-enter BIONDELLO.

BION. I have seen them in the church together; God send 'em good shipping!—But who is here? mine old master, Vincentio? now we are undone and brought to nothing.

VIN. Come hither, crack-hemp.

[Seeing BIONDELLO.]

BION. I hope, I may choose, sir.

VIN. Come hither, you rogue; What, have you forgot me?

BION. Forgot you? no, sir: I could not forget you, for I never saw you before in all my life.

VIN. What, you notorious villain, didst thou never see thy master's father, Vincentio?*

BION. What, my old, worshipful old master? yes, marry, sir; see where he looks out of the window.

VIN. Is't so, indeed? *[Beats BIONDELLO.]*

BION. Help, help, help! here's a madman will murder me. *[Exit.]*

PED. Help, son! help, signior Baptista!

[Exit, from the window.]

PET. Pr'ythee, Kate, let's stand aside, and see the end of this controversy. *[They retire.]*

* — thy master's father, Vincentio? Old copy—thy mistress's father. Corrected by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

Re-enter Pedant below; BAPTISTA, TRANIO, and Servants.

TRA. Sir, what are you, that offer to beat my servant?

VIN. What am I, sir? nay, what are you, sir?—O immortal gods! O fine villain! A silken doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a copatain hat!³—O, I am undone! I am undone! while I play the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university.

TRA. How now! what's the matter?

BAP. What, is the man lunatick?

TRA. Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman: Why, sir, what concerns it you, if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father, I am able to maintain it.

VIN. Thy father? O, villain! he is a sailmaker in Bergamo.⁴

³ — a *copatain-hat*?] is, I believe, a hat with a conical crown, such as was anciently worn by well-dressed men. JOHNSON.

This kind of hat is twice mentioned by Gascoigne. See *Herbes*, p. 154:

"A *copatain* hat made on a Flemish block."

And again, in his *Epilogue*, p. 216:

"With high *cop* hats, and feathers flaunt a flaunt."

In Stubbs's *Anatomic of Abscesses*, printed 1595, there is an entire chapter "on the hattes of England," beginning thus:

"Sometimes they use them sharpe on the crowne, pearking up like the speare or shaft of a steeple, standing a quarter of a yard above the crowne of their heads, &c. STEVENS."

⁴ — a *sailmaker in Bergamo*.] Chapman has a parallel passage in his *Widow's Tears*, a comedy, 1612:

"— he draws the thread of his descent from Leda's distaff, when 'tis well known his grandfire eried coney-skins in Sparta."

STEVENS.

BAP. You, mistake, sir; you mistake, sir: Pray, what do you think is his name?

VIN. His name? as if I knew not his name: I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is—Tranio.

PED. Away, away, mad ass! his name is Lucentio; and he is mine only son, and heir to the lands of me signior Vincentio.

VIN. Lucentio! O, he hath murdered his master!—I lay hold on him, I charge you, in the duke's name:—O, my son, my son!—tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

TRA. Call forth an officer: ⁵ [*Enter one with an Officer.*] carry this mad knave to the gaol:—I rather Baptista, I charge you, see, that he be forthcoming.

VIN. Carry me to, the gaol!

GRE. Stay, officer; he shall not go to prison.

BAP. Talk not, signior Gremio; I say, he shall go to prison.

GRE. Take heed, signior Baptista, lest you be coney-catch'd⁶ in this business; I dare swear, this is the right Vincentio.

⁵ *Call forth an officer: &c.*] Here, in the original play, the *Tinker* speaks again:

"*Slie.* I say weele have no sending to prison.

"*Lord.* My lord, this is but the play; they're but in jest.

"*Slie.* I tell thee *Sim*, weele have no sending

"To prison, that's flat: why *Sim*, am not I don *Christo Vari*?

"Therefore, I say, they shall not goe to prison.

"*Lord.* No more they shall not, my lord:

"They be runne away.

"*Slie.* Are they run away, *Sim*? that's well:

"Then gis some more drinke, and let them play againe.

"*Lord.* Here, my lord." STEEVENS.

⁶ — coney-catch'd —] i. e. deceived, cheated. STEEVENS.

GRE. Nay, I dare not swear it.

TRA. Then thou wert best say, that I am not Lucentio.

GRE. Yes, I know thee to be signior Lucentio.

BAP. Away with the dotard; to the gaol with him.

VIN. Thus strangers may be haled and abus'd:—
O monstrous villain!

Re-enter BIONDELLO, with LUCENTIO and BIANCA.

BION. O, we are spoiled, and—Yonder he is; deny him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

LUC. Pardon, sweet father. [*Kneeling.*]

VIN. Lives my sweetest son?

[*BIONDELLO, TRANIO, and Pedant run out.*]

BIAN. Pardon, dear father. [*Kneeling.*]

BAP. How hast thou offended?—

Where is Lucentio?

LUC. Here's Lucentio,

Right son unto the right Vincentio;
That have by marriage made thy daughter mine,
While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eyne.¹

¹ — run out.] The old copy says—*as fast as may be.* RITSON.

² While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eyne.] The modern editors read *supposes*, but wrongly. This is a plain allusion to Gascoigne's comedy entitled *Supposes*, from which several of the incidents in this play are borrowed. TYRWHITT.

This is highly probable; but yet *supposes* is a word often used in its common sense, which, on the present occasion is sufficiently commodious. So, in Greene's *Forewell to Folly*, 1617: "— with Plato to build a commonwealth on *supposes*." Shakspeare uses the word in *Troilus and Cressida*: "That we come short of our *suppose* so far," &c. It appears likewise from the Preface to Greene's *Metamorphosis*, that *supposes* was a game of some kind. "After *supposes*, and such ordinary sports, were past, they fell to

GRE. Here's packing,¹ with a witness, to deceive us all!

VIN. Where is that damned villain, Tranio, That fac'd and brav'd me in this matter so?

BAP. Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

BIAN. Cambio is chang'd into Lucentio.

LUC. Love wrought these miracles. Bianca's love Made me exchange my state with Tranio, While he did bear my countenance in the town; And happily I have arriv'd at last Unto the wished haven of my bliss:— What Tranio did, myself enforc'd him to; Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake.

VIN. I'll slit the villain's nose, that would have sent me to the gaol.

BAP. But do you hear sir? [To LUCENTIO.] Have you married my daughter without asking my good-will?

prattle," &c. Again, in Drayton's Epistle from *K. John* to *Maudslayi*:

"And tells me those are shadows and *supposers*."

To blear the eye, was an ancient phrase signifying to deceive. So, in Chaucer's *Manciple's Tale*, v. 17202, Mr. Tyrwhitt's edit:

"For all thy waiting, *bleared* is this eye."

Again, in the 10th pageant of *The Coventry Plays*, in the British Museum, MS. Cott. Vesp. D. VIII:

"Shuld I now in age begynne to dote,

"If I ehyde, she wolde clowte my cote,

"*Blere* mine ey, and pyke out a mote." STEEVENS.

The ingenious editor's explanation of *blear the eye*, is strongly supported by Milton, *Comus*, v. 155:

"Spells ———"

"Of power to *cheat the eye* with *blear* illusion."

HOLT WHITE.

¹ *Here's packing*,] i. e. plotting, underhand contrivance. So, in *K. Lear*:

"Snuffs and *packings* of the dukes." STEEVENS.

VIN. Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to:
But I will in, to be reveng'd for this villainy. [*Exit.*]

BAP. And I, to sound the depth of this knavery.
[*Exit.*]

LUC. Look not pale, Bianca; thy father will not
frown. [*Exeunt LUCENTIO and BIANCA.*]

GRE. My cake is dough:⁹ But I'll in among the
rest;

Out of hope of all,—but my share of the feast. [*Exit.*]

PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA advance.

KATH. Husband, let's follow, to see the end of
this ado.

PET. First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

KATH. What, in the midst of the street?

PET. What, art thou asham'd of me?

KATH. No, sir; God forbid: but asham'd to kiss.

PET. Why, then let's home again:—Come, firrah,
let's away.

KATH. Nay, I will give thee a kiss: now pray thee,
love, stay.

PET. Is not this well?—Come, my sweet Kate;
Better once than never, for never too late.

[*Exeunt.*]

⁹ *My cake is dough*] This is a proverbial expression which
also occurs in the old interlude of *Tom Tyler and his Wife*:

"Alas poor Tom, his cake is dough."

Again, in *The Case is Altered*, 1609:

"Steward, your cake is dough, as well as mine." STEEVENS.

It was generally used when any project miscarried. MALONE.

Rather when any disappointment was sustained, contrary to every
appearance or expectation. Howell in one of his letters, men-
tioning the birth of Lewis the Fourteenth, says—"The Queen is
delivered of a Dauphin, the wonderfulest thing of this kind that
any story can parallel, for this is the three-and-twentieth year since
she was married, and hath continued childless all this while. So
that now Monsieur's cake is dough." REED.

S C E N E II.

A Room in Lucentio's House.

A Banquet set out. Enter BAPTISTA, VINCENTIO, GREMIO, the Pedant, LUCENTIO, BIANCA, PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and Widow. TRANIO, BIONDELLO, GRUMIO, and others, attending.

LUC. At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:
And time it is, when raging war is done,⁹
To smile at 'scapes and perils over-blown.—
My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome,
While I with self-same kindness welcome thine:—
Brother Petruchio,—sister Katharina,—
And thou, Hortensio, with thy loving widow,—
Feast with the best, and welcome to my house;
My banquet^{*} is to close our stomachs up,
After our great good cheer: Pray you, sit down;
For now we sit to chat, as well as eat.

[*They sit at table.*]

PET. Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat!

BAP. Padua affords this kindness, son Petruchio.

PET. Padua affords nothing but what is kind.

⁹ ———when raging war is done,] This is Mr. Rowe's emendation. The old copy has—when raging war is come, which cannot be right. Perhaps the author wrote—when raging war is calm formerly spelt *calme*. So, in *Othello*:

"If after every tempest come such calms—."

The word "overblown," in the next line, adds some little support to this conjecture MALONE.

Mr. Rowe's conjecture is justified by a passage in *Othello*:

"News, lords! our wars are done." STEEVENS.

^{*} My banquet—] A banquet, or (as it is called in some of our old books) an *afterpass*, was a slight repast, like our modern desert, consisting of cakes, sweetmeats, and fruit. See note on *Romeo and Juliet*, Act I. sc. v. STEEVENS.

HOR. For both our sakes, I would that word were true.

PET. Now, for my life, Hortensio fears his widow.³

WID. Then never trust me if I be afraid.

PET. You are sensible, and yet you miss my sense;⁴
I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you.

WID. He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round.

PET. Roundly replied.

KATH. Mistress, how mean you that?

WID. Thus I conceive by him.

PET. Conceives by me!—How likes Hortensio that?

HOR. My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.

PET. Very well mended: Kifs him for that, good widow.

KATH. He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round:—

I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.

WID. Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,
Measures my husband's sorrow by his woe:⁵
And now you know my meaning.

KATH. A very mean meaning.

WID. Right, I mean you.

³ — fears his widow.] To fear, as has been already observed, meant in our author's time both to dread, and to intimidate. The widow understands the word in the latter sense; and Petruchio tells her, he used it in the former. MALONE.

⁴ You are sensible, and yet you miss my sense;] The old copy redundantly reads — You are very sensible. STEEVENS.

⁵ — shrew, — woe:] As this was meant for a rhyming couplet, it should be observed that anciently the word — shrew was pronounced as if it had been written — throw. See the *finale* of the play, p. 377. STEEVENS.

KATH. And I am mean; indeed, respecting you.

PET. To her, Kate!

HOR. To her, widow!

PET. A hundred marks, my Kate does put her down.

HOR. That's my office.³

PET. Spoke like an officer:—Ha' to thee, lad.⁴

[*Drinks to HORTENSIO.*]

BAP. How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks?

GRE. Believe me, sir, they butt together well.

BIAN. Head, and butt? an hasty-witted body

Would say, your head and butt were head and horn.

VIN. Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd you?

BIAN. Ay, but not frighted me; therefore I'll sleep again.

PET. Nay, that you shall not; since you have begun,

Have at you for a bitter jest or two.⁵

³ ——— *put her down.*

[*That's my office.*] This passage will be best explained by another, in *Much ado about Nothing*: "Lady, you have put him down. — So I would not he should do me, my lord, lest I should prove the mother of fools." STEEVENS.

⁴ ——— *Ha' to thee, lad.*] The old copy has — *to thee*. Corrected by the editor of the second folio. MALONE.

⁵ *Have at you for a bitter jest or two.*] The old copy reads — *a better jest*. The emendation, (of the propriety of which there cannot, I conceive, be the smallest doubt,) is one of the very few corrections of any value made by Mr. Capell. So before in the present play:

"Hiding his *bitter jests* in blurt behaviour."

Again, in *Love's Labour's Lost*:

"Too *bitter* is thy *jest*."

Again, in *Balcan's Epigrams*, 4598:

"He shut up the matter with this *bitter jest*." MALONE.

I have received this emendation; and yet "a better jest" may mean no more than a good one. Shakspeare often uses the comparative for the positive degree. So, in *K. Lear*:

"—— her smiles and tears

"Were like a better day."

BIAN. Am I your bird? I mean to shift my bush,
And then pursue me as you draw your bow:—
You are welcome all.

[*Exeunt* BIANCA, KATHARINA, and Widow.

PET. She hath prevented me.—Here, signior
Tranio,

This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not;
Therefore, a health to all that shot and miss'd.

TRA. O, sir, Lucentio slipp'd me like his grey-
hound,

Which runs himself, and catches for his master.

PET. A good swift⁶ simile, but something currish.

TRA. 'Tis well, sir, that you hunted for yourself;

'Tis thought, your deer does hold you at a bay.

BAP. O ho, Petruchio, Tranio hits you now.

LUC. I thank thee for that gird, good Tranio.⁷

HOR. Confess, confess; hath he not hit you here?

PET. 'A has a little gall'd me, I confess;

And, as the jest did glance away from me,

'Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright.⁸

BAP. Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio,
I think thou hast the veriest shrew of all.

Again, in *Macbeth*:

"—go not my horse the better——."

i. e. if he does not go well. STEEVENS.

⁶ — *swift* —] besides the original sense of *speedy in motion*, signified witty, quick-witted. So, in *As you Like it*, the Duke says of the Clown, "He is very *swift* and sententious." *Quick* is now used in almost the same sense as *nimble* was in the age after that of our author. Heylin says of Hales, that he had known *Land for a nimble disputant*. JOHNSON.

⁷ — *that gird, good Tranio.*] A *gird* is a *sarcasm*, a *gibe*. So, in Stephen Gosson's *School of Abuse*, 1579: "Curculio may chatter till his heart ake, ere any be offended with his *girdes*."

STEEVENS.

⁸ — *you two outright.*] Old copy—you too. Corrected by Mr. Rowe. MALONE.

PET. Well, I say—no: and therefore, for assurance,⁹

Let's each one send unto his wife;*

* ———for assurance,] Instead of for the original copy has *for*.
Corrected by the editor of the second folio. — MALONE.

* *Let's each one send unto his wife;*] Thus in the original play:

" *Feran*. Come, gentlemen; now that supper's done,

" How shall we spend the time til we go to bed?

" *Aurel*. Faith, if you wil, in trial of our wives,

" Who will come soonest at their husbands cal.

" *Pol*. Nay, then, *Ferrando*, he must needs fit out;

" For he may cal, I thiuke, til he be weary,

" Before his wife wil come before the list.

" *Feran*. 'Tis wel for you that have such gentle wives:

" Yet in this trial wil I not fit out;

" It may be *Kate* wil come as soone as I do fend.

" *Aurel*. My wife comes soonest, for a hundred pound.

" *Pol*. I take it. He lay as much to yours,

" That my wife comes as soone as I do leud.

" *Aurel*. How now, *Ferrando*! you dare not lay, belike.

" *Feran*. Why true, I dare not lay indeed.

" But how? So little mony on so fure a thing.

" A hundred pound! Why I have laid as much

" Upon my dog in running at a deer.

" She shall not come so far for such a trifle:

" But wil you lay five hundred markes with me?

" And whose wife, soonest comes, when he doth cal,

" And shewes he-selfe most loving unto him,

" Let him enjoy the wager I have laid:

" Now what say you? Dare you adventure thus?

" *Pol*. I, were it a thousand pounds, I durst presume

" On my wife's love: and I wil lay with thee.

Enter Alfousso.

" *Alfon*. How now sons! What in confereuce so hard?

" May I, without offence, know where about?

" *Aurel*. Faith, father, a waighty cause, about our wives:

" Five hundred markes already we have laid;

" And he whose wife doth shew most love to him,

" He must enjoy the wager to himselfe.

" *Alfon*. Why then *Ferrando*, he is sure to lose it:

" I promise thee son, thy wife wil hardly come;

" And therefore I would not with thee lay so much.

" *Feran*. Tush, father; were it two times more,

And he, whose wife is most obedient
To come at first when he doth send for her,
Shall win the wager which we will propose.

" I durst adventure oo my lovely *Kate* :—

" But if I lose. He pay, and so shal you.

" *Aurel.* Upon mine honor, if I lose, He pay.

" *Pol.* And so wil I upon my faith, I vow.

" *Feran.* Then sit we dowee, and let us send for them.

" *Alfon.* I promise thee *Ferando*, I am afraid thou wilt lose.

" *Aurel.* He send for my wife first : *Valeria*,

" Go bid' your mistress come to me.

" *Pol.* I wil, my lord.

[*Exit Valeria.*

" *Aurel.* Now for my hundred pound :—

" Would aoy lay ten hundred more with me,

" I know I should obtain it by her love.

" *Feran.* I pray God, you have laid too much already.

" *Aurel.* Trust me, *Ferando*, I am sure you have ;

" For you, I dare presume, have lost it al.

" *Enter Valeria againe.*

" Now, sirs, what saies your mistress ?

" *Pol.* She is something busie, but sheele come noone.

" *Feran.* Why so : did I not tel you this before ?

" She was busie, and cannot come.

" *Aurel.* I pray God, your wife send you so good an answer :

" She may be busie, yet she laies sheele come.

" *Feran.* Wel, wel : *Polidor*, send you for your wife.

" *Pol.* Agreed. Boy, desire your mistress to come hither.

" *Boy.* I wil, sir.

[*Exit.*

" *Feran.* I, so, so ; he desires hir to come.

" *Alfon.* *Polidor*, I dare presume for thee,

" I thinke thy wife wil not denie to come ;

" And I do marvel much, *Aurelius*,

" That your wife came not when you sent for her.

" *Enter the Boy againe.*

" *Pol.* Now, wher's your mistress ?

" *Boy.* She bade me tell you that shee will not come :

" And you have any businesse, you must come to her.

" *Feran.* O monstrous intolerable presumption,

" Worse then a blasphemous flur, or snow at midsummer,

" Earthquakes, or any thing unseasonable !

" She will not come ; but he must come to hir.

" *Pol.* Wel, sir, I pray you, let's heare what

" Answere your wife will make.

" *Feran.* Sirs, command your mistress to come

" To me presently.

[*Exit Sander.*

HOR. Content; — What is the wager?

LUC.

Twenty crowns.

" *Aurel.* I thinke, my wife, for all she did not come,

" Will prove most kind; for now I have no feare,

" For I am sure *Ferrando's* wife, she will not come.

" *Feran.* The more's the pity; then I must lose.

" *Enter Kate and Sander.*

" But I have won, for see where *Kate* doth come.

" *Kate.* Sweete husband, did you send for me?

" *Feran.* I did, my love, I sent for thee to come:

" Come hither, *Kate*: What's that upon thy head?

" *Kate.* Nothing, husband, but my cap, I thinke.

" *Feran.* Pul it off and tread it under thy feet;

" 'Tis foolish; I will not have thee weare it.

[*She takes off her cap, and treads on it.*]

" *Pol.* Oh wonderful metamorphosis!

" *Aurel.* This is a wonder, almost past beleefe.

" *Feran.* This is a token of her true love to me;

" And yet Ile try her further you shall see.

" Come hither, *Kate*: Where are thy sisters?

" *Kate.* They be sitting in the bridal chamber.

" *Feran.* Fetch them hither, and if they will not come,

" Bring them perforce, and make them come with thee.

" *Kate.* I will.

" *Alfon.* I promise thee, *Ferrando*, I would have sworne

" Thy wife would ne'er have done so much for thee.

" *Feran.* But you shall see she wil do more then this;

" For see where she brings her sisters forth by force.

" *Enter Kate, thrusting Phylema and Emelia before her, and makes them come unto their husbands call.*

" *Kate.* See husband, I have brought them both.

" *Feran.* 'Tis wel done, *Kate*.

" *Emel.* I sure; and like a loving peeee, you're worthy

" To have great praise for this attempt.

" *Phyle.* I, for making a foole of herselfe and us.

" *Aurel.* Beshrew thee, *Phylema*, thou hast

" Lost me a hundred pound to night;

" For I did lay that thou wouldst first have come.

" *Pol.* But, thou, *Emelia*, hast lost me a great deal more.

" *Emel.* You might have kept it better then:

" Who bade you lay?

" *Feran.* Now, lovely *Kate*, before their husbands here,

" I prethee tel unto these head-strong women

" What dewy wives do owe unto their husbands.

PET. Twenty crowns!

I'll venture so much on my hawk, or hound,
But twenty times so much upon my wife.

" *Kate*. Then, you that live thus by your pampered wills,
" Now list to me, and make what I shall say.—
" Th' eternal power, that with his only breath,
" Shall cause this end, and this beginning frame,
" Not in time, nor before time, but with time confus'd,
" For al the 'coursie of yeares, of ages, mouths,
" Of seasons temperate, of dayes and houres,
" Are sund and flapt by measure of his hand.
" The first world was a forme without a forme,
" A heape confus'd, a mixture al deform'd,
" A gulfe of gulfes, a body hostileffe,
" Where al the elements were orderlesse,
" Before the great commander of the world,
" The king of kinges, the glorious God of heaven,
" Who to his daies did frame his heavenly worke,
" And made al things to stand in perfect course.
" Then to his image he did make a man,
" Olde *Adam*, and from his side asleepe,
" A rib was taken; of which the Lord did make
" The woe of man, so tenu'd by *Adam* then,
" Woman, for that by her came sinne to us,
" And for her sinne was *Adam* doo'd to die.
" As *Sara* to her husband, so should we
" Obey them, love them, keepe and nourish them,
" If they by any meanes do want our helpe:
" Laying our hands under their feet to tread,
" If that by that we might procure their ease;
" And, for a president, the first begiu,
" And lay my hand under my husband's feet."

[*She laies her hand under her husband's feet.*

" *Ferran*. Inough sweet; the wager thou hast won;
" And they, I am sure, cannot deny the fauoe.
" *Alfon*. I, *Ferrando*, the wager thou hast won;
" And for to shew thee how I am pleas'd in this,
" A hundred pounds I freely give thee more,
" Another dowry for another daughter,
" For she is not the same she was before.
" *Ferran*. Thanks, sweet father; gentlemen, good night;
" For *Kate* and I will leave you for to-night:

B b 2

LUC. A hundred then.

HOR. Content.

PET. A match; 'tis done.

HOR. Who shall begin?

LUC. That will I. Go,

Biondello, bid your mistress come to me.

BION. I go. [Exit.

BAP. Son, I will be your half, Bianca comes.

LUC. I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all myself.

Re-enter BIONDELLO.

How now! what news?

BION. Sir, my mistress sends you word
That she is busy, and she cannot come.

" 'Tis Kate and I am wed, and you are sped:

" And so farewell, for we will to our bed.

[Exit Ferando, Kate, and Sander.

" Alfen. Now Aurelius, what say you to this?

" Aurel. Believe me, father I rejoyce to see

" Ferando and his wife so lovingly agree.

[Exit Aurelius and Phylema, and Alfonso and Valeria.

" Emel. How now, Polidor? in a dumper? What faist thou
man?

" Pol. I say, thou art a shrew.

" Emel. That's better than a sheepe.

" Pol. Well, since 'tis done, come, let's goe.

[Exit Polidor and Emilia.

" Then enter two, bearing of Slie in his own apparell againe, and
leaves him where they found him, and then goes out: then enters the
Tapster.

" Tapster. Now that the darkefome night is overpast,

" And dawning day appears in christall Skie,

" Now must I haste abroad: but soft! who's this?

" What Slie? o wondrous! hath he laine beere all night?

" He wake him; I thinke hee's starved by this,

" But that his belly was so stuffed with ale;

" What now Slie! awake for shame."—&c. STERVEN.

PET. How! she is busy, and she cannot come!
Is that an answer?

GRE. Ay, and a kind one too:
Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse.

PET. I hope, better.

HOR. Sirrah, Biondello, go, and entreat my wife
To come to me forthwith. [*Exit* BIONDELLO.]

PET. O, ho! entreat her!
Nay, then she needs must come.

HOR. I am afraid, sir,
Do what you can, yours will not be entreated.

Re-enter BIONDELLO.

Now, where's my wife?

BION. She says, you have some goodly jest in hand;
She will not come; she bids you come to her.

PET. Worse and worse; she will not come! O vile,
Intolerable, not to be endur'd!

Sirrah, Grumio, go to your mistress;
Say, I command her come to me. [*Exit* GRUMIO.]

HOR. I know her answer.

PET. What?

HOR. She will not come.³

PET. The fouler fortune mine, and there an end.

Enter KATHARINA.

BAP. Now, by my holidame, here comes Katharina!

KATH. What is your will, sir, that you send for me?

³ *She will not come.*] I have added the word—*come*, to complete the measure, which was here defective; as indeed it is, almost irremediably, in several parts of the present scene. STEEVENS.

374 TAMING OF THE SHREW.

PET. Where is your sister, and Hortensio's wife?

KATH. They sit conferring by the parlour fire.

PET. Go, fetch them hither; if they deny to come,

Swinge me them soundly forth unto their husbands :
Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.

[Exit KATHARINA.

LUC. Here is a wonder, if you talk of a wonder.

HOR. And so it is; I wonder, what it bodes.

PET. Marry, peace it bodes, and love, and quiet
life,

And awful rule, and right supremacy;

And, to be short, what not, that's sweet and happy.

BAP. Now fair befall thee, good Petruchio!

The wager thou hast won; and I will add
Unto their losses twenty thousand crowns;
Another dowry to another daughter,
For she is chang'd, as she had never been.

PET. Nay, I will win my wager better yet;
And show more sign of her obedience,
Her new-built virtue and obedience.

Re-enter KATHARINA, with BIANCA and Widow.

See, where she comes; and brings your froward
wives

As prisoners to her womanly persuasion.—

Katharine, that cap of yours becomes you not;

Off with that bauble, throw it under foot.

[KATHARINA pulls off her cap, and throws it
down.

WID. Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,
Till I be brought to such a silly pass!

BIAN. Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?

LUC. I would, your duty were as foolish too :
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,
Hath cost me an hundred crowns * since supper-
time.

BIAN. The more fool you, for laying on my duty.

PET. Katharine, I charge thee, tell these head-
strong women

What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.

WID. Come, come, you're mocking; we will
have no telling.

PET. Come on, I say; and first begin with her.

WID. She shall not.

PET. I say, she shall;—and first begin with her.

KATH. Fie, fie! unknit that threat'ning unkind
brow;

And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,
To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor :
It blots thy beauty, as frosts bite the meads ;³
Confounds thy fame, as whirlwinds shake fair buds ;
And in no sense is meet, or amiable.

A woman mov'd, is like a fountain troubled,
Muddy, ill-seeming, thick, bereft of beauty;
And, while it is so, none so dry or thirsty
Will deign to sip, or touch one drop of it.
Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,
And for thy maintenance: commits his body

* —an hundred crowns—] Old copy—*five* hundred. Cor-
rected by Mr. Pope. In the MS. from which our author's plays
were printed, probably numbers were always expressed in figures,
which has been the occasion of many mistakes in the early editions.

MALONE.

³ —as frosts bite the meads;] The old copy reads—*frosts do*
bite. The correction was made by the editor of the second folio.

MALONE.

To painful labour, both by sea and land;
 To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,
 While thou liest warm at home, secure and safe;
 And craves no other tribute at thy hands,
 But love, fair looks, and true obedience;—
 Too little payment for so great a debt,
 Such duty as the subject owes the prince;
 Even such, a woman oweth to her husband:
 And, when she's froward, peevish, fullen, sour,
 And, not obedient to his honest will,
 What is she, but a foul contending rebel,
 And graceless traitor to her loving lord?—
 I am asham'd, that women are so simple
 To offer war where they should kneel for peace;
 Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,
 When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.
 Why are our bodies soft, and weak, and smooth,
 Unapt to toil and trouble in the world;
 But that our soft conditions,³ and our hearts,
 Should well agree with our external parts?
 Come, come, you froward and unable worms!
 My mind hath been as big as one of yours,
 My heart as great; my reason, haply, more,
 To bandy word for word, and frown for frown;
 But now, I see our lances are but straws;
 Our strength as weak, our weakness past compare,—
 That seeming to be most, which we least are.⁴
 Then vail your stomachs,⁵ for it is no boot;
 And place your hands below your husband's foot:

³ — our soft conditions,] The gentle qualities of our minds.
 MALONE.

See, in *King Henry V.*: "my tongue is rough coz, and my condition is not smooth." STEEVENS.

⁴ — which we least are.] The old copy erroneously prolongs this line by reading—which we indeed least are. STEEVENS.

⁵ Then vail your stomachs,] i. e. abate your pride, your spirit.

In token of which duty, if he please,
My hand is ready, may it do him ease.

PET. Why, there's a wench! — Come on, and
kiss me, Kate.

LUC. Well, go thy ways, old lad; for thou shalt
ha't.

VIN. 'Tis a good hearing, when children are
toward.

LUC. But a harsh hearing, when women are froward.

PET. Come, Kate, we'll to-bed: —

We three are married, but you two are sped.⁶

'Twas I won the wager, though you hit the white;⁷

[To LUCENTIO.

And, being a winner, God give you good night!

[*Exeunt* PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA.

HOR. Now go thy ways, thou hast tam'd a curst
shrew.

LUC. 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she will be
tam'd so. [*Exeunt.*⁸

So, in *King Henry IV.* P. I:

"Gan veil his stomach, and did grace the shame

"Of those that turn'd their backs." STEEVENS.

⁶ — you two are sped.] i. e. the fate of you both is decided;
for you have wives who exhibit early proof of disobedience.

STEEVENS.

⁷ — though you hit the white;] To hit the white is a phrase
borrowed from archery: the mark was commonly white. Here it
alludes to the name *Bianca*, or white. JOHNSON.

So, in Feltham's *Answer* to Ben Jonson's *Ode* at the end of his
New Inn:

"As oft you've wanted brains

"And art to strike the white,

"As you have levell'd right."

Again, in Sir Aston Cokyn's *Poems*, 1658:

"And as an expert archer hits the white." MALONE.

⁸ *Exeunt.*] At the conclusion of this piece, Mr. Pope continued
his insertions from the old play, as follows:

"Enter two servants, bearing Sly in his own apparel, and leaving him on the stage. Then enter a Tapster.

"Sly. [awaking.] Sim, give's some more wine. — What, all the players gone? — Am I not a lord?

"Tap. A lord, with a murrain?—Come, art thou drunk still?

"Sly. Who's this? Tapster! — Oh, I have had the bravest dream that ever thou heard'st in all thy life.

"Tap. Yea, marry, but thou hadst best get thee home, for your wife will curse you for dreaming here all night.

"Sly. Will she? I know how to tame a shrew. I dreamt upon it all this night, and thou hast wak'd me out of the best dream that ever I had. But I'll to my wife, and tame her too, it the anger me."

These passages, which have been hitherto printed as part of the work of Shakspeare, I have sunk into the notes, that they may be preserved, as they seem to be necessary to the integrity of the piece, though they really compose no part of it, being not published in the folio 1623. Mr. Pope, however, has quoted them with a degree of inaccuracy which would have deserved censure, had they been of greater consequence than they are. The players delivered down this comedy, among the rest, as one of Shakspeare's own; and its intrinsic merit bears sufficient evidence to the propriety of their decision.

May I add a few reasons why I neither believe the former comedy of *The Taming the Shrew*, 1607, nor the old play of *King John*, in two Parts, to have been the work of Shakspeare? He generally followed every novel or history from whence he took his plots, as closely as he could; and is so often indebted to these originals for his very thoughts and expressions, that we may fairly pronounce him not to have been above borrowing, to spare himself the labour of invention. It is therefore probable, that both these plays, (like that of *Henry V.* in which Oldcastle is introduced) were the unsuccessful performances of contemporary players. Shakspeare saw they were meanly written, and yet that their plans were such as would furnish incidents for a better dramatist. He therefore might lazily adopt the order of their scenes, still writing the dialogue anew, and inserting little more from either piece, than a few lines which he might think worth preserving, or was too much in haste to alter. It is no uncommon thing in the literary world, to see the track of others followed by those who would never have given themselves the trouble to mark out one of their own. STEEVENS.

It is almost unnecessary to vindicate Shakspeare from being the author of the old *Taming of a Shrew*. Mr. Pope in consequence of his being very superficially acquainted with the phraseology of our early writers, first ascribed it to him, and on his authority this

strange opinion obtained credit for half a century. He might with just as much propriety have supposed that our author wrote the old *King Henry IV.* and *V.* and *The History of King Lear* and his three daughters, as that he wrote two plays on the subject of *Taming a Shrew*, and two others on the story of *King John*. — The error prevailed for such a length of time, from the difficulty of meeting with the piece, which is so extremely scarce, that I have never seen or heard of any copy existing but one in the collection of Mr. Seevens, and another in my own: and one of our author's editors [Mr. Capell] searched for it for thirty years in vain. Mr. Pope's copy is supposed to be irrecoverably lost.

I suspected that the anonymous *Taming of a Shrew* was written about the year 1590, either by George Peele or Robert Greene.
MALONE.

The following are the observations of Dr. Hurd on the Induction to this comedy. They are taken from his *Notes on the Epistle to Augustus*: "The Induction, as Shakspeare calls it, to *The Taming of the Shrew*, deserves, for the excellence of its moral design and beauty of execution, throughout, to be set in a just light.

"This *Prologue* sets before us the picture of a poor drunken beggar, advanced, for a short season, into the proud rank of nobility. And the humour of the scene is taken to consist in the surprise and awkward deportment of *Sly*, in this his strange and unwonted situation. But the poet had a further design, and more worthy his genius, than this farcical pleasantry. He would expose, under cover of this mimic fiction, the truly ridiculous figure of men of rank and quality, when they employ their great advantages of place and fortune, to no better purposes, than the soft and selfish gratification of their own intemperate passions: Of those, who take the mighty privilege of descent and wealth to live in the freer indulgence of those pleasures, which the beggar as fully enjoys, and with infinitely more propriety and consistency of character, than their *lordships*.

"To give a poignancy to his satire, the poet makes a man of quality himself, just returned from the chase, with all his mind intent upon his pleasures, contrive this metamorphosis of the beggar, in the way of sport and derision only; not considering, how severely the jest was going to turn upon himself. His first reflections, on seeing this brutal drunkard, are excellent:

"O! monstrous beast! how like a swine he lies!

"Grim death! how foul and loathsome is thy image!"

"The offence is taken at a man's nature, degraded into brutishness; and at a state of stupid insensibility, the image of death. Nothing can be juster, than this representation. For these lordly sensualists have a very nice and fastidious abhorrence of such ignoble bru-

tality. And what alarms their fears with the prospect of death, cannot choose but present a *feul and loathsome image*. It is, also, said in perfect consistency with the true Epicurean character, as given by these, who understood it best, and which is, here, sustained by this noble disciple. For, though these great masters of wisdom made *pleasure the supreme good*, yet, they were among the first, as we are told, to cry out against the *Astors*; meaning such gross sensualists, "qui in mensam vomunt & qui de conviviis auferuntur, crudique postridie se rursus ingurgitant." But as for the "mundos, elegantes, optimis cocis, pisciculis, piscatu, aucupio, venatione, his omoibus exquisitis, vitantes crudelitatem," these they complimented with the name of *beatos* and *sapientes*. [Cic. de Fin. lib. ii. 8.]

"And then, though their philosophy promised an exemption from the terrors of death, yet the boasted exemption consisted only in a trick of keeping it out of the memory by continual dissipation; so that when accident forced it upon them, they could not help, on all occasions, expressing the most dreadful apprehensions of it.

"However, this transient gloom is soon succeeded by gayer prospects. My *lord* bethinks himself to raise a little diversion out of this adventure:

"Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man:"

And, so, proposes to have him *conveyed to bed*, and blessed with all those regalements of costly luxury, in which a selfish opulence is wont to find its supreme happiness.

"The project is carried into execution. And now the jest begins. *Sly*, awakening from his drunken nap, calls out as usual for a *cup of ale*. On which the *lord*, very characteristically, and (taking the poet's design,* as here explained) with infinite *savvy*, replies:

"O! that a mighty man of such descent,

"Of such possessions, and so high esteem,

"Should be refused with so foul a spirit!"

"And again, afterwards:

"Oh! noble Lord, bethink thee of thy birth,

"Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment,

"And banish hence these lowly abject themes."

For, what is the recollection of this *high descent* and large *possessions* to do for him? And, for the introduction of what better thoughts and nobler purposes, are these *lowly abject themes* to be discarded? Why the whole inventory of Patrician pleasures is

* To apprehend it thoroughly, it may not be amiss to recollect what the sensible Bruyere observes on a like occasion. "Un Grand aime la Champagne, abhorre la Brie; Il s'enivre de meilleur vin, que l'homme de peuple; seule différence, que la crapule laisse entre les conditions les plus disproportionnées, entre le Seigneur & l'Esclavier. [Tome ii. p. 12.]

called over; and he hath his choice of whichsoever of them suits best with his lordship's improved palate. A long train of *servants* ready at his beck: musick, such as *twenty caged nightingales do sing*: couches, *softer and sweeter than the lustful bed of Semiramis*: burning odours, and *distilled waters*: floors *beset with carpets*: the diversions of *hawks, hounds, and henges*: in short, all the objects of exquisite indulgence are presented to him.

"But among these, one species of refined enjoyment, which requires a taste, above the coarse breeding of abject commonalty, is chiefly insisted on. We had a hint, of what we were to expect, before:

'Carry him gently to my fairest chamber,

'And hang it round with all my wanton *pictures*.' Sc. ii.

And what lord, so the luxury of his wishes, could feign to himself a more delicious collection, than is here delineated?

'A *Man*. Dost thou love *pictures*? We will fetch thee straight

'*Adonis* painted by a running brook;

'And *Cytherea* all in sedges hid;

'Which seem to move and wanton with her breath,

'Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

'*Lord*. We'll shew thee *Io*, as she was a maid;

'And how she was beguiled and surprized,

'As lively painted, as the deed was done.

'A *Man*. Or *Daphne*, roaming through a thorny wood;

'Scratching her legs, that one shall swear, she bleeds:

'So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.'

These pictures, it will be owned, are, all of them, well chosen.* But the servants were not so deep in the secret, as their master. They dwell entirely on circumstantialia. While his lordship, who had, probably, been trained in the *school* of Titian, is for coming to the point more directly. There is a fine ridicule implied in this.

"After these incentives of *picture*, the charms of *beauty itself* are presented, as the crowning privilege of his high station:

'Thou hast a lady far more beautiful

'Than any woman in this waning age.'

* Sir Epicure Mammon, indeed, would have thought this an insipid collection; for he would have *his rooms*,

"Fill'd with such pictures, as Tiberius took

"From Elephantis, and dull Aretine

"But coldly imitated." *Alchemist*, A & II. sc. ii.

But then Sir Epicure was one of the *Apostles*, before mentioned. In general, the satiric intention of the poet in this collection of pictures may be further gathered from a similar stroke in Randolph's *Muse's Looking-Glass*, where, to characterise the *voluptuous*, he makes him say:

"I would delight my sight

"With pictures of Diana and her nymphs

"Naked and bathing."

Here indeed the poet plainly forgets himself. The *State*, if not the *enjoyment*, of nobility, surely demanded a *mistress*, instead of a *wife*. All that can be said in excuse of this indecorum, is, that he perhaps conceived, a simple beggar, all unused to the refinements of high life, would be so much shocked, at setting out, with a proposal, to remove from all his former practices. Be it, as it will, *beauty* even in a *wife*, had such an effect on this *mock Lord*, that, quite melted and overcome by it, he yields himself at last to the enchanting deception:

“ I see, I hear, I speak;

“ I smell sweet favours, and I feel soft things: —

“ Upon my life, I am a Lord indeed.”

The satire is so strongly marked in this last line, that one can no longer doubt of the writer's intention. If any *should*, let me further remind him that the poet, in this *hâïou*, but makes his Lord play the same game, in *jest*, as the Sicilian tyrant acted, long ago, very *seriously*. The two cases are so similar, that some readers may, perhaps, suspect the poet of having taken the whole conceit from *Tam*. His description of this illusive scenery is given in the following words:

“ *Vitue* (inquit *Dionysius*) *ô Damocle*, quoniam te hæc vita delectat, ipse eandem degustare & fortunam experiri meam? Cum te ille cupere dixisset, conlocari jussit hominem in *aureo ulla*, strato pulcherimo, *textili stragulo magnificis operibus pictis*: abacotque complures ornatis *argenteis aureisque catulis*: hinc ad mensam *eximia forma pueros delectos* jussit consistere, eosque *nutum illius intuentes* diligenter ministrare: *aderant unguenta, coronæ incandescentes odoris: mensæ exquisitissimæ epulis extruebantur.*” [Tusc. Disp. Lib. V. 21.]

It follows, that *Damocles* fell into the sweet delusion of *Christophoro Sly*.

“ *Fortunatus sibi Damocles videbatur.*”

“ The event in these two dramas, was, indeed, different. For the philosopher took care to make the *flatterer* sensible of his mistake; while the poet did not think fit to disabuse the *beggar*. But this was according to the design of each. For, the *former* would show the *miser* of *regal luxury*, the *latter* his *vanity*. The *tyrant*, therefore, is pained *wretched*. And his *Lordship* only a *beggar* in *disguise*.

“ To conclude with our poet. The strong ridicule and decorum of this *Induction* make it appear how impossible it was for *Shakespeare*, in his idlest hours, perhaps, when he was only revising the trash of others, not to leave some strokes of the *master* behind him. But the morality of its purpose should chiefly recommend it to us. For the whole was written with the bell deign of exposing that monstrous Epicurean position, *that the true enjoyment of life consists in a delirium of sensual pleasure*. And this, in a way the

most likely to work upon the *great*, by showing their pride, that it was fit only to constitute the *summum bonum* of one.

'No better than a poor and loathsome beggar.' Sc. iii.

"Nor let the poet be thought to have dealt too freely with his *betters*, in giving this representation of *nobility*. He had the highest authority for what he did. For the great *master of life* himself gave no other of *Divinity*.

"*Ipse pater veri Doffus Epicurus in arte*

"*Juffit & hanc vitam dixit habere Deos.*"

Petron. c. 132. STEEVENS.

The circumstance on which the *Induction* to the anonymous play, as well as that to the present comedy, is founded, is related (as Langbaine has observed) by Heuterus, *Rerum, Burgund. Lib. IV.* The earliest English original of this story in prose that I have met with, is the following, which is found in Goulart's *ADMIRABLE AND MEMORABLE HISTORIES*, translated by E. Grimstone, quarto, 1607; but this tale (which Goulart translated from Heuterus) had undoubtedly appeared in English, in some other shape, before 1594:

"*PHILIP* called the good Duke of *Bourgundy*, in the memory of our ancestors, being at *Bruxelles* with his Court, and walking one night after supper through the streets, accompanied with some of his favorites, he found lying upon the stones a certain artisan that was very dronke, and that slept soundly. It pleased the prince in this artien to make trial of the vanity of our life, whereof he had before discoursed with his familiar friends. He therefore caused this sleeper to be taken up, and carried into his palace: he commands him to be layed in one of the richest beds; a riche night-cap to be given him; his soule shirt to be taken off, and to have another put on him of fine *Holland*. When as this drookard had digested his wine, and began to awake, behold there comes about his bed Pages and Groomes of the Dukes chamber, who drawe the curtaines, and make many courtesies, and, being bare-headed, aske him if it please him to rise, and what apparell it would please him to put on that day. — They bring him rich apparell. This new *Moxfew* amazed at such courtesie, and doubting whether he dreamt or waked, suffered himselfe to be dressed, and led out of the chamber. There came noblemen which saluted him with all honour, and condukt him to the *Masse*, where with great ceremonie they gave him the booke of the Gospell, and the Pixe to kisse, as they did usually to the Duke. From the *Masse*, they bring him backe unto the pallace; he washes his hands, and sits downe at the table well furnished. After dinner, the great Chamberlaine commandes cardes to be brought, with a greate summe of money. This Duke in imagination playes with the chiefe of the court. Then they carry him to walke in the gardein, and to hunt the

hare, and to hawke. They bring him back unto the pallace, where he sups in state. Candles being light, the musicians begio to play; and, the tables taken away, the gentlemen and gentlewomen fell to dancing. Then they played a pleasant Comedie, after which followed a Banquet, whereat they had presently store of Ipcras and pretious wioe, with all sorts of confitures, to this prince of the oew impressiõ; so as he was drooke, and fell foundlie asleepe. Hereupoo the Duke commanded that he should be disrobed of all his riche attire. He was put into his olde ragges, and carried into the same place where he had beene found the night before; where he spent that night. Being awake in the morning, he beganne to remember what had happened before;— he knewe oot whether it were true indeede, or a dreame that had troubled his braine. But in the eod, after many discourses, he concludeth that all was but a dreame that had happened unto him; and so entertained his wife, his children, and his neighbours, without any other apprehension." MALONE.

The following story, related, as it appears, by an eye-witnes, may not be thought inapplicable to this *Induction*: "I remember (says Sir Richard Barkley, in *A Discourse of the Felicitie of Man*, 1598, p. 24.) a pretie experiment praftised by the Emperour Charles the First upon a drunkard. As this Emperour oo a time entered into Gaunt, there lay a drunkeo fellow overthwart the streetes, as though he had beoe dead; who, least the horsemeo should ride ouer him, was drawn out of the way by the legges, and could by oo means be wakened; which when the Emperour saw, he caused him to be taken vp and carried home to his pallace, and vsed as he had appointed. He was brought into a faire chamber haoged with costly arras, his clothes taken off, and laid in a stately bed meet for the Emperour himselfe. He continued in a sleepe vottill the next day almost ooooo. When he awaked and had lyen wondring a while to see himself in such a place, and diuers braue gentlemen attending upoo him, they took him out of the bed, and appparelled him like a prince, so verie costly garmeots, and all this was dooe with verie great silence on everie side. Wheo he was ready, there was a table set and furnished with verie daintie meats, and he set in a chaire to eat, attended vpon with braue courtiers, and serued as if the Emperour had bin present, the cupboard full of gold plate and diuerse sortes of wines. Wheo he saw such preparation made for him, he left aoy longer to wonder, and thought it not good to examioe the matter any further, but tooke his fortune as it came, and fell to his meate. His wayters with great reuerence and dutie obserued diligently his nods and hecks, which were his signes to call for that he lacked, for words he vsed none. As he thus sat in his majestic eating and driokiog, he tooke in his cups so freelee, that he fel fast asleepe againe as

he sat in his chaire. His attendants stripped him out of his fresh apparel, and arrayed him with his owne ragges againe, and carried him to the place where they found him, where he lay sleeping vntil the next day. After he was awakened, and fell into the companie of his acquaintance, being asked where he had bene; he answered that he had bene asleepe, and had the pleasantest dream that ever he had in his life, and told them all that passed, thinking that it had bene nothing but a dreame."

This frolick seems better suited to the gaiety of the gallant Francis, or to the revelry of the boisterous Henry, than to the cold and distant manners of the reserved Charles; of whose private character, however, historians have taken but slight notice.

HOLT WHITE.

From this play the *Tatler* formed a story, Vol. IV. No. 231.

"THERE are very many ill habits that might with much ease have been prevented, which, after we have indulged ourselves in them, become incorrigible. We have a sort of proverbial expression, of *taking a woman down in her wedding shoes*, if you would bring her to reason. An early behaviour of this sort, had a very remarkable good effect in a family wherein I was several years an intimate acquaintance.

"A gentleman in Lincolnshire had four daughters, three of which were early married very happily; but the fourth, though no way inferior to any of her sisters, either in person or accomplishments, had from her infancy discovered so imperious a temper, (usually called a high spirit,) that it continually made great uneasiness in the family, became her known character in the neighbourhood, and deterred all lovers from declaring themselves. However, in process of time, a gentleman of a plentiful fortune and long acquaintance, having observed that quickness of spirit to be her only fault, made his addresses, and obtained her consent in due form. The lawyers finished the writings, (in which, by the way, there was no pin-money,) and they were married. After a decent time spent in the father's house, the bridegroom went to prepare his seat for her reception. During the whole course of his courtship, though a man of the most equal temper, he had artificially lamented to her, that he was the most passionate creature breathing. By this one intimation, he at once made her to understand warmth of temper to be what he ought to pardon in her, as well as that he alarmed her against that constitution in himself. She at the same time thought herself highly obliged by the composed behaviour which he maintained in her presence. Thus far he with great success soothed her from being guilty of violence, and still resolved to give her still a terrible apprehension of his fiery spirit, that she should never dream of giving way to her own. He returned on

the day appointed for carrying her home; but instead of a coach and six horses, together with the gay equipage suitable to the occasion, he appeared without a servant, mounted on a skeleton of a horse, which his huntsman had the day before brought in to feast his dogs on the arrival of his new mistress, with a pillow fixed behind, and a case of pistols before him, attended only by a favourite hound. Thus equipped, he in a very obliging (but somewhat positive manner), desired his lady to seat herself on the cushion; which done, away they crawled. The road being obstructed by a gate, the dog was commanded to open it: the poor cur looked up and wagged his tail; but the master, to show the impatience of his temper, drew a pistol and shot him dead. He had no sooner done it, but he fell into a thousand apologies for his unhappy rashness, and begged as many pardons for his excesses before one for whom he had so profound a respect. Sooner after their feed stumbled, but with some difficulty recovered; however the bridegroom took occasion to swear, if he frightened his wife so again, he would run him through! And alas! the poor animal being now almost tired, made a second trip; immediately, on which the careful husband alights, and with great ceremony, first takes off his lady, then the accoutrements, draws his sword, and saves the huntsman the trouble of killing him: then says to his wife, Child, prythee, take up the fiddle; which she readily did, and tugged it home, where they found all things in the greatest order, suitable to their fortune and the present occasion. Some time after, the father of the lady gave an entertainment to all his daughters and their husbands, where when the wives were retired, and the gentlemen passing a toast about, our last married man took occasion to observe to the rest of his brethren, how much, to this great satisfaction, he found the world mistaken as to the temper of his lady, for that she was the most meek and humble woman breathing. The applause was received with a loud laugh; but as a trial which of them would appear the most master at home, he proposed they should all by turns send for their wives down to them. A servant was dispatched, and answer made by one, 'Tell him I will come by and by;' and another, 'That she would come when the cards were out of her hand;' and so on. But no sooner was her husband's desire whispered in the ear of our last married lady, but the cards were clapped on the table, and down she comes with, 'My dear, would you speak with me?' He received her in his arms, and, after repeated caresses, tells her the experiment, confesses his good-nature, and assures her, that since she could so command her temper, he would no longer disguise his own.

It cannot but seem strange that Shakspeare should be so little known to the author of the *Tatler*, that he should suffer this story to be obtruded upon him; or so little known to the publick, that

he could hope to make it pass upon his readers as a real narrative of a transaction in Lincolnshire; yet it is apparent, that he was deceived, or intended to deceive, that he knew not himself whence the story was taken, or hoped that he might rob so obscure a writer without detection.

Of this play the two plots are so well united, that they can hardly be called two without injury to the art with which they are interwoven. The attention is entertained with all the variety of a double plot, yet is not distracted by unconnected incidents.

The part between Katharine and Petruchio is eminently spritely and diverting. At the marriage of Bianca the arrival of the real father, perhaps, produces more perplexity than pleasure. The whole play is very popular and diverting. JOHNSON.

THE END OF THE NINTH VOLUME.



11. 20. 19

